The Last Testament, Vol 1

Interviews with the World Press
Talks given from 16/07/85 pm to 20/08/85 pm
English Discourse series
31 Chapters
Year published:

The discourses listed as being titled "The Last Testament, Vol 1" are titled that way on the tape. The book "The Last Testament, Vol 1" contains a different numbering scheme, as it contains interviews selected from the whole Ranch period. Volumes 2, 3 and 4 (as numbered on the tapes) will probably never be published as such.

All other series in the database have been numbered and titled as in the books they appear in, this will not be so for the Last Testament series, they will take their numbering from the original numbers given them.

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #1
Chapter title: The Blessed One
17 July 1985 om in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: this discourse is published in The Last Testament Volume 1, chapter 1.]
Ken Kashiwahara
GOOD MORNING AMERICA
ABC NETWORK
USA

QUESTION: BHAGWAN, FIRST OF ALL, THANK YOU VERY MUCH FOR SPEAKING WITH US TONIGHT. A NUMBER OF YEARS AGO, YOU ADOPTED A VOW OF SILENCE. RECENTLY, YOU HAVE DECIDED TO SPEAK OUT TO YOUR SUPPORTERS AND THEN TO US HERE TODAY. WHY HAVE YOU DECIDED TO SPEAK OUT NOW?

ANSWER: I live spontaneously. I never decide anything beforehand. I keep tomorrow open. If I feel like speaking, I speak. If I feel like being silent, then there is no other way than to be silent. And I never ask myself why, because no why is answerable. All answers are arbitrary. So I simply go on floating with the river, never asking where it is going, why it is going, where it is going to end. And this is my basic approach to life: a total letgo.

Q: WAS THERE A REASON THAT YOU DECIDED TO ADOPT THE VOW OF SILENCE IN THE FIRST PLACE, OR WAS THERE ALSO NO REASON?

A: There is never any reason. I don't live by reason. I simply allow things to happen. I don't know why I became silent. I don't know why I started to speak again, but I enjoyed being silent and I'm enjoying being out of silence again. I don't know about tomorrow. I may be silent, I may be speaking. I may not be here at all.

Q: WHEN YOU WENT BEFORE THE IMMIGRATION SERVICE FOR A VISA AS A RELIGIOUS LEADER, THE COMMENT WAS MADE BY THE OFFICIALS OF THE SERVICE THAT HOW COULD YOU BE A RELIGIOUS LEADER IF YOU DIDN'T SPEAK? DID THAT HAVE ANY INFLUENCE ON YOU AT ALL?

A: No. Nothing influences me. Nor do I want anybody to be influenced by me, because the very fact of being influenced is a kind of mental slavery. I keep

myself totally free from influences, and I never influence anybody, never try to convert, convince anybody.
I am the first one who can claim to be religious. The whole past and its religions have been pseudo, false. To me religion has a totally different meaning. There is no God. There is no heaven and hell. All those past religions have exploited man with fear of hell and greed for heaven, and all those religions have kept man retarded, dependent on God, a big daddy somewhere above who is taking care of you. This made man irresponsible. This made man unintelligent.
My religion is basically centered around consciousness, silence, and silence has its own way of communication. Just as words speak, but can be misunderstood-they ARE misunderstood-silence also speaks. It also can be misunderstood. To understand silence, the other side, the receiving side, should also be silent. Then there is a meeting of the hearts. Something starts falling into tune, harmony, a kind of synchronicity. Nothing is said, nothing is heard, but everything is understood. Lovers know it; just sitting side by side saying nothing, something goes on moving between them.

Q: IF YOU WERE TO EXPLAIN TO SOMEONE LISTENING AND WATCHING WHO KNOWS NOTHING ABOUT YOU OR YOUR RELIGION...
WHAT IS YOUR THEOLOGY, WHAT IS YOUR BELIEF WHAT DO YOU STAND FOR, WHAT ARE YOU TRYING TO ACHIEVE?

A: I have no system of belief I have no catechism like Christians, and I don't have any dogmas, principles, theology. If somebody wants to understand me he will have to learn meditation, learn being silent and sit with me, live with me. There is no other way. All those belief systems are nothing but a process of conditioning you.
A belief simply means you don't know -- still you believe. My effort here is that you never believe unless you know. When you know, there is no question of believing, you know it. I destroy all belief systems and I do not give you any substitute. Hence, it is not easy to understand me.

Q: YOU HAVE NO PHILOSOPHY OF LIFE?

A: No philosophy of life. I have LIFE itself. There are people who have philosophies of life, but they don't have any life.

Q: YOUR PHILOSOPHY, IF THERE IS ONE, HAS BEEN EXPRESSED IN "THE THREE L'S, " LOVE, LIFE, LAUGHTER. IS THAT A PHILOSOPHY OF LIFE?

A: No.

Q: COULD YOU EXPLAIN THAT?

A: It is just a consequence of being silent and in tune with existence. Love arises in you. Life becomes abundant; laughter, for no reason, just because this whole existence is so hilarious. This is not philosophy, this is the consequence of being silent.

Q: IS IT TO ENJOY LIFE AND NOT WORRY ABOUT TOMORROW?

A: There is no tomorrow. If there is tomorrow, you cannot stop worrying about it. Tomorrow never comes, it is a process of worrying. Nor is there any yesterday. One is no more, one is not yet. All that is in our hands is the present moment, now, here. And this is a miraculous experience. If there is no yesterday, no tomorrow, and this very moment you are silent, all worrying disappears. All imagining, dreaming, projecting disappears.
And it is not that you have to enjoy this moment. That rejoicing arises out of this moment. But you are never here, you are always somewhere else. You are never in the now, you are always then. Otherwise, everything is available, but you are absent. I want my people to understand a very simple fact -- not a philosophy, something existential, not philosophical -- be present to this moment and then see what happens.

Q: LET ME ASK YOU ABOUT SOMETHING YOU SAID A MOMENT AGO. YOU SAID YOU DIDN'T BELIEVE IN CONTROLLING PEOPLE, AND HAVE NO CONTROL. BUT DO YOU NOT HAVE EITHER CONTROL OR TREMENDOUS INFLUENCE OVER 350,000 OF YOUR FOLLOWERS?

A: I don't have any control. I don't give these half million people who love me any discipline. I don't give them any commandments. I insistently emphasize that they are not my followers, but only fellow travelers. It is up to them to go a few miles with me or not to go. If they join with me, I'm happy; when they depart, I say goodbye.

Q: IF THEY LOOK TO YOU, THEY WORSHIP YOU, WOULD THEY THEN NOT DO WHATEVER YOU TELL THEM?

A: I am trying on my part that there should be no worship. They should not be influenced by me. But if they worship and if they go on being influenced, they are not understanding me.

Q: WHO IS BHAGWAN SHREE RAJNEESH? HOW DID YOU BECOME BHAGWAN?

A: The word Bhagwan means "the Blessed One." When people started feeling my blessing throbbing in their hearts, when they started feeling that something has happened to me of immense value which they would like to share, they started calling me Bhagwan. I could not deny it because it was a fact: I was the Blessed One.

Q: HOW DID YOU KNOW THAT YOU WERE THE BLESSED ONE?

A: How do I know when I have a headache? I know

Q: WHEN DID YOU KNOW IT?

A: Thirty-two years ago.

Q: HOW DID YOU KNOW IT?

A: That question is absurd. When you are sick, you know. How do you know? When you are healthy, you know. How do you know? That "how" is absurd. You simply know it.

Q: WAS THERE A VISION?

A: No, there is no question of vision. Vision is always objective, of something else. It was an experiencing. Not even an experience, but experiencing. I was full of it. I was it. And since then not for a single moment have I been otherwise. It was not something that happened and disappeared. It was a transformation. It has remained with me.

Q: DID YOU KNOW AS A CHILD, FOR EXAMPLE, THAT YOU WOULD BECOME THE ENLIGHTENED ONE?

A: No. I never knew... not even a single moment before. But I was searching from my very childhood. I was seeking and trying in every possible way not to be influenced by any religion, by any ideology, because if I am already having a faith, already believing, the search stops. The inquirer has to be very alert and aware that no belief enters into his being. He has to remain open and agnostic, knowing perfectly well that he does not know. From that space of not knowing, the search, the seeking, arises. But who can say when it is going to be fulfilled? It is unpredictable.

Q: DO YOU CONSIDER YOURSELF A GOD?

A: My God! There is no God, so how can I consider myself a god? God is the greatest lie invented by man.

Q: WHY?

A: Because man feels so helpless, so afraid of death, so burdened with life's problems. Because he has been raised by a father, by a mother, and those were the beautiful days -- no responsibility, no worry -- somebody was taking care of him. That psychological childhood is projected into all the religions: God becomes the father. And there are a few religions in which God becomes the mother. It is a simple psychological projection of a child. It has no basis in reality.
And whenever you are afraid, whenever you are in trouble, you start seeking help. No help ever comes. Even Jesus on the cross was waiting for the help to come, and finally got disappointed and shouted, "Father, have you forsaken me?" A great doubt must have arisen in him, a great question. Nothing is happening, and he was believing all these years that God would come to save him, his only begotten son. Nobody came. Jesus Christ must have died in utter disillusionment.
I don't have any illusion. I cannot be disillusioned.

Q: HE ALSO SAID, "FATHER, FORGIVE THEM FOR THEY KNOW NOT WHAT THEY DO."

A: That was again the same mind. I call Jesus' mind sick.

Q: WHY?

A: Because his whole life... whatsoever he was teaching and doing was just nuts. Only a crackpot can claim to be the only son of God. And then, preaching to people that he is the savior, and whosoever is with him will be saved, and whosoever is not with him will fall into hell -- eternal hell... all these things. His behavior: he cursed a fig tree because he and his disciples were hungry and there were no fruits on the fig tree. In fact, it was not the season; it was not the fault of the fig tree, but he cursed the fig tree.
I cannot conceive of this man as sane. And this prayer to God that, "Forgive these people because they know not what they are doing," is again out of that same arrogant, egoistic idea. I don't think that it is out of compassion. It is the emphasis of the Christians for centuries that out of compassion he prayed even for his enemies. But let me repeat his sentence: "Forgive these people because they know not what they are doing." In fact, it was not an act of compassion, he was still condemning the people that they knew not and he knew.

Q: BUT HAVEN'T THERE BEEN SOME TEACHINGS HANDED DOWN FROM JESUS WHICH FORM THE BASIS OF MUCH THAT IS GOOD IN CIVILIZATION TODAY?

A: Nothing. Not a single thing has come out of Jesus which has helped humanity in any way. All those teachings have proved not blessings, but curses. They are beautiful words and because they have been repeated so often, you have -- and everybody has -- forgotten the implications of them.

He says, "Blessed are the poor, for theirs is the kingdom of God." It looks beautiful, but basically it is ugly. It is a consolation to the poor. It is an exploitation of the poor. It is giving false hope to the poor, and the ultimate result is that the world has remained poor.

Who would not like to inherit the kingdom of God? Jesus says that even a camel can pass through the eye of a needle, but a rich man cannot enter through the gates of heaven. Now this man is responsible for all the poverty in the world. He is condemning richness. He is condemning the creativity which can make the world rich.

I am all for richness in all dimensions, and I cannot say, Blessed are the poor. That is just what Karl Marx said: Opium of the people. It is possible to use beautiful words, but if you go into the implications, what are the Christians doing today and what have they done for two thousand years? They will open orphanages. They are against birth control. They are against abortion.

Q: SOME OF THEM.

A: Those who are not will soon be expelled. They are being expelled. And those who are... for example the pope himself is against abortion, against birth control. He is against the greatest revolution in humanity -- the pill. Population goes on growing, poverty goes on growing, and who is responsible for this? I think these people are criminals.

Q: THE POPE?

A: The pope. He should be behind bars.

Q: WHY?

A: Teaching such stupid things to humanity: go on producing children -- they are gifts of God. He is responsible for Ethiopia. He is responsible for poor India. Anywhere poverty happens, these people are responsible. On the one hand, they go on increasing the population, which is already too much, in the name of God. But the real thing is that they can convert only the poor to Christianity. I have

never seen a single rich man being converted to Christianity in India. Beggars, orphans, prostitutes-these people get converted.

Q: IS THERE ANY PART OF CHRISTIANITY, HINDUISM, BUDDHISM, ANY OF THE ESTABLISHED RELIGIONS THAT YOU THINK ARE GOOD?

A: Nothing is. I want to be finished with the whole past completely, I want it to be erased completely. I want a discontinuity with the past. Only then the new humanity is possible, a new world, a new man. So I categorically say everything is wrong. And the proof is there: the whole world is in a mess. These are the people who have given the world principles how to live, ideologies, systems. This is the outcome of Buddhism, Hinduism, Christianity, Mohammedanism. This is the outcome.

Q: YOU SAY THE WHOLE WORLD IS A MESS. WHAT IS IT THAT YOU'RE TRYING TO CREATE IN MAN, IN THE WORLD?

A: I'm simply saying that there is a way to be sane. I'm saying that you can get rid of all this insanity created by the past in you.

Q: HOW?

A: Just by being a simple witness of your thought processes. That's my method of meditation. It is not a prayer because there is no God to pray to. It is simply sitting silently, witnessing the thoughts passing before you. Just witnessing -- not interfering, not even judging, because the moment you judge you have lost the pure witness. The moment you say this is good, this is bad, you have already jumped into the thought process. It takes a little time to create a gap between the witness and the mind. Once the gap is there, you are in for a great surprise: you are not the mind, you are the witness, a watcher.
This process of watching is the very alchemy of real religion, because as you become more and more deeply rooted in witnessing, thoughts start disappearing. A moment comes when there is no thought at all. You are, but the mind is utterly empty. That is the moment of enlightenment. That is the moment when for the first time you become unconditioned, sane, a really free human being.

Q: BHAGWAN, SINCE YOU CAME TO THIS COUNTRY A NUMBER OF YEARS AGO, THERE HAVE BEEN A LOT OF THINGS WRITTEN -- ALLEGED -- ABOUT YOU AND THE RAJNEESHEES. SINCE THIS IS THE FIRST TIME YOU'RE SPEAKING IN PUBLIC, I'D LIKE TO GET YOU TO SET THE RECORD STRAIGHT ABOUT SOME OF THESE THINGS THAT HAVE BEEN SAID. FOR EXAMPLE, IT HAS BEEN WRITTEN AND PEOPLE HAVE TALKED ABOUT

YOU AS A "FREE SEX GURU," BELIEVING IN PROMISCUOUS SEX WITH VIOLENT ENCOUNTER SESSIONS AND MIND CONTROL. TRUE OR FALSE?

A: Do you think sex should be charged for? Should it not be free? Should it be paid for?
To me, sex is a simple, beautiful, natural phenomenon. If two persons want to share the energy with each other, it is nobody's business to interfere. And to say "free sex" implies that you want sex also to be a commodity, that it has to be purchased -- either from a prostitute for one night or from a wife for the whole life, but it has to be purchased and paid for.
Yes, I believe in free sex. I believe that sex is everybody's birthright to share, to enjoy. It is fun. There is nothing serious about it. The people who have been talking about me as teaching free sex are really pathetic. They are sexually repressed people.

Q: I THINK WHAT THEY WERE IMPLYING IS THE IMAGE OF WILD SEXUAL ORGIES GOING ON.

A: No orgies are going on. And if people should want an orgy, it is nobody's business. If a few people want group sex, what is harmful in it? If two persons can enjoy, why cannot ten persons enjoy together? Once we think of sex as a natural, joyful fun....
That's why I call the pill the greatest revolution since fire was discovered. The pill has freed sex from all nonsense, seriousness, marriage, legalities. It has made man enjoy sex for the first time as man, not like other animals who are in a biological bondage.
No orgies are happening here, but I am not prohibiting them. It is up to the people. If they feel like having an orgy, so far so good. But these people are also conditioned by your society. They also have the idea of relationship one to one. They also have the monopoly, monogamy, planted in their minds.

Q: IS THAT NOT GOOD?

A: It is absolutely unnatural. Man is not a monogamous animal at all. He is polygamous and everybody knows it. You may have the most beautiful wife, but that does not mean you don't get attracted to other women, that once in a while you don't dream about other women. Somebody may have the best possible husband. That does not make any difference. Man is by nature polygamous. Monogamy iS enforced on him.

Q: ARE YOU SAYING THAT MAN SHOULD FOLLOW HIS POLYGAMOUS INSTINCTS?

A: He should simply follow nature wherever it leads. Polygamy is perfectly good. In fact, there is no need for monogamy or polygamy. I'm a little further ahead. I see the relationship of love or sex as an absolutely free phenomenon.

Q: YOU SEEM TO BE SAYING-AND I BELIEVE YOU'VE SUGGESTED BEFORE -- THAT PEOPLE SHOULD NOT HAVE ANY "WESTERN HANGUPS, " SO CALLED, ABOUT SEX. RECENTLY YOU PREDICTED THAT AIDS WILL KILL TWO-THIRDS OF THE WORLD'S POPULATION, AND YOU TOLD YOUR FOLLOWERS TO ENGAGE IN CELIBACY OR HAVE SEX WITH ONE PARTNER. WHY?

A: AIDS is a totally new phenomenon, and the old religions are again responsible for it.

Q: RESPONSIBLE FOR AIDS?

A: For AIDS.

Q: WHY?

A: They are responsible for everything that is wrong. Homosexuality and all kinds of perversions were created by religious people, by teaching celibacy. Now, to force men or women to remain celibate is taking them against their biology, chemistry, physiology -- their whole nature. It is impossible for them. They will find some way, and it will be perverted.
Nuns were kept in one monastery, monks were kept in another monastery. There are monasteries still where no woman has ever entered. Now these monks are the original homosexuals. These nuns are the pioneers of lesbianism. All kinds of perverted things have brought AIDS as the ultimate result.
I'm not telling my people to be celibate because celibacy has any spirituality. I'm telling them that you can be celibate without any repression, just out of sheer understanding. You are not going to be rewarded in heaven for it, you will just be being careful about your health. That is enough reward. But if you feel that celibacy is difficult for you, then use all possible methods to protect, to prevent. AIDS is going to kill the larger part of humanity.

Q: WHY DO YOU BELIEVE THAT?

A: Because it is spreading so fast. And it will spread... just one contact with a person who has AIDS is enough, and then those contacts will go on spreading. Just the other day I was looking into it because we were having the festival. Fifteen thousand people were going to come here from all over the world. Now it was a problem: many people can bring AIDS and destroy the whole commune.

We tried to find out. Two sannyasins had it confirmed, and we asked them how many other contacts they had. One woman had fifty contacts. Those fifty people may be carrying AIDS and may be having other contacts. That's why I have said remain with one partner. It is nothing to do with monogamy, it is just pure hygiene, health. I am telling that on medical grounds, there is no religious basis to it.

Q: BHAGWAN, LET ME MOVE ON TO ANOTHER SUBJECT. AGAIN, IN KEEPING WITH SOME OF THE THINGS THAT HAVE BEEN WRITTEN AND SAID ABOUT YOU AND THE RAJNEESHEES, AND THAT IS THE FEAR WHEN PEOPLE SEE YOUR BODYGUARDS CARRYING WEAPONS -- SUBMACHINE GUNS-AND RUMORS THAT THERE ARE LARGE CACHES OF WEAPONS HERE ON THE RANCH. IS THAT TRUE? AND IF SO, WHY ARE THE WEAPONS KEPT HERE?

A: I'm not a man like Jesus Christ. I will not carry my cross on my own shoulders. And I'm not suicidal. Jesus must have been suicidal. I love life, my people love life. I'm not afraid of death. I will enjoy death as much as life, but my people don't want me to leave the body now, and they have every right to protect me. I'm not going to prevent anybody who is going to assassinate me. Why should I prevent my people from protecting me?
If the assassin is free, I'm not going to interfere. And the people who love me and want to protect me, I'm not interfering with them either. This is something between those who love me and those who hate me. This is their business, I am simply out of it. Yes, guns are there, but not according to the rumors. Those rumors are too much exaggerated.

Q: LARGE NUMBERS OF GUNS?

A: No, not large numbers.

Q: DO YOU EXPECT TO BE ATTACKED? ARE YOU AFRAID OF ATTACK?

A: I am not afraid of anything. I have been attacked many times before. I can be attacked any time and I'm not concerned about it, but my people are concerned. Who am I to prevent them if they love me and want to do something? And I have around me one of the most intelligent groups of people.
Jesus had only twelve fools -- uneducated, unintelligent fishermen, carpenters -- and he himself was uneducated, uncultured. And when he was crucified they all escaped. They were not in love with Jesus; they were hoping that through Jesus they would enter into paradise and enjoy paradise.
I give no hope to my people, no promise to my people. They are not going to gain anything as reward.

Q: SO WHY SHOULD THEY STAY HERE?

A: They stay here because meditation is its own reward. There is no other reward beyond it.

Q: IN FACT, RECENTLY YOU SEEM TO BE PAINTING A VERY PESSIMISTIC FUTURE OF THE WORLD AND MANKIND WHEN YOU WARNED THAT A CYCLONE OF DESTRUCTION BOTH NATURAL AND MAN MADE WILL HIT THE WORLD, AND THAT THE RAJNEESH RELIGION WILL PROVIDE A "NOAH'S ARK OF CONSCIOUSNESS," ALLOWING YOUR SUPPORTERS TO SURVIVE.

A: It is not pessimistic. It is simply factual.

Q: COULD YOU EXPLAIN THAT? WHAT DOES THAT MEAN?

A: It simply means that all the centuries that have passed have been bringing this day closer and closer. Religions have been talking about peace and fighting and killing and murdering, burning people alive. On the one hand they will say God is love, on the other hand they will be burning living people. Christians have been killing, Mohammedans have been killing, Hindus have been killing. It is a strange phenomenon that Buddha was born in India, but in India there are no Buddhists. For twenty-five centuries there have been no Buddhists. They had to escape because Hindus were killing them.

Q: BUT WHAT ARE YOU SAYING WILL HAPPEN WITH THIS CYCLE OF DESTRUCTION?

A: We have destroyed the harmony of nature through our unguarded scientific experiments. We have now in the hands of politicians; who are the most mediocre people in the world, such immense energy to destroy that they can destroy this whole earth seven hundred times. Now if just one politician goes nuts, that's enough -- and they are all nuts. So I am not painting any pessimistic picture of the future. I am not a pessimist, neither am I an optimist. I am simply a realist.

Q: BHAGWAN, A MOMENT AGO YOU SAID THAT YOU WERE NOT PESSIMISTIC; YET, IF I MAY READ ANOTHER QUOTE WHEREIN YOU SAID "THIS WORLD IS NOT WORTH SAVING. ONCE IN A WHILE I THINK IT WILL BE BETTER IF THE THIRD WORLD WAR HAPPENS AND DESTROYS THIS WHOLE STUPID HUMANITY." ISN'T THAT PESSIMISTIC? VERY GLOOMY?

A: This is optimistic!

Q: WHY?

A: Because if something has become so rotten, it is better to be finished with it.

Q: YOU THINK THE WORLD SHOULD BE DESTROYED?

A: The world has become almost a madhouse. If we cannot change people's consciousness, if we cannot destroy the boundaries between nations, the boundaries between colors, and the boundaries between religions -- if that is not going to happen....
I am trying on my own whatsoever I can; but one cannot simply forget the reality. The world is divided into nations, into religions, all fighting and trying to kill each other. One cannot forget America and Soviet Russia, ready to destroy the whole world any moment. This is simple realism. As I see it, this humanity, if it is not going to change, is not worth saving.

Q: BUT YOU, AS A RELIGIOUS LEADER, SHOULDN'T YOUR ROLE BE ONE TO ENLIGHTEN AND TO HELP TO CHANGE...?

A: That I am doing....

Q: RATHER THAN TO SAY THE WORLD SHOULD BE DESTROYED?

A: That is part of my effort. That makes my thing emphatically clear: Either change, or the world is going to be destroyed. So your change is absolutely necessary. It is not something that can wait, that tomorrow we will change.

Q: LET ME GO BACK... I KNOW WE'RE RUNNING OUT OF TIME. WHEN YOU FIRST GOT HERE TO OREGON, YOUR SUPPORTERS SAID THAT YOU WOULDN'T TAKE OVER THE TOWN OF ANTELOPE. YET NOW RAJNEESHEES ARE IN CONTROL OF THE TOWN AND THE RESIDENTS THERE HAVE CHARGED THAT THEY WERE FORCED OUT. THERE HAVE BEEN SUGGESTIONS THAT PERHAPS THE RAJNEESHEES REALLY WANT TO TAKE OVER THE ENTIRE STATE OF OREGON. TRUE, OR FALSE?

A: I want first to make it clear that I am not a Rajneeshee. You should ask Rajneeshees -- that is their problem. I am an outsider. I am just a guest here, not even a resident. I am not even living in the City of Rajneeshpuram, but outside the city in a guest house. I am not a Rajneeshee; I don't belong to any organization. Now, whatsoever they are doing, you should ask them.

Q: WELL, WOULD YOU WANT TO SEE THEM TAKE OVER THE STATE OF OREGON?

A: I would like them to take the whole world! -- because I feel that they can manage this world better than anybody else. But I am not interested. I am not a politician, and that is not my concern.

Q: THERE IS A PERCEPTION THAT YOU AND YOUR RELIGIOUS FOLLOWING ARE EXTREMELY WEALTHY. IF IT'S TRUE, WHERE DID THE MONEY COME FROM?

A: My people are rich. In fact, only the very rich, educated, intelligent, cultured can understand what I am saying. Beggars cannot come to me. Poor people cannot come to me. The gap is too big. They can hear me but they cannot understand me. So it is natural: I am the rich man's guru.

Q: ISN'T THAT A CONTRADICTION WITH THE TRADITIONAL PERCEPTION OF A LIFE OF AUSTERITY LED BY RELIGIOUS LEADERS AND ASCETICS?

A: I simply think those traditions just rubbish. There is no question of contradiction; I am simply against them. I don't want to be consistent with them. I want to drop all connections with the past. They have done enough harm.
My conception of a beautiful, flowering being is not that of austerity, it is of luxury. He will enjoy all that is beautiful in the world -- great paintings, great music, poetry. I don't conceive of him standing on his head in the hot sun of Oregon, fasting, slowly destroying himself. To me, all religions of the world up to now have been sado-masochistic. My religion is for the first time life-affirming.

Q: ONE THING I THINK PEOPLE ON THE OUTSIDE REMEMBER ABOUT YOU WHEN THEY READ STORIES OR SEE YOU ON TELEVISION IS THE FACT THAT YOU OWN SO MANY, OR HAVE SO MANY ROLLS ROYCES. WHY IS THAT?

A: How many?

Q: EIGHTY?

A: No.

Q: FORTY?

A: Ninety. And they are not so many.

Q: WHY DO YOU NEED NINETY?

A: I don't need even a single one. And they don't belong to me, either. But my people want 365, one for every day. And I go for a drive only for one hour. But if my people want it, if they are happy and rejoice doing it, I don't want to destroy their joy. It is perfectly okay.

Q: COULDN'T YOU TELL THEM TO GIVE THEIR MONEY FOR SOMETHING ELSE, OTHER THAN FOR ROLLS ROYCES?

A: All other religions are doing that. Let them do that as their work. Let me do my work. All other religions are looking after the poor. At least leave me alone to look after the rich.

Q: BHAGWAN, THERE HAVE BEEN FEARS EXPRESSED, AS YOU KNOW, EVER SINCE YOU FIRST GOT TO OREGON, THAT RAJNEESHPURAM MIGHT TURN INTO ANOTHER JONESTOWN.

A: That's absurd.

Q: ARE THERE ANY SIMILARITIES BETWEEN YOU AND JIM JONES?

A: There is only one thing between me and Reverend Jim Jones, and that is of absolute opposition. He was a Christian, and Christians are cowards, afraid to take the responsibility for whatsoever happened in Jonestown. From Jesus till this Pope the Polack, all are responsible for it, because Christianity is a death-oriented religion. The cross is its symbol.
There is nothing common between me and Reverend Jim Jones. Everything is opposite to him.

Q: PEOPLE THINK THE POWER YOU HAVE OVER YOUR FOLLOWERS....

A: I don't have any power. I don't have any position. I don't even know my people by their names.

Q: BUT YOU SEE THEM OUT THERE EVERY DAY AS YOU DRIVE BY.

A: I see them, but I don't even know their names. I don't relate with them personally, I don't talk with them personally.
What power? I don't have any power.

Q: YOU CAN SEE THAT THEY'RE DEVOTED TO YOU.

A: That is their thing. I am not exploiting their devotion for any power for myself. I could have declared myself the only begotten son of God. Then it would have been a power trip. But I say I am simply an ordinary man just like you. And I emphasize it again and again so that my people can understand that if this experience can happen to me, it can happen to them, too. It is nothing special. It is absolutely natural and ordinary.

Q: SO YOU SEE NO SIMILARITY BETWEEN RAJNEESHPURAM AND JONESTOWN?

A: Not at all. But I see every similarity between Jonestown and the whole world.

Q: THAT THE WHOLE WORLD WILL END UP LIKE THAT?

A: They are trying. Seventy-five percent of their national incomes is going into making more and more weapons, nuclear weapons. Even poor countries are trying to create nuclear plants. They are all in tune with Reverend Jim Jones. Except Rajneeshpuram, the whole world has a similarity with him. This is the only place.... We are absolutely opposed to destruction. We believe in creativity. We don't believe in the creator, we believe in creativeness.
And my people are creative. They have changed the shape of this desert, with all the hindrances from the state, the government, the politicians, the religious people. Still, they have changed it into a small, beautiful oasis. If no barrier is created, we can make it one of the most beautiful places in the world.

Q: A NUMBER OF OREGONIANS HAVE EXPRESSED A CONCERN, HOWEVER, THAT YOU WILL EVENTUALLY ATTRACT UP TO A HUNDRED THOUSAND PEOPLE TO LIVE IN THIS CITY AND THAT IT'S SIMPLY A MATTER OF TIME BEFORE YOU CALL ALL 350,000 OF YOUR SUPPORTERS TO COME HERE TO LIVE.

A: I may.

Q: YOU MAY?

A: Yes.

Q: WHEN?

A: Anytime. Tell the Oregonians that their fear is perfectly right. Tremble. Have nightmares. I can call my followers anytime.

Q: AND YOU MAY DO IT.

A: But I may not.

Q: SOME ENVIRONMENTALISTS SAY THAT THIS LAND SIMPLY CAN'T SUPPORT THAT MANY PEOPLE, THAT IT WOULD HURT THE LAND IF THAT MANY PEOPLE LIVED HERE. ARE YOU CONCERNED ABOUT THAT?

A: The people who say these things, have they ever come here? Just four years ago there was no water. We managed two big lakes, small ponds all around, enough water. And we can create more lakes, more water. We can make more land ready to be cultivated. It is only a question of effort, devotion, and the joy of creation. Those people are simply jealous, lazy, lousy, and nothing else. And it is our problem, not their problem. If my people die because the water is not enough, the land cannot support them, then it is my problem, not their problem. I will not come to them for help.

Q: WHY DO YOU FEEL YOU ENGENDER SUCH HOSTILITY ON THE PART OF YOUR NEIGHBORS AND OTHER OREGONIANS?

A: There are no neighbors. We are alone here, and we want to be alone here.

Q: PEOPLE IN NEARBY TOWNS....

A: We don't want even to relate.

Q: WHY DO YOU THINK THERE IS THIS HOSTILITY?

A: It is not hostility. It is simply that we want to be left alone.

Q: NO, ON THE PART OF SOME PEOPLE WHO LIVE IN OREGON, SOME OREGONIANS.

A: Now, that is their problem, and you have to ask them. We don't have any hostility towards them. All that we want is to be left alone to do our thing. They are hostile because this land was there, available, for fifty years, and they could not make anything out of it. And within four years we have made a beautiful place where five thousand people are joyously living, luxuriously and comfortably living. They are simply jealous and hostile because they know we

can manage one hundred thousand people here. And to them, number is power. To us, there is no question of any trip for power.

Q: ISN'T IT REALLY BECAUSE YOU'RE DIFFERENT THAT THEY DON'T UNDERSTAND YOU? THAT PEOPLE DRESS ALIKE, WEAR VARIOUS SHADES OF RED, WEAR BEADS?

A: There are so many reasons besides. There was a time when the Christians were treated by the Jews the same way. Just to be a Christian was enough to be a criminal.

Q: WHY DO YOUR PEOPLE WEAR VARIOUS SHADES OF RED? WHY DO THE PEOPLE here WEAR VARIOUS SHADES OF RED AND BEADS?

A: I want them to be recognized by me, and by other people. I want them to face the world... that they have dropped out of it. I want them to be clearly individual. They don't belong to this rotten world around. The day I see that there is no need, they will be using all colored clothes. It is nothing spiritual, nothing religious; it is simply an identification card put all over the body.

Q: THERE HAVE BEEN THOSE WHO HAVE ACCUSED YOU AND THE PEOPLE LIVING HERE OF OBSCURING THE LINE BETWEEN CHURCH AND STATE. IS THIS A RELIGIOUS CITY, OR IS IT A CITY, FOR EXAMPLE, THAT SHOULD QUALIFY FOR SCHOOL AID? WHAT ARE YOUR VIEWS ON THE SEPARATION OF CHURCH AND STATE?

A: This is not a religious city. The city has its own functions, religion has nothing to do with it. Religion is an individual phenomenon. It has nothing to do with the streets, the houses, the maintenance of the city. Religion is purely individual. The city is taking care of the collectivity of the community. They are two separate dimensions. They don't overlap, they don't meet anywhere.

Q: BUT EVERYBODY LIVING HERE BELIEVES AND FOLLOWS YOU.

A: Nobody follows me because I don't have any followers. If somebody is walking behind me, that does not mean he is a follower. If somebody feels that what I am saying is true and experiences it as true, what does the city have to do with it? The truth of the individuals living in this city is their private experience. The city is for other purposes, mundane. It has nothing to do with religion.
What I am saying is true only about Rajneeshpuram, that there is no mixing of state and religion. About the outside world that is not true. Everywhere else state and religion are mixed. Otherwise, why should the Bible be there in the court for

somebody to take an oath? What does it mean? Every Bible should be thrown out of every court. It is mixing religion....
And do you think the people who are presidents, premiers, governors, are not prejudiced in favor of some religion? Are they capable of discriminating, so that when they are in the office they are no longer Christians? It has not been our experience here.

Q: LET ME GO BACK, IF I CAN, A NUMBER OF YEARS, BECAUSE THERE HAVE BEEN SOME THINGS WRITTEN ABOUT IT. WHY DID YOU LEAVE INDIA?

A: For health reasons. I never wanted to leave. India may be poor, may have its troubles and problems, but it has a beauty of its own.

Q: THERE WERE STORIES AT THE TIME THAT YOU WERE FORCED OUT. IS THAT TRUE?

A: That is nonsense. I can go back there. Nobody can force me out of anywhere. If Oregonians cannot force me out of Oregon, do you think Indians can force me out of India?

Q: DO YOU PLAN TO LEAVE OREGON?

A: No, I never plan anything. But I can leave any day. Or I may not leave ever.

Q: DO YOU THINK THE IMMIGRATION SERVICE IS HOPING YOU WILL LEAVE THE COUNTRY?

A: They are waiting, perhaps. They can wait... and if I don't want to leave, I will not leave. I will go on fighting to the end. I will not leave. If I want to leave -- even if the whole of America begs me to stay here -- I'm not going to stay a single moment. Nobody forced me out of India. In India I was living with my commune, ten thousand sannyasins were living with me. It was my health that was getting worse and worse.

Q: ARE YOU RECOVERED NOW? ARE YOU BETTER?

A: Not completely. I am feeling better, but it is just on the boundary line; at any moment a small thing, and the trouble can arise.

Q: WHAT DOES THE FUTURE HOLD FOR YOU AND FOR RAJNEESHEES?

A: I never think of the future. We are happy now.

Q: BHAGWAN, I MUST TELL YOU THAT I AM NOT FEELING WELL TONIGHT BECAUSE I'VE STOPPED SMOKING.

A: I knew. You must be feeling nervous. One hour more, and you will be in a nervous breakdown. Smoking is a difficult thing for people to stop.

Q: CAN YOU TELL ME A LITTLE BIT, JUST BRIEFLY, OF YOUR DAILY ROUTINE, WHAT YOU DO HERE?

A: I am a very lazy man. I call myself the lazy man's guide to enlightenment. I don't do anything. In the morning I have started talking again, as I have been doing for thirty years. I love it. It is not a lecture, a prepared speech, or anything. People ask questions, and whatsoever spontaneous response happens in me, I tell it to them. And because I am not concerned at all about any consistency, I have made it clear to my people never to say "Yesterday you said this, and today you are saying this, and these seem to be contradictory." I always insist whatever I am saying right now is the truth.

Q: YOU'VE BEEN DESCRIBED AS A PERSON OF CONTRADICTIONS. ARE YOU?

A: I am. Because life is full of contradictions and I am in tune with life.
I am not in tune with Aristotle. Aristotle, I think, is a disease. I call him Aristotle-itis. Life is very different. It is not a logical system. Now modern physics has come across facts which have baffled all the scientists because they contradict Aristotle's logic and Euclid's geometry. They have no obligation to perform according to the logic man has created. They just go on their way doing their thing in their own way. I am not a logician, and I have never claimed that I am not a man of contradictions. I am big enough, as Walt Whitman once said: "I am big enough to have all the contradictions in me."
And yet, there is a possibility that all those contradictions may become a deep harmony. They may not remain contradictions, they may become complementaries to each other. That's how it is in existence; that's how it should be in life.
Now, give him his cigarettes!

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #2
Chapter title: I Change With Reality
19 July 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This discourse is published in the book: The Last Testament, Volume 1, as Chapter 5.]

ERICH WIDDEMAN & RAINER WEBER
DER SPIEGEL
HAMBURG,
WEST GERMANY

QUESTION: BHAGWAN, BEFORE WE START, I'D LIKE TO MAKE A COUPLE OF THINGS CLEAR. I DON'T KNOW WHAT MA ANAND SHEELA HAS TOLD YOU ABOUT THE WAY WE LIKE THESE DISCUSSIONS GOING. WE DO A COMPLETE WRITE-UP OF WHAT HAS BEEN SAID, WE EDIT IT, AND THEN SEND THE COMPLETE TEXT TO YOU OR TO YOUR CONFIDANTS TO BE REEDITED. THIS IS NOT MEANT TO BE... IF THEY ARE GOOD, THESE INTERVIEWS ARE NOT MEANT TO BE MUCH OF A QUESTION AND ANSWER GAME, BUT SOMETHING OF A CONTROVERSIAL DISCUSSION WHICH FOR YOU IS ONE OF THE MANY OPPORTUNITIES TO GET RID OF A LOT OF PREJUDICES THAT MAY EXIST AGAINST YOU AND YOUR RELIGION.
ALSO, THERE WILL BE A COUPLE OF QUESTIONS WHICH HAVE BEEN ASKED SOME THOUSANDS OF TIMES BEFORE, BUT STILL I APOLOGIZE FOR SOME QUESTIONS THAT PROBABLY YOU HAVE ANSWERED SO MANY TIMES.

ANSWER: No problem. You just ask whatsoever you want, and in whatever way you want. And a question may have been asked thousands of times, but I have not given the same answer again and again and again. My answer has been a thousand times different. So you need not be worried; this is my business. You just ask.

Q: THAT MIGHT BE ONE OF THE REASONS YOU'RE BEING JUDGED BY THE PUBLIC SO CONTROVERSIALLY, BECAUSE YOUR ANSWERS ARE NOT ALWAYS THE SAME ON THE SAME SUBJECTS.

A: But I am controversial! It is not a judgment of the public. It is the reality.

Q: YOU SAY THAT IT IS NOT YOUR ANSWER THAT CHANGES, IT IS THE REALITY THAT CHANGES?

A: Yes. It is reality that changes, and I change with reality. I am certainly controversial. There is nothing wrong about the public thinking me controversial.

Q: IS THERE ANYTHING YOU ARE REALLY ANGRY ABOUT? ANY CONTROVERSIAL ISSUE?

A: No.

Q: YOU'RE BEYOND ALL THIS CONTROVERSY?

A: I just enjoy it.

Q: YOUR FOLLOWERS CALL YOU BHAGWAN. HOW SHOULD PEOPLE WHO DO NOT BELONG TO YOUR GROUP ADDRESS YOU?

A: They have to address me as Bhagwan.

Q: WHAT DOES BHAGWAN MEAN?

A: The Blessed One.

Q WHAT IS THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE MEANINGS OF THE BLESSED ONE, THE ENLIGHTENED ONE, AND THE AWAKENED ONE?

A: There is no difference.

Q: SO IT'S ALSO TRUE THAT A BLESSED PERSON IS A CONTINUOUS LAUGHTER?

A: That's true.

Q: AND ALSO EVERY ENLIGHTENED PERSON IS A CONTINUOUS LAUGHTER?

A: That's true.

Q: WOULD YOU PLEASE FOR OUR AUDIENCE GIVE A BRIEF RUNDOWN OF YOUR BIOGRAPHY AND YOUR FIRST ENLIGHTENMENT? WHAT HAPPENED? AND HOW?

A: I don't have any biography. And whatsoever is thought to be biography is utterly meaningless. On what date I was born, in what country I was born, does not matter. What matters is what I am now, right here.

Q: SOMETHING THAT MATTERS, FOR INSTANCE, FOR THE AMERICAN IMMIGRATION AUTHORITIES IS WHETHER YOU WERE ADOPTED BY AN INDIAN GENTLEMAN WHO IS AN AMERICAN CITIZEN, FOR INSTANCE. COULD YOU ELABORATE ON THAT?

A: Everything has been explained to them. All the documents have been given to them. Now it is for them to decide. If they decide against me I am going to fight up to the Supreme Court.

Q: THAT MEANS THEY HAVE NOT YET ACCEPTED THE EXPLANATION?

A: Four years those lousy people are just sitting there, doing nothing -- no decision this way or that.

Q: I UNDERSTAND THAT YOUR REAL ESTATE AGENTS HAVE STARTED PURCHASING PROPERTY IN THE HIMALAYAS. IS THAT TRUE? DO YOU PLAN TO MOVE?

A: No. I don't plan to go anywhere. I am going to be here.

Q: WHATEVER HAPPENS?

A: Whatever happens.

Q: I SEE. BUT YOU ARE STILL BUYING PROPERTY IN THE HIMALAYAS?

A: That is my Indian followers making a commune there, just as I have communes all over the world.

Q: FOR THEIR OWN USE?

A: For their own use.

Q: I SEE. THAT MEANS WHATEVER HAPPENS, YOU HAVE DECIDED TO FIGHT FOR YOUR STAYING HERE.

A: I will fight to the very end.

Q: WILL IT BE A HARD BATTLE?

A: It is going to be.

Q: WILL IT BE A LEGAL BATTLE, OR MIGHT THERE BE OTHER MEANS INVOLVED?

A: I would like it to be legal, but if they force me, then everything can be involved.

Q: THAT MEANS EVEN BY WAY OF ARMED RESISTANCE?

A: Not from my side....

Q: BUT FROM THE SIDE OF YOUR SANNYASINS?

A: No, not from my sannyasins' side either, that is my side.

Q: I SEE.

A: But if anybody tries to be violent in any way with us, we are not nonviolent people. We are neither violent nor nonviolent, we are simply human beings.

Q: BUT IF VIOLENCE ERUPTS, YOU ARE....

A: We will answer tit for tat.

Q TIT FOR TAT, JA. OKAY, THAT'S A VERY STRAIGHTFORWARD QUESTION, UH, ANSWER. WHAT DO YOU DO ALL DAY?

A: Nothing. Just nothing.

Q: AND WHERE DO YOU DO NOTHING?

A: Just sitting in my room, in my chair, enjoying myself.

Q: AND WRITING BOOKS? DID YOU WRITE ALL THESE BOOKS THAT ARE CARRYING YOUR NAME?

A: I have never read my books. Any of my books.

Q: AH, THAT MEANS YOU HAVE YOUR GHOST WRITERS, THOUGH?

A: No, those are my discourses, and my sannyasins edit them.

Q: I SEE

A: And they are published, but I have never read them. What is the point? They are my words.

Q: HOW COME JUST NOW SOMEBODY, WHOM YOU MAY KNOW, HAS PUBLISHED A THING WHICH IS CALLED The Rajneesh Bible? THAT'S A BIG TITLE FOR A BOOK.

A: Bible simply means "the book." It is not a big thing.

Q: WELL, IT ALSO HAS AN ALLUSION TOWARDS THE FOUNDER OF A RELIGION. ARE YOU ABOUT TO FOUND A NEW RELIGION NOW?

A: I am the founder of the only religion. All those founders were all hocus pocus.

Q: WHY IS YOURS TRUE?

A: Because I find them all... Jesus, Mohammed, Buddha, Mahavira -- you name the person and I will show you why he is not the founder of a religion but is simply exploiting people's gullibility.

Q: WOULD YOU EXPLORE THAT ON JESUS?

A: Jesus, in the first place, knew nothing of religion. He never meditated in his life. Whatever he was doing was prayer, and prayer means you have already accepted the existence of God, to whom you are praying. Your prayer is based on a belief, and all beliefs are ignorant. Knowing is something else. If you have experienced a headache, then you know it; but if the whole world goes on talking about headaches and you have not experienced it, just for etiquette's sake you may believe in it. But that belief is ungrounded.

Q: AND THEY ALSO TAKE AN ASPIRIN.

A: If you believe too much, perhaps you may take an aspirin. Then things become worse than before. Jesus' whole ideology is based on belief.

Q: WHERE I SUPPOSE YOURS, I THINK...

A:... is on experience. I don't say to my people that you have to believe in anything that I say. I explain to you my experience, you try to experience. If you

find it right, there is no question of believing in it. You know it. If you find it wrong, of course, there is no question of believing it, either.

Q: APPARENTLY YOUR RELIGION DOES NOT HAVE A SET OF DOGMAS.

A: No.

Q: HOWEVER, THERE ARE SOME SENTENCES WHICH MIGHT, UH, HELP US TO UNDERSTAND THE ESSENCE OF YOUR RELIGION?

A: No.

Q: WELL, FOR EXAMPLE, YOU TEACH SELFISHNESS.

A: Yes, because it is natural. And I teach to be natural.

Q: YES. LION EATS MAN... SO DO YOU TEACH THE SURVIVAL OF THE FITTEST?

A: It happens. It is not a question of my teaching.

Q: WHEN YOU SAY IT HAPPENS, YOU ARE NEVER CONCERNED WITH WHETHER IT'S GOOD OR BAD, THESE THINGS?

A: No question of good or bad; there has never been a question of good and bad. The fittest survives. And the fittest writes all the histories and all the judgments. And, of course, he is right. Might is right; and being Germans, you will understand it better.

Q: WELL, YOU'LL MAYBE UNDERSTAND IT AS WELL, AS YOU OCCASIONALLY HAVE STRONG PREFERENCES FOR HITLER.

A: I love the man! He was crazy.

Q: SO ARE YOU, YOU HAVE SAID.

A: I am more crazy than him.

Q: THAT'S WHY YOU ARE A BIGGER OR GREATER MAN THAN HIM?

A: No, not bigger or greater -- just crazier.

Q: LAST TIME WHEN WE TALKED TO MA SHEELA, I WANTED TO HAVE SOME CLARIFICATION OF A SENTENCE IN WHICH YOU SAID, "HITLER, IN THE END, FAILED BECAUSE HE WAS ONLY A TOOL IN THE HANDS OF HIGHER POWERS."

A: Don't bring in Sheela or anybody. Just I am here; be direct.

Q:... SHE SAID, "ASK THIS QUESTION TO BHAGWAN, "WHICH I HAVE NOW DONE. COULD YOU EXPLAIN THIS SENTENCE TO US?

A: You ask directly, don't bring anybody in. Don't make it unnecessarily complex, ask directly. Why are you afraid of asking the question directly?... Afraid of people in Germany?

Q: NOT REALLY....

A: No? Then just ask directly.

Q: THIS WAS ONLY A POLITE REFERENCE TO MA SHEELA.

A: Don't be polite to me, because I will not be polite to you.

Q: I WAS ONLY BEING POLITE TO MA SHEELA....

A: Ma Sheela is no more concerned here.

Q: OKAY. THE QUESTION IS: "HITLER WAS AN INSTRUMENT IN THE HANDS OF MAGICAL POWERS. THIS IS WHY HE WAS VICTORIOUS ONLY UP TO A CERTAIN POINT." WHAT DOES THIS MEAN, AND WHO ARE THESE MAGICAL POWERS?

A: Adolf Hitler was very much concerned about astrology. He was not listening to his generals, where to attack, when to attack. Rather he was listening to his astrologer, what is the right time, and what is the right place. And the generals were puzzled because astrologers have nothing to do with military science. But for five years continuously he went on winning simply because leaders of the opposite nations -- Roosevelt, Churchill, Stalin -- were following the rules of military science, and he was just going according to something which is not part of military science. They could not conceive where he was going to attack. They could not conceive where they should gather their forces. Finally, Churchill had to import astrologers from India to England.

Q: APART FROM MILITARY ASPECTS, HOW WOULD YOU JUDGE HIM MORALLY AND POLITICALLY?

A: Morally, he was as moral as Mahatma Gandhi.

Q: AS MAHATMA GANDHI?

A: Yes, because I consider both absolutely immoral. In fact, he was more a Hindu than Mahatma Gandhi himself

Q: IN WHAT RESPECT?

A: In his life. In his way of living....

Q: BECAUSE HE WAS A VEGETARIAN...?

A: He was a vegetarian..

Q: BUT HE WAS NOT NONVIOLENT, AS MAHATMA GANDHI WAS.

A: Mahatma Gandhi was also not nonviolent. Just wait a bit; let me finish with Adolf Hitler. He was a vegetarian. He was an early riser in the morning, going early back to sleep. He remained a bachelor almost his whole life -- only three hours before he died, he married. He was not a drunkard, he was not a smoker. He was a puritan in every possible way, and he lived a life of discipline, just as a saint lives in a monastery.
You ask me if Gandhi was nonviolent. That was a political strategy -- but he was not nonviolent. He had declared that after India became independent, armies would be dissolved. But when India became independent and he was asked about armies being dissolved, he remained silent. He was really a cunning man. His secretary said that it was his day of silence.

Q: MAY I DRAW BACK YOUR ATTENTION TO ADOLF HITLER: IS IT TRUE THAT YOU HAVE A CERTAIN AMOUNT OF ANTI-SEMITISM IN COMMON WITH HITLER? THERE WAS A JOKE RELATED BY MA ANAND SHEELA -- I DON'T KNOW WHETHER IT'S TRUE. YOU ARE SUPPOSED TO HAVE TOLD THE JOKE OF A TIGER WHO STUCK HIS NOSE INTO THE ASS OF ANOTHER TIGER AND WHEN HE WAS ASKED WHY HE DID THAT, HE SAID, "WELL I JUST ATE A JEW AND I WANT TO GET RID OF THAT BAD TASTE. " IS THAT TRUE? IS THAT PROPERLY RELATED, THAT JOKE?

A: It will be good if you don't bring Sheela or anybody in between me and you. Be direct.

Q: DID YOU TELL THIS JOKE? IS THAT YOUR JOKE?

A: I cannot remember. For thirty-three years I have been speaking constantly, two hours in the morning, two hours in the evening. Perhaps there is no single individual alive who has spoken as much as I have spoken. So, ask the question!

Q: DO YOU LIKE JEWS OR DON'T YOU LIKE JEWS?

A: I love them -- what is the question of liking? I have among my sannyasins more Jews than anybody else. Almost forty percent of my sannyasins are Jews.

Q: FROM ISRAEL, OR AMERICAN JEWS?

A: From America, from Israel, from Europe, from Germany.

Q: THAT MEANS YOU DON'T HAVE ANY NATIONAL, ANY RACIAL PREJUDICES?

A: I don't believe in the very concept of nations, or religions. I don't draw any lines between one human being and another. And if I have told any joke which you think is anti-Jewish, then I have also told jokes which are anti-Hindu, anti-Mohammedan, anti-Christian. In fact, I have been telling jokes which are against me! Jokes are just jokes. They are not a philosophical standpoint.

Q: YOU SAID YOUR RELIGION IS THE FIRST AND LAST RELIGION. SO, AFTER YOU THERE WILL BE NO MORE NEED FOR ANY RELIGION ANYWHERE?

A: Yes.

Q: DOES THAT APPLY TO AFTER YOUR DEATH?

A: I say it is the first and last religion for the simple reason that I don't consider old religions authentic religions. They were pseudo. They pretend to be religions, but they were not religions.

Q: BECAUSE THEY WERE RELIGIONS FOR THE POOR?

A: No. Because they were religions of superstition. Not a single religion has been able to prove God's existence. Not a single religion has been able to give any proof for heaven and hell.

Q: THAT DOESN'T MEAN GOD DOESN'T EXIST, IF YOU CAN'T PROVE THAT HE EXISTS.

A: It does not mean that; it simply means you cannot go on worshipping something for which no evidence exists in the whole history of man.

Q: SO, MAYBE FOR AN OUTSIDER IT IS SOMEHOW CORRECT TO PUT THE CORE OF YOUR RELIGION INTO THE SENTENCE: FIND YOUR OWN EGO, FIND YOUR OWN SELF.

A: NO. Not your own ego, but your own being. And there is a great difference between the two. Not only different, but they are absolutely contrary to each other. The ego is the false idea in you created by the society... you are a Jew, you are a Mohammedan, you are a Nazi, you are a communist; you belong to this family, this is your holy book, this is your name. You have to remain attached to your tradition, convention.
All these things contribute to your ego. Out of all these your ego is created... as just a combination. Your being is not given to you by the society, church, education, family -- nobody. Your being you bring with yourself when you are born. It is existential.

Q: IS THIS WHY YOU HAVE SAID -- AND PROBABLY HAVE DONE -- IS THIS WHY YOU HAVE SAID, "I HAVE TO DESTROY ALL YOUR EGOS"? -- MEANING THE EGOS OF YOUR FOLLOWERS."

A: Yes.

Q: SO, THE TWENTY OR THIRTY PEOPLE SITTING RIGHT BEHIND MY NECK HAVE NO EGO ANYMORE?

A: You can just look and see.

Q: WELL, THEY DON'T REALLY LOOK LIKE IT, BUT YOU'RE STILL WORKING ON IT, AREN'T YOU? I MEAN, IF THIS IS YOUR AIM, YOUR TARGET... WHEN DO YOU, THE TEACHER, NOTICE THAT SOMEBODY'S EGO HAS BEEN CRUSHED, DISAPPEARED, VANISHED, OR WHATEVER HAPPENS?

A: Yes. I immediately recognize it.

Q: YOU SENSE IT?

A: Yes.

Q: DOES YOUR PUPIL SENSE IT? (To the audience): WHEN DID YOU ALL REALIZE YOUR EGOS HAD BEEN DESTROYED?

A: My disciples are at several stages of development. Somebody's ego has completely disappeared, somebody's ego is just on the boundary to disappear, somebody's ego is still trying to survive, somebody is trying not to let it go. So they are at all stages. But I try to explain to them where they are, and where they have to move from there.

Q: WOULD YOU AGREE TO CALL THIS METHOD OF TREATING PEOPLE TOTALITARIAN?

A: No, because I am not giving them any orders to follow me. I am simply sharing my experience. I have not called them here, they have come on their own. It is their decision to be with me; it is not my decision that they should be with me.

Q: SO, HOW DO YOU MAKE THEM, MAKE PEOPLE GIVE UP THE FAMILY, THEIR PROPERTY, THEIR HOME...?

A: I don't.

Q: BUT YOU MUST HAVE AN IDEA WHY THEY ARE COMING HERE. I MEAN, THEY GIVE UP EVERYTHING THEY HAD BEFORE JUST TO BE CLOSE TO YOU. THEY GIVE UP EVEN THEIR OWN PERSONALITY, AND WHAT ARE THEY GETTING FOR IT?

A: Whatsoever they feel around me, they are on their own accord ready to leave everything behind. But I have never told a single person to leave his family or leave his job. I am not in favor of renunciation. All the old religions were in favor of renunciation. They were telling people to leave the family, to remain celibate. They were telling people to move to the monastery. They were taking people out of the society. I have never told anybody to do anything on my order. But if, being with me, they start feeling that something is stupid that they are carrying and they drop it, that is their business.

Q: THE VAST MAJORITY OF YOUR FOLLOWERS ARE COMING FROM WESTERN CIVILIZATIONS -- FROM THE UNITED STATES, FROM WESTERN EUROPE -- BUT HARDLY ANYONE IS COMING FROM YOUR OWN HOME COUNTRY, HARDLY ANY INDIANS. OR AM I WRONG?

A: India is a dead country.

Q: MENTALLY OR PHYSICALLY?

A: Both.

Q: ECONOMICALLY, OF COURSE, AS WELL. A COUNTRY WITH SUCH A BIG CULTURAL TRADITION, YOU CALL IT MENTALLY DEAD?

A: It was once, but for two thousand years slavery....

Q: WHAT HAPPENED TO THE TAX CASE, BY THE WAY? IS THERE ANY NEW DEVELOPMENT?

A: I have no idea, because I have never paid any tax. I have no income, either.

Q: YOU HAVE NO INCOME?

A: No income.

Q: WHAT ARE YOU LIVING ON THEN?

A: Just my friends -- I am their guest. I have been a guest for thirty-five years continuously -- in fact my whole life. In the beginning I was a guest in my family, and after that I have been a guest in other families.

Q: JUST ONE MORE QUESTION CONCERNING THE MOTIVATION OF PEOPLE COMING TO JOIN YOU, TO JOIN RANKS WITH YOU. I HAVE THE FEELING THAT PRINCIPALLY FRUSTRATED WESTERN YOUTH ARE COMING WHO SEEM TO BE THE MORE OBEDIENT KIND OF CUSTOMERS, WHO DON'T ASK TOO MANY QUESTIONS. AREN'T THE INDIANS, FOR INSTANCE, MORE PRACTICALLY MINDED?

A: Do you think you are an Indian?

Q: NO, NO.

A: Do you see anybody here more frustrated than you?

Q: NO, NO.

A: You go to the commune and see if you can find a single frustrated person.

Q: NOT HERE, BUT THEY SEEM TO BE DISSATISFIED WITH WESTERN CIVILIZATION....

A: They are dissatisfied because they are intelligent people. Only buffalos don't get frustrated.

Q: YOU FIND A NUMBER OF INTELLIGENT PEOPLE IN YOUR OWN HOME COUNTRY, TOO. WHY DON'T YOU ATTRACT ANY OF THEM?

A: I'm telling you, India is a dead country. And everything which is born has to die one day. Even civilizations are born and they have to die. But it is very difficult for people to drop the corpses of the ancient past, their glory, their tradition. They go on carrying the corpses on their shoulders. They are very traditional, very orthodox, and completely closed to anything new. They have the idea that their scriptures have all the truth that is possible There is no need for them....

Q: WE HAVE THE IMPRESSION THE MAJORITY OF YOUR FOLLOWERS ARE -- I'LL SAY IT, I DON'T MEAN IT NEGATIVELY -- SOME KIND OF DROPOUTS OF WESTERN CIVILIZATION.

A: No.

Q: I READ A BOOK BY ANDRES ELTEN AND HE DESCRIBED EXACTLY THE FEELING THAT HE WAS DISSATISFIED COMPLETELY WITH WESTERN CIVILIZATION, AND....

A: Will you call Jean-Paul Sartre a dropout?

Q: WHO?

A: Jean-Paul Sartre. Will you call Bertrand Russell a dropout?

Q: IN THE WESTERN SENSE, JA.

A: Bertrand Russell, a dropout?

Q: IN THE WESTERN SENSE, JA, I WOULD CALL HIM A DROPOUT

A: In no sense can you call Bertrand Russell a dropout. You give on the one hand the Nobel prize to the man, and on the other hand you call him a dropout.

Q: WELL, LIFE IS FULL OF CONTRADICTIONS.

A: I understand perfectly what you mean. Anybody who is intelligent, is a little aware of the situation of the world, of the society, of the family, is bound to be a dropout. Dropping out is absolutely positive. If the house is on fire, you run out of it. That is not escapist.

Q: BUT YOUR WAY IS THE ONLY WAY TO SALVATION, YOU FEEL?

A: No, I don't say that I'm the only savior, or the only salvation, but....

Q: WHAT ALTERNATIVE WOULD YOU SUGGEST THEN?

A: I don't suggest any alternative.

Q: WELL, YOU CALLED FOR THE CREATION OF WHAT YOU NEW MAN....

A: I simply explain to them what I have experienced, and if they feel themselves somehow falling into a kind of synchronicity with me, then it is up to them. Whether they want to be with me or go back to their home... I never persuade anybody to be here; I never prevent anybody from going. It is all up to them. This commune is completely free.

Q: BUT YET, YOU ARE TRYING TO FORM THE NEW MAN, AS YOU SAY. THAT'S WHAT YOU WROTE.

A: I am trying to form a new man. It is just an idea, it is not that a new man can be made like a sculpture. I am just explaining what a new man should be.

Q: THERE HAVE BEEN MANY EXPLICATIONS BY LENIN, BY MARX, EVEN BY ADOLF HITLER, BUT NO ONE EVER MANAGED TO REALLY CREATE THE NEW MAN....

A: Because all their ideas were not right, they did not fit with existence, they all failed.

Q: WHAT'S THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN YOUR NEW MAN AND NIETZSCHE'S SUPERMAN?

A: Superman is a fascist idea. A new man is not superior in any way. A new man is really the most ordinary and simple man. Just try to understand one thing: that I want man to live naturally, ordinarily, without trying to become superior, without going into a pilgrimage towards paradise. Just be here and now, and enjoy whatsoever life gives to you. Be creative, be intelligent -- but this is not

making you a superman. Nietzsche's superman created Adolf Hitler and the whole stupidity that followed. The new man is not the superman.

Q: WHAT HAPPENS IF BHAGWAN DIES? WILL THERE BE A SUCCESSOR?

A: Who cares?

Q: YOUR FOLLOWERS.

A: That is up to them.

Q: WILL THEY VOTE FOR ONE? WILL THERE BE AN ELECTION?

A: I have nothing to do with it. The moment I die....

Q: HOW WILL HE BE CHOSEN?

A: You have to understand me: I don't CARE.
Q: SO YOU HAVE NO RESPONSIBILITY WHATSOEVER FOR YOUR CHURCH?

A: No responsibility whatsoever, because every responsibility makes them slaves. Then I am totalitarian.

Q: ONCE YOU SAID WHEN YOU GO, "MANY OF YOU WILL GO WITH ME." WHAT DID THAT MEAN IN PARTICULAR? WHAT DO YOU MEAN BY THAT?

A: When did I say it?

Q: OH, I DON'T KNOW WHEN YOU SAID IT, BUT I READ IT FROM ONE OF YOUR SCRIPTS. IT WAS..."IF I GO MANY OF YOU WILL GO WITH ME." DOES THAT MEAN THAT IF YOU DECEASE THAT OTHERS WILL HAVE TO FOLLOW YOU?

A: No. If you have read somewhere, you must have read wrongly, out of context.

Q: THAT'S A VERY INTERESTING QUESTION BECAUSE IT KEEPS CROPPING UP IN THE BIBLE, AS WELL. YOU ARE STRONGLY FOR WHAT YOU CALL DEATH CONTROL -- EUTHANASIA, ISN'T THAT THE ENGLISH WORD? -- DEATH CONTROL. A MAN HAS THE RIGHT TO GO TO THE MEDICAL BOARD TO BE FREED FROM HIS BODY, THIS SORT OF THING.

A Yes.

Q: SO THAT'S WHY I'D LIKE TO KEEP TO THIS TOPIC. ALSO, YOUR FIRST ENLIGHTENMENT STARTED WITH A....

A: You are not keeping to any topic at all. I am trying to keep you....

Q: I HAVE TO ENTERTAIN MY READERS, NOT ONLY YOU.

A: I am not concerned with your readers. I am concerned only with the truth that I can impart to you.

Q: WHAT'S TRUTHFUL ABOUT DEATH CONTROL THEN?

A: Once birth control is there, death control has to be there. It is just the logical consequence of birth control. If you try to control birth, you are only trying to control on one end. What about the other end? You are preventing new children being born; it becomes absolutely necessary that people should not be just vegetating in hospitals. They want to die; if they want to die, this is their birthright. And all medical facilities should be provided to these people....

Q: I THINK I HAVE THE VERY POINT HERE. THE RAJNEESH TIMES QUOTED YOU JUST RECENTLY, SAYING, "I TEACH YOU TO REALIZE SUICIDE SO THAT YOU CAN GO FOREVER." WHAT DOES THAT MEAN? DOES THAT MEAN YOU ARE TEACHING SUICIDE AS PART OF YOUR RELIGION? IS IT DESIRABLE?

A: I am simply saying that nothing is wrong with death. It is as beautiful as life. If you have lived, and you feel that now life has no more to give to you, and you feel that you are tired, exhausted and spent, then what is the point of forcing you to drag on because an old idiot, Hippocrates, created the medical oath for doctors that they should always try to save the man? The man wants to die; he is hanging between life and death, and they go on trying every way to keep him alive. Who are you?

Q: WILL YOU COMMIT SUICIDE ALSO, UNDER A CERTAIN CONDITION?

A: If I feel like it, if I feel like now there is no work for me, I will. There is no problem in it. I am Master of my own self; nobody is to control me.

Q: AND WILL YOU ENCOURAGE SOMEONE ELSE TO FOLLOW YOU?

A: No. I never encourage about anything. I simply explain myself, I never encourage anybody.

Q: YOU ARE A GREAT ADMIRER OF VINCENT VAN GOGH, THE DUTCH PAINTER, THE ONE WITH THE EAR. YOU SAID SOMETHING LIKE, "HE COMMITTED SUICIDE FOR THE SIMPLE REASON THAT HE HAD PAINTED EVERYTHING HE HAD WANTED TO PAINT. SO TO THE WHOLE WORLD IT SEEMS SUICIDE, NOT TO ME. TO ME IT SIMPLY SEEMS A NATURAL END. THE PAINTING IS COMPLETED, LIFE IS FULFILLED."

A: Yes, absolutely.

Q: BY THE WAY, WOULD YOU LIKE TO OWN A PAINTING BY VAN GOGH, IN ADDITION TO YOUR NINETY ROLLS ROYCES?

A: No. I own nothing.

Q: BUT WHO IS THERE TO DECIDE WHETHER THIS EUTHANASIA SHOULD BE DONE? IT'S AN IMPORTANT QUESTION -- MAYBE NOT FOR YOU -- BUT IF DEATH CONTROL IS EXERTED, WHO SHOULD DO IT? A COMMITTEE OF DOCTORS? A LAWYER? A POLITICIAN?

A: Politicians, certainly not. Legal experts have no business in deciding about life and death. But the medical profession should be freed from the Hippocratic oath; that their function is just to save, whatsoever the situation. They should be allowed... their function is to serve, whatsoever the condition. If the person is still capable of living a meaningful life, if he is still wanting to live, if he has still the lust for life, help him. But if a person has nothing to live for and he is telling you that it is time for him to be freed from this body....

Q: WELL, HE MAY HAVE REGRETTED IT NEXT DAY.
(BOTH JOURNALISTS CONTINUE TO TALK SIMULTANEOUSLY....)

A: You go on interfering with each other!

Q: (FIRST JOURNALIST): BUT WE'RE SPONTANEOUS PEOPLE, YOU KNOW....
Q: (SECOND JOURNALIST): YOU KEEP SAYING YOU HAVE NO INFLUENCE AT ALL, AND YOU'RE NOT TRYING TO INFLUENCE PEOPLE, BUT YOU KEEP WRITING THICK BOOKS. AND YOU'RE HOLDING INTERVIEWS.

A: I will continue, but I am not trying to influence anybody.

Q: BUT CAN'T YOU UNDERSTAND THAT PEOPLE ARE AFRAID OF WHAT YOU DO...? MR. TEERTHA SAID IN AN INTERVIEW, "IF BHAGWAN TOLD ME TO COMMIT SUICIDE, I WOULD IMMEDIATELY TAKE A GUN AND KILL MYSELF." IS THAT A REAL EVIL KIND OF INFLUENCE?

A: What he is saying is his side. He is not saying that I am going to tell him, because I don't tell anybody even to drink a glass of water or a cup of tea.

Q: THERE ARE OTHER MEANS OF INFLUENCING PEOPLE, JUST....

A: No, I am not. I am consistently making them alert not to be influenced by me. I may be wrong. What that man has said IS HIS trust.

Q: THERE IS A BOOK WRITTEN BY YOU. THE TITLE IS Dying for Enlightenment....

A: That's perfectly good.

Q: JA, BUT DON'T YOU THINK THAT PEOPLE MIGHT FEEL ENCOURAGED BY SUCH A TITLE, AND WHAT IT CONTAINS?

A: No. That dying means the death of your ego.

Q: THE DEATH AND ENLIGHTENMENT THROUGH DEATH.

A: Yes, that means the death of your ego... not the death of you.

Q: ANOTHER THING YOU TRY TO DESTROY IS CONSCIENCE.

A: Yes, the conscience that has been created by the society; because only that is the way to free his consciousness. And these are two different things, except in the French language. In the French language, there is only one word, CONSCIENCE for both consciousness and conscience. But they are two different things. Consciousness the child brings with himself Conscience is given by the society, the family, the educational system and everybody else.

Q: SO, IF HE IS FREED, IF SOMEBODY IS COMPLETELY FREED OF CONSCIENCE, HE MIGHT GO AROUND AND DO REALLY HARMFUL THINGS.

A: What?

Q: ISN'T IT CONSCIENCE THAT REFRAINS PEOPLE FROM GOING ROUND HURTING OTHER PEOPLE?

A: It is conscience that has been creating all the wars in the world and killing millions of people.

Q: MAYBE THERE'S DIFFERENT TYPES OF CONSCIENCE.

A: All the consciences: Mohammedans have done that, Hindus have done that, Christians have done that. For three thousand years there have been five thousand wars in the world, and they are still preparing for the third, total war. This is the conscience of your presidents, of your prime ministers, of your leaders, of your popes, of your priests. A man of consciousness cannot do anything wrong. It is impossible.

Q: IS MOTHER TERESA A WOMAN OF CONSCIENCE? I AM JUST MENTIONING THE NAME BECAUSE I HAVE A QUOTE....

A: Can't you find anybody better?

Q: IT'S VERY GOOD FOR A START, THAT REMARK; AND YOU CALLED HER, BY GOD, CRIMINALLY MINDED AND IDIOTIC...!

A: Yes.

Q: DO YOU THINK THAT'S THE RIGHT WAY OF CALLING SOMEONE WHO DEDICATES HIS LIFE TO HELPING THE MISERABLE IN THE WORLD?

A: The people who devote themselves to helping the miserable keep misery alive.

Q: THEY ARE TRYING TO FIGHT IT, AT LEAST.

A: No. They are simply exploiting the misery for their own glory. Misery can be destroyed completely, but it cannot be destroyed by Mother Teresa. Mother Teresa wants more orphans. Mother Teresa wants more poor people so that she can convert those people to Catholicism. It is sheer politics. All the religions have been exploiting and doing the same thing. I don't make any distinction between those religions.

Q: YOU WOULDN'T APPROVE GOOD HEARTEDNESS AS...?

A: No, not at all. I approve only of one thing: If you have plenty -- abundant life,

And what does America know? Henry Ford, Rockefeller? -- they cannot have a deep intimacy with me.
Yes, a few Americans have remained with me. Mukta is sitting there, but she is not really American, she is Greek. The American generation is just changing continuously -- everything is a fashion. They can come to me also as part of a fashionable movement, but they are not going to remain here, because soon they get attracted to something else. They don't know how to grow roots.
And different countries have different ways. It is not a coincidence that forty percent of my people are Jews. And I have been hitting hard on Jews -- so much so that rabbis have started writing letters to me saying, "You seem to be anti-Jewish." They don't know that Jews are the majority of my people, and I can hit on them because I love them and they understand my love. In my hit, they receive my love.
Not a single Jew has left me. Once he has come, he has come forever, he has found his Israel in me. He need not go to Jerusalem, he need not bother about Moses and Jesus; there is no need. They have found a more contemporary Moses here.
Each country can be given a certain characteristic. For example, Indians: they pretend to be spiritualists, and that is the most materialistic country in the whole world, most greedy. They could not be with me for the simple reason that I was exposing them -- and unless I expose you totally, you cannot be reborn.
Indians started escaping from me the moment I started exposing them. They took the hint, and it was right: they are greedy, they are materialist; they don't have any longing for spirituality, only pretensions. Yes, once, twenty-five centuries ago, perhaps they were spiritual, and that idea of the past has followed them like a shadow. But they forget completely that for twenty-five centuries you cannot go on pretending that the shadow that is following you is alive. Indian spirituality is dead, and I don't see much hope for its revival.
But a few Indians have been with me all along, in all the seasons, in all the changes. So when I say something about a country, it does not apply to individuals. Now Avesh is sitting there -- a great Frenchman -- and he is going to sit there forever. I have destroyed his French-ship completely. Arup herself is Dutch. Can she conceive of ever leaving me? Not even in dreams; it is impossible. I can say that with certainty, because love is never uncertain.
England is so sad and depressed -- obviously: they were on the top, they had the biggest empire any country ever had.... It was said that the sun never sets in the British Empire, somewhere or other it is always rising. As far as the whole Empire was concerned, the sun was always rising somewhere; it never set in the British Empire. Neither Alexander, nor Napoleon, nor Hitler, nor Stalin has known such a vast empire. Nobody has been able to know such immense power, and suddenly all that has disappeared like writing on water. It is natural that they will be so depressed, sad. They would not like to come out of their depression. They cannot accept laughing, dancing, singing. They have lost so

much, and you are thinking to dance? They have lost everything, and you are proposing, "Let us sing a beautiful song!"

England will find it more difficult than anybody else to be with me. But that does not apply to individuals, let me remind you again. Teertha is there... the moment he entered my room, many years ago, not for a single moment has he left, not even to visit England again. He has dropped his wife, he has dropped his parents, he has dropped everything. He was a well-known encounter leader, he had the best growth institute in Europe; but once he looked into my eyes, all that was finished. I knew it, he knew it -- that he was bound that day and a new life began which had nothing to do with the past.

Individuals will be coming from everywhere, but a few countries have more potential. For example, it is very difficult to get into the Mohammedan countries -- almost impossible, because they are still so uncivilized. Civilization has not happened anywhere, but there are countries which are a little less uncivilized and there are countries which are more uncivilized. Civilization is still waiting to happen. It is waiting to happen for you: you are to become the heralds of civilization.

But Mohammedan countries are not even contemporaries. They have not moved a single inch from the times of Mohammed. Fourteen centuries have passed and they are still thinking that the Koran is the holy book. In the Koran ninety-nine percent is just nonsense. One percent you can manage to give some spiritual meaning, with great effort, otherwise it is not of any importance. And Mohammedans have remained faithful to the Koran. They are not ready even to listen to anybody.

A few Mohammedans are my sannyasins, but those poor people ask me, "Bhagwan, we want to be sannyasins, we want to be contemporaries, we want to have the revolution that you are giving us, but we cannot go in red clothes back home. They will simply kill... they don't argue."

Mohammedans don't know argument. They don't know any philosophy. Their only argument is the sword: either kill them, or be killed by them; whosoever is killed was wrong. That is strange. It is very easy to kill Socrates, any idiot like Muhammad Ali can kill Socrates without any difficulty. Socrates is not a wrestler, he is not a boxer; just a good punch on his nose and he will be finished with all his philosophy. Physical strength or strength that comes through weapons cannot be a substitute for argument. Argument needs intelligence, and that intelligence is missing there.

In India, I had come in contact with hundreds of Mohammedans. You may not know that India is still the biggest Mohammedan country in the world as far as numbers are concerned, even after the division with Pakistan. When Pakistan and Bangladesh were one with India, of course, half the population of Mohammedans was in India. But even after Pakistan was separated, Bangladesh got separated, still India had a larger Mohammedan population than any other

country. Countries which are completely Mohammedan -- even they are far behind.
These Mohammedans in India are a little better than any Mohammedans in any other country because for centuries they have been living with all kinds of philosophers, all kinds of religions, all kinds of attitudes, approaches. Obviously their fanaticism has become less, but even that fanaticism is enough to kill you. You cannot say anything against one holy book -- and that is Koran; one God -- and that is that of Islam; and one prophet -- and that is Mohammed. In these three statements, the whole Mohammedanism is complete. You cannot speak against any of these three... and there is so much to say against all these three.
The Mohammedan God does not look like a God at all, their holy book is just rubbish, and their one and only one prophet is just an uneducated, uncultured man, with no idea of philosophical heights, with no knowledge of anything, who has never meditated in his life. He knows nothing about meditation.
But the sannyasins who are Mohammedans have asked me, "Give us permission.... We will keep the mala hidden in our houses, we will keep the robe hidden in our houses, we cannot even let our family know about it because that will be just the end. And if you want," they have told me, "that we should be killed, we are ready."
Now, I am not a fanatic about the color of the dress or the mala. I said, "Don't be worried about it. I need your heart, and if that has become red.... I need to be within you. If I have reached there, then don't be worried. And I don't want anybody to be killed in my name, I want people to live longer, healthier, happier in my name."
Mohammed says to Mohammedans, "If you die in my name, your paradise is certain." I say to you, "If you live in my name and love in my name and dance in my name, you are already in paradise." I don't guarantee anything about the future, how can I tell anybody to die in my name?
The earth is so small and it is divided in so many different groups who have grown differently, had different histories -- and their past is significant, that has to be taken into account. So, whenever I have said anything about Holland, or Germany, or England, I was simply indicating the possibility.
I have so many Italians -- but not reliable; well greased and slippery! They try hard, nice people, but what can they do about their greasiness? Some thing in them is always slippery. Many Italians have come to me, very few have stayed. Those who have stayed have changed a lot, but still something of greasiness is there. Now they are not going to slip back, but the possibility remains... they are not absolutely out of it.
But if we can get the right people, the people who are not that ripe may start following them. That's how the human mind functions; it is imitative. If we have enough red people around the earth, then more and more Italians will slip into being red people. Slipperiness has no direction, you just have to give them the right place from where to slip.

And if we can create a rejoicing around the world, how long can England remain depressed? Nobody wants to be depressed. How long can they go on singing "God Save the King"? And what about them? God only saves the queen or the king? -- what about the people? God has not been in favor of the people.
Those people are waiting for something to happen in the world that can drag them out of their gloominess, their depressiveness, and can make them free, free of the glory that they had of the empire, which they are missing.
We can give them a new glory which nobody can take away from them. That glory that they had was really ugly: exploiting people, poor people all around the world -- and your whole joy was dependent on these starving people, and you went on exploiting them. If you are sad and depressed today, it is the consequence of your own actions. You have made millions of people sad, depressed, you have killed millions of people around the world to save the empire; now who is going to suffer the consequences?
England is now a dark hole. That does not mean that people want to live in that dark hole, but we have to make an effort to reach into their darkness with our torches, we have to throw ropes into that dark hole. Somebody is bound to catch hold of the rope and we can pull him out. And it is a question only of a few people starting moving, and others may follow.
So in every country we have to work in a different way, seeing the country's characteristic. Now we have communes all around the world. Every commune has to understand what kind of people you are surrounded with, and what can be done so that they can be pulled within you. It is simple arithmetic.

Q: BHAGWAN, WHEN YOU WERE TALKING ABOUT WERNER ERHARD, THE BUSINESSMAN WHO DISCOVERED THAT PERSONAL GROWTH SELLS BETTER THAN ENCYCLOPEDIAS, YOU SAID THAT THE BUSINESS OF GROWTH IS JUST AN AMERICAN NAME FOR GOD.
THE SAN FRANCISCO EXAMINER CHRONICLE, REPORTING THIS, NOTED THAT YOU DID NOT COMMENT ON THE PERSONAL GROWTH MARKETING OF YOUR OWN RAJNEESH INTERNATIONAL MEDITATION UNIVERSITY HERE. WHAT IS THE DIFFERENCE AND WHAT PART DOES THE UNIVERSITY PLAY IN THE LIFE OF THE COMMUNE?

A: The difference is great. He was a door-to-door salesman of encyclopedias. Our university is not going door-to-door to sell anything to anybody.
Our university is a well. Those who are thirsty can come and drink out of it. It is available, but we are not persuading anybody. On the contrary, I am making every effort to offend them, to make them angry, become our enemies. Do you think this is business tactics?
In business, the customer is always right. Here the situation is totally different: the customer is always wrong. From whatsoever source he comes, he is always wrong -- and he comes on his own, in spite of all that I go on doing continuously

to prevent him from coming. Nobody in the whole world has offended so many people as I alone have done, singlehandedly.

But even after all this turmoil that I create, and offensiveness and antagonism in their minds, a few daring people come. These people can be relied upon. Just their coming is significant. Certainly, my university is not part of the marketplace.

Werner Erhard was part of the market world. He was taking his est from one hotel to another hotel around the country, then outside the country. And he was neither a philosophical man, nor religious; he had registered est as a corporation, a business corporation. He was paying income tax for all his incomes.

Our university is not a business. We don't have to pay any taxes for the university. The degrees that our university gives are of no use in the marketplace, because we don't want our degrees to be recognized by any government or by any university or any other institution. We refuse to be recognized by them, because just the fact that we let them recognize us means they are somebody higher than us, somebody more authoritative. We don't accept any government's recognition, because no government is worthy of it.

Our university is absolutely a free phenomenon. Those who want to come, come knowing that whatever we have to offer is of no use in the marketplace. In fact it may make their market world more difficult for them, because a person who comes here for three months or four months to do a course in the university... we are not giving him growth the way Werner Erhard was giving. He started from where you are.

Our work is first to destroy whosoever you are -- whosoever, without any condition. We destroy you first, dismantle you first, and unless we have deprogrammed you completely there is no growth possible. We don't teach you any growth. To be deprogrammed... you start growing on your own accord. Werner Erhard was teaching you techniques of growth, but if you are a monster and you are being taught techniques of growth, you will become a bigger monster.

Werner Erhard never offended anybody. That's simply the way of the businessman: never offend anybody. Everybody was happy with him. The government was happy, the churches were happy, the politicians were happy -- not only in this country, but in other countries too. He used to go to India to pay respect to the so-called Hindu mahatmas. Muktananda was his guru. He even went to pay his respects to Morarji Desai, when he was the prime minister of India. And by mistake he even came to me, thinking I also belong to the same category of mahatmas that he has known all his life. He must have been shocked.

When he was sitting in front of me, I could see how difficult it was for him just to sit there. And when I told him he can ask anything, he simply said, "No, I don't have any questions." Laxmi had given him my latest books, just as a present. He went into the hotel -- which was not far away, just a few minutes walk -- and gave those books to one sannyasin, Hridaya, without even looking at them. Some

great fear must have arisen in him. Reading those books might disturb his mind. And certainly I was not the person that he had expected. I would have destroyed his whole est first.
I have to begin from scratch. First I have to demolish the old building completely, I don't believe in renovation. Howsoever beautifully you renovate a building, it still remains the old rotten thing; just painted here and there, a little bit supported, but it is just the old rotten building that you have given a facelift. No, it is better to live in an A-frame, but new, fresh, young.
Werner Erhard is a businessman, there are no two opinions about it. And nobody can compare me with Werner Erhard. Our whole approach is totally different.
Our approach is first to deprogram the person completely, and then leave him alone to himself. Don't give him another program. Leave him alone, empty, just a pure nothingness. And out of that nothingness grows everything that existence wanted to grow in that man.
We bring the person close to existence, from where he has been taken away. Once we see that you are communing with existence, our work is finished. We don't give you growth, we simply take away all nonsense that is surrounding you and which perhaps you think is growth. Growth comes of its own accord, you just have to be utterly open and vulnerable.
I am not a businessman. I could have been and then I would have defeated all the businessmen in the whole world. But I have chosen to offend everybody, ready for their hostility from every nook and corner of the world.
A businessman tries to be respectable, and I have been trying my whole life to be notorious. Unless you understand me, you will not be able to see why I unnecessarily create hostility in people. I am not a businessman. I have nothing to sell to them. If they are courageous enough to come nearer to me, I am going to burn their whole personality. I'm going to take their whole skin off their body and then leave them alone so they can grow fresh from the very beginning.
That growth will not be in any way a credit to me. That growth will be a credit to the person who dared to come, who dared to pass through the fire, who dared to risk his whole life. The whole credit goes to him.

Q: BHAGWAN, GOING BACK TO HOLLAND: YOUR COMMUNE IN HOLLAND WAS LIVING IN A PRISON AND NOW HAS MOVED INTO A MONASTERY. IS THIS PROGRESS? AND WHAT DO YOU THINK OF THEM HAVING A DISCO IN A CHURCH NEXT?

A: That's great. I want discos in all the churches and cathedrals and all the mosques and all the temples around the world. They are the best places for disco. So this is a great advance, that they have turned a church into a disco! That's what I want.
And if they have moved to the monastery, for the first time the monastery will have real people, not hypocrites, in it. For the first time, the monastery will hear

laughter and singing and dancing and people loving each other. The monastery may have seen monks who were simply monsters and nothing else. Now the monastery will see what really the word monk means and what is the meaning of being a monastery.
The word monk means one who is capable of being himself, individual, alone, independent. That is the meaning of the monk: alone. It has nothing to do with Christianity. You will recognize the word in other words: monogamy, monopoly -- it is the same word. Monk, monastery... MONASTERY means people living there totally independent, completely free from any strings and yet they have one thing in common: that they all want to be alone and individuals. This is the common factor that keeps them together.
So it is good that our commune in Holland has moved into a monastery. We will make it a real monastery because my people are real monks, and the monastery will be really celebrating. My people, even if you give them a graveyard, are going to make a carnival there. The graves will become tables for drinking wine. They will soon turn the graveyard into such a beautiful place that you would never imagine that thousands of dead bodies are under the ground.
The actual fact is, wherever you are sitting, at least ten persons' dead bodies are on that spot underneath you. So many millions of people have lived down the millions of years, it has been calculated that not a single inch on the earth is not a graveyard. And for all these people who have lived on the earth and died, this is the minimum -- that on every spot at least eight persons are buried deep down.
So there is no problem: when we can make any place a place of joy, we can change a graveyard into a joy. Just inquire of those people.... Because it happens often that by the side of the churches there are graveyards, by the side of the monastery there are graveyards. If there are graveyards, transform them into dancing places, playing grounds; fill them with laughter and joy. Perhaps those who are buried there will have for the first time a time which they never had in their life. It is just great.

Q: DO YOU THINK SOME OF THOSE GHOSTS MIGHT STILL BE KICKING AROUND UNDERNEATH?

A: There are no ghosts. There was only one ghost -- the holy ghost -- and he too finished only by making a poor girl pregnant. Then what happened to the holy ghost? He must have committed suicide, thinking of the consequences that followed his making the woman pregnant, which was illegal, criminal, irreligious, a sin.
Secondly, out of that sin, what else can you expect but Jesus Christ? People had to crucify him. Seeing his son being crucified, do you think the holy ghost would have survived? Since then, nothing has been heard about him. No news... the Vatican is silent.

There are no ghosts, there are only dead skeletons underneath. The soul goes on moving to new forms. It depends how you have lived. Your whole life essence determines your new form. What you have desired your whole life and have not been able to fulfill, that desire at the last moment of your life stands as the only thing that determines your life. There is nobody directing anything, it is simply the law.

For example, a man goes on writing to me -- obviously he's from California. It is so difficult to find anything right in California. The man goes on writing to me that he loves to dress himself in women's dresses. When he was in California, there was no problem. There are many who are doing that and they are doing it perfectly. It is very difficult to detect that this is a man -- with tits and all!

But here he finds it difficult, because everybody knows he is a man. So he goes on asking me what he should do: "Should I go through plastic surgery and become a woman?'

Now, this man if he dies will become a woman. That is his whole mind, full of only one desire: to become a woman. And it is my experience that this is not an exceptional case, this is the rule. Men get tired in seventy years' life of being men, and every man thinks women are more juicy, enjoying life more, and he has been simply sucked of all his energy.

And the woman her whole life goes on thinking that, as a woman, whatsoever she is going to do, she is not going to be really equal to man. Liberation or no liberation, man is going to dominate her. The woman carries the desire to be a man, and my experiments with many people about their past lives even surprised me in the beginning, because the man was a woman in the past life, the woman was a man in the past life. For many lives you have been human beings, man or woman.

But if we go deeper, you have been animals. If you go still deeper, you have been plants -- but that is millions of lives back. The whole physiological, biological evolution stopped at man. This whole growth up to now was horizontal. At this point, man has come to a crossroad. He can go on horizontally, changing man to woman, woman to man, but there is no growth. Now he has to take a vertical route, not horizontal. And that vertical route is my whole effort.

Meditation is a way of giving you a vertical route. Then there is no need to be reborn. Bodies move horizontally, souls have wings. Once you are fully alert, aware, conscious, enlightened, then this is your last body, because only bodies can move on the horizontal line. Now you are a soul. You will have to move vertically.

But what a joy! Not to have a cage of bones, muscles, blood vessels, nerve system, a skull.... Sometimes it is good experience to go to a medical college and see a skeleton: this is you, really naked. Not only the clothes are removed... he has gone too far; he has removed everything. Just bones, just the fundamental structure is there, and everything else has been removed.

Once in a while, standing before a mirror, just close your eyes and think that you are a skeleton. Then open your eyes and look into the mirror. Try to figure out what kind of skeleton you have. That's why I say you should first see a few skeletons. I suggest to Vedant and Siddha that in the university you should have a few skeletons hanging around all over the place, so nobody can bypass -- and that will prove also that this is not a marketplace, and everybody has to understand that this is your reality. When the soul is free from all bondage, it moves into the cosmos, it becomes one with the sky, with the sunrise, with the flowers, with the birds, with all that exists. It spreads all over. It has no more any limitations, it is as big and vast as the whole universe itself. That's what I call liberation. That is the end, because nothing is more blissful, more ecstatic, than to achieve it.

Q: BHAGWAN, EARLIER ON YOU WERE TALKING ABOUT NATIONAL CHARACTERISTICS AND YOU WERE JUST TALKING NOW ABOUT THE LAST DESIRE AT THE MOMENT OF DEATH, SO IF SOMEONE GETS REBORN INTO SOME NATIONALITY, DOES THAT WHOLE NATIONAL HISTORY BECOME PART OF THE BODY, OF THE MIND, OR HOW DOES IT CONNECT?

A: Mostly it never happens, or very rarely. A Dutch is born again in Holland; a Hindu goes on again and again being a Hindu, because his whole conditioning can be adjusted in a Hindu environment. Perhaps, rarely.... I have yet to come across a person who was something else in his past life; now he is an Italian, and in the past life he was a German. People go on being born in the same race, in the same atmosphere. The only change that happens is from man to woman.

Perhaps my people will find it difficult where to be reborn, because now they don't belong to any race and they don't belong to any country. But don't be afraid, we have so many sannyasins throughout the world, you can get born as a sannyasin somewhere -- and there are a few sannyasin women, sannyasin men, who want children. But I have not come across a case where somebody is born from Tibet into India, or from India into China. It is unnatural. The soul flows in the same rut to which it has become accustomed.

There are many cases in India of small children remembering their past lives. It happens only in India, for the simple reason that that is the only country that believes in rebirth. Christians believe in only one birth, Jews believe in only one birth, Mohammedans believe in only one birth. It is only the religions born in India who say that there are thousands of births. It is a long process -- seventy years is not enough for a sleeping person to be awakened. He needs more time.

They believe it; I know it.

It is certainly true; it is not a hypothesis. But I don't want you to believe it, because for you it will not be a truth. I would like you to explore. Go back into your past lives -- it is really a tremendous trick, just terrific -- and as you go

backwards, you are simply amazed what kind of person you are and how many forms you have taken before. And this is a great help, to understand that no form has been a contentment to you. From every form you have died in discontent and despair, so now don't miss the chance of moving vertically.

It is good for animals to move horizontally. Ordinarily, they also move horizontally, and it is symbolical, really significant. The only animal on the earth standing, against gravitation -- walking on four is easier because it is not against gravitation, the force of gravitation is equally distributed all over the body-you are also vertical, just as gravitation is vertical. That's why in sleep you find so much relaxation, because in sleep you become horizontal. You get tired standing up, sitting long; then you need lying down.

How does that lying down bring you relaxation, rejuvenation? Just being in tune with gravitation. Standing, you are really doing a miracle. You are against gravitation, which pulls everything down, and your heart has to pump blood into your head, upwards. It is a miracle that you are performing every second. Your heart is really a rebel, a revolution against gravitation. It is forcing blood upwards.

It is now a well-established fact why animals have not been able to grow brains: for the simple reason that they are horizontal. In their heads, blood flows so much that the necessary small cells which constitute your brain-seven million cells in your small skull -- are so small that in that flood of blood they cannot survive. They cannot be born, either.

Just because man stood on two legs and the head became against gravitation, a very small blood flow reaches to the head and the head can grow a very delicate system of nerves, a delicate combination of cells. But for that a very small and silent flow of blood is needed.

That's why I'm against anybody doing the headstand posture of yoga. More than three seconds is dangerous; your brain cells cannot stand too much blood coming to them for more than three seconds. And you can see the result: not a single Hindu yogi has contributed anything to the world. Those yogis are standing on their heads, they destroy their brain, and the brain is the necessary instrument to create anything. The Hindu yogis have been the most uncreative people in the world, they have been just the parasites of our society.

So, anybody who is interested in standing on the head, it is really a good exercise -- but only for three seconds. Then just be back on your feet. It is good because it refreshes your mind: just a sudden shower of blood and the whole mind is refreshed. All the dead cells will go back when you jump again to your feet, the blood returning back to the body will itself take all dead cells that were hanging around in your head. The exercise is good, but exact timing... nobody should do it more than three seconds.

So, people are continuously born into the same culture, except a few exceptional people -- travelers, nomads, who don't have any home, who don't have any

attachment, who may be born into some new environment. And that's from where the trouble child is born.
You know the word problem child. It is not the child's decision to make any trouble, but he is a misfit, he does not belong to your heritage, your conditions, your past. He has some other past, some other conditions, and there is going to be a clash between the parents and the child. Most probably the parents are going to prevail, they will destroy the child's heritage and force him to belong to them, to their race, to their religion.
But these children who are born into a different race, into a different country, for some reason, are really very valuable. Any problem child is a very valuable phenomenon. If we allow him freedom to grow, he will bring new richness to your race, to your country. He will introduce something that your race has never known. These children prove to be the geniuses.
And vice versa: you can look into the lives of your geniuses and you will always find in their childhood their parents had as much trouble with them as human beings can tolerate. All geniuses are a trouble in their childhood, and any child who is not a trouble in his childhood is going to do all kinds of businesses -- Werner Erhard and all kinds of shops and marketplaces -- but he cannot be a genius. It is difficult... he is burdened with his own past, and his parents have burdened him with their past. He is in a kind of split.
Perhaps this will give some insight to you about schizophrenia. Why do some people suffer from schizophrenia? Because from two different directions two conditions meet in them, but they cannot mix and become one, they remain two. Sometimes one is up and the person starts speaking in a different way, behaving in a different way; another time the other is up and the person behaves so diametrically opposite to his normal behavior that all you can do is take him to the psychiatrist. You start thinking he is sick.
He is not sick, he is simply suffering because two long traditions have met in him. All that he needs is to be a witness of both the conditionings and separate himself, disidentify himself from both the conditionings, and the whole schizophrenia will disappear.
In fact, the moment he disidentifies himself from both the conditions, he will have a richness that you cannot have, because he can use from both the conditions, both the heritages, things which he wants. He is now the master.

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #17
Chapter title: You Are Alive
3 August 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This discourse is published in the book: The Last Testament, Volume 1, as Chapter 28.]
Willem Sheer
PERS UNIE
THE HAGUE,
NETHERLANDS

QUESTION: I HAVE BEEN READING YOUR BOOKS FOR SOME YEARS AND I HAVE BEEN SEEING SOME VIDEOS OF YOU. AND I WAS HERE LAST WINTER AT THE WINTER FESTIVAL. AND ONE WEEK AGO AT THE OFFICE I GOT A TELEPHONE CALL FROM BHAGAWATI WHO ASKED ME IF I WOULD LIKE TO HAVE AN INTERVIEW WITH YOU. SO HERE I AM. I HAVE APPROXIMATELY 100,000 QUESTIONS. AND I CHOSE ABOUT TWENTY... I SELECTED ABOUT TWENTY OUT OF THEM.

ANSWER: Good, let's start.

Q: MY FIRST QUESTION WOULD BE: BHAGWAN, I HAVE BEEN TRAINED IN A CLIMATE OF CRITICAL JOURNALISM. I AM TAUGHT AS A JOURNALIST NEVER TO BELIEVE ANYONE ON HIS WORD. ARE YOU CAPABLE TO COMMUNICATE YOUR MESSAGE TO SUSPICIOUS JOURNALISTS? OR IS TRUST NEEDED TO UNDERSTAND WHAT YOU REALLY MEAN?

A: No. No faith, no belief, no trust is needed. And what you have been taught as a journalist, to be critical, skeptical, is exactly my message. Be critical, be skeptical. Go on saying no until you can find the yes which you cannot deny.
My people are not people who have gathered here because of a certain faith or belief. They are inquirers, seekers with open minds, and they are being taught only one thing: never accept anything unless you can experience it. Critical journalism is just third rate, because it is only the mind, the reason. But the mind and reason can be very easily defeated. Just a little sharper intelligence is needed and your criticism will be gone.
But the criticism I am teaching to my people is something far deeper and far wider. I am teaching them not to argue about truth, because there is no way through argument to reach the truth. Whenever two arguments fight, all that is

proved is who was more capable of arguing. Truth is never proved that way, truth has to be experienced. So deny every belief and deny it absolutely. Not even a lingering shadow of belief should be within you.

Q: SO YOUR SANNYASINS ALSO SHOULD BE SKEPTICAL ABOUT WHAT YOU SAY?

A: They are.

Q: AND WHEN YOU SAY, "DO THIS AND THAT AND THIS WILL BE THE RESULT," THEN THEY ENTER IT WITH A SKEPTICAL, CRITICAL MIND?

A: Certainly. Whatever I say to them is hypothetical, just the way science works. A scientist enters into an experiment with a hypothesis. Hypothesis means not belief, but just that one has to begin somewhere, so for the moment he accepts a certain concept and enters into it with absolute alertness so that he is not deceived by his own hypothesis. He has to be aware that it is only a hypothesis and not a truth.

Q: BUT YOU ALSO SAID, "TRUST ME, FOLLOW ME."

A: That is said to those people who have arrived. I have been speaking to millions of people. And when I speak to a person, I cannot take account of the whole world. My statement is direct and immediate and personal. When I have said to somebody, "Trust and follow me," that means the person has arrived. Now there is no need of any skepticism, no negativity. Now there is no need for him to unnecessarily harass himself, he has done enough. But not before that.

Q: SO TRUST IS A LATER STATE?

A: Yes.

Q: MAY I ASK ANOTHER QUESTION? I BELONG TO THE DIMINISHING MINORITY OF DUTCH PEOPLE WHO REGARD THE HOLY ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH AS A WONDERFUL INSTITUTE IN WHICH A LOT OF WISDOM CAN BE FOUND. AT THE SAME TIME I ENJOY YOUR BOOKS AND VIDEOS. IS THIS A PARADOX, AND IF SO, WHAT CAN BE DONE ABOUT IT?

A: It is a paradox and you know exactly what has to be done about it. If you could have left me, you would have left. You cannot leave me. So the paradox is dissolved: Catholicism is finished.

Q: I MEET IN THE CATHOLIC CHURCH PERSONS WHOM I SINCERELY EXPERIENCE AS SINCERE. AND I HAVE OFTEN READ THAT FOR EXAMPLE MOTHER TERESA... YOU MOCK HER A LOT. I ONCE MET HER MYSELF AND I FOUND HER A BEAUTIFUL WOMAN. WHEN I ASKED HER, "SHOULD CHRISTIANS CONVERT PEOPLE OF OTHER RELIGIONS TO CHRISTIANITY?" SHE ANSWERED, "NO, LET EVERYBODY GO HIS OWN WAY. YOU GO YOUR WAY TO GOD, I GO MY WAY. " AND I FOUND HER A SINCERE WOMAN, AS FAR AS I CAN EXPERIENCE.

A: First, there are sincere people in every religion, but groping in the dark. So if you meet in the Catholic Church sincere seekers, it is your duty to bring them out of the Catholic Church, because there they are not going to find what they are seeking. A seeker cannot seek if he is surrounded by dogma, by a certain attitude about reality -- and that too, two thousand years old, out of date, out of existence. Those Catholic Churches are just graveyards. Those people may be seekers and sincere. Tell them, "You are searching in a graveyard. Come where life is. Come where dance is. Come where the fresh wind is blowing. In this stale, closed Catholic Church, you are going to get suffocated and die, you are not going to find it."

Because they are sincere, that's why you have to be sincere with them too. They need respect -- but not only respect; they also need a shock so that they can wake up and come out of the boundaries of Catholicism, or Protestantism or Hinduism or Mohammedanism -- that doesn't matter. My work here is to bring everybody out of his prison; what the name of the prison is does not matter.

The person who wants to know the truth has to be completely deprogrammed. He should not have any belief, he should not have any religion, he should not have any nation, he should not have any race, he should be just a simple human being. From there, with that innocence, like a child, he has to start.

Q: IT SEEMS, BHAGWAN, WHEN YOU ARE AN OUTSIDER -- WHEN YOU ARE A COMPLETE OUTSIDER -- IT SEEMS THAT RAJNEESHISM ALSO IS A PRISON. I WENT INTO IT A LITTLE BIT AND I SEE THAT THIS IS NOT THE CASE. BUT HOW CAN YOU MAKE CLEAR TO OTHER PEOPLE THAT THIS IS IN FACT AN ANTI-CHURCH?

A: Just wait, let me first finish your question completely. I cannot leave Mother Teresa alone. So whenever Mother Teresa comes in, please don't change the subject.

You say she is a beautiful woman. I have no disagreement about it. But what she said to you is not beautiful -- that you follow your path, I follow my path. This is not compassion. If I see you following on a wrong path I will try every effort to obstruct you from going there, and I will try to convince you that what you are doing is wrong. That is compassion.

And all the paths are not right. There are three hundred religions in the world. All three hundred religions are not right. This is nice to say that you follow your path, I follow my path and everybody follows his path, but that means Mother Teresa does not know at all what is right. This can be said only by an ignorant person. If I know what is right, I also know what is wrong, and I will make every effort to prevent you if you move on the wrong path. To me that will be compassion. You got influenced by the old woman....

Q: I THINK SO, A BIT....

A:... But things are not as they appear. She goes on converting orphans into the Catholic Church. The orphan may be a Mohammedan, may be a Hindu, may be a Jaina, may be a Buddhist. She does not think those orphans should follow their path. Just because she has been feeding them, she has purchased them for the Catholic Church. She wants more and more orphans, she wants more and more poverty, because without poverty and without orphans, the number of Catholics cannot increase.

It is power politics, the politics of numbers. And when you look deep down into the whole thing, you will not say that she is a beautiful woman. She is a politician and her answer was diplomatic. It consoled you, that you go on your path, I go on my path. It gave you certain strength, but that strength is going to be given to your ego. I cannot say, "You go on your path." You don't know what your path is, where you are going. I know there is only one path, there are not many paths.

So the man of compassion will try in every way to persuade you, to convince you; rationally he will make the effort. And if there is a possibility of an open heart, he will make a heart to heart contact too. When somebody is drowning and you are standing on the bank of the river, you don't say, "You go on your path and I am going on my path." Do you think that is beautiful? You have to jump and save that man who is drowning.

And now Catholics need to be saved. Jesus started saving people, although he could not save himself; and for two thousand years these people are trying to save people. They have not been able to save anybody. On the contrary, they have been fighting crusades, burning people alive. These are the saviors of man. And if Mother Teresa has any intelligence left -- I suspect not, but if she has any intelligence left, the first thing would be to get out of the Catholic Church.

Q: AND BECOME A SANNYASIN....

A: Certainly. Because I can say on my own authority that I can save her. She cannot say on her own authority anything. She can quote the dead Bible, she can quote Jesus Christ. I am not quoting anybody. I am saying it myself.

Q: AND YOUR PATH IS OBJECTIVE?

A: Absolutely objective.

Q:AND ANYBODY WHO FOLLOWS YOUR PATH FINDS THIS TRUTH?

A: Certainly.

Q: MAY I PASS TO ANOTHER QUESTION?

A: Is Mother Teresa finished...? Pass on.

Q: READING YOUR DISCOURSES, BHAGWAN, ONE MEETS WITH CONTRADICTIONS CONSTANTLY. I DID NOT STUDY ALL YOUR BOOKS OF COURSE, BUT BASING MYSELF ON THE ONES I DID READ, I THINK THERE ARE NOT MANY STATEMENTS OF YOURS WHICH ARE NOT COUNTERED BY OTHER STATMENTS. AM I RIGHT THAT YOU CONSTANTLY UNDERMINE YOUR OWN TEACHINGS? WHAT IS THE UNCHANGING NUCLEUS IN YOUR VISION?

A: You are right. I am a man of contradictions; and my understanding is that only idiots are consistent. The higher your intelligence, the more contradictions will be in your life, because you are constantly growing, expanding. Every day new facts arise in your consciousness, and then the question arises to go with the reality that has been revealed today or just to remain consistent with your past, dead statements.
I am not such a coward as your philosophers and theologians are. I don't bother about anything that I have said, ever. My whole concern is this moment. If it contradicts my whole life, it is perfectly okay, there is no harm, it is good. And I am not saying that I will remain tomorrow with the same statement. Tomorrow will bring its own light, tomorrow will bring its own experience, and only tomorrow will decide what statement I am going to make.

Q: BUT IS THERE AN UNCHANGEABLE NUCLEUS, THEN, IN YOUR VISION?

A: Yes, my consciousness, my awareness. But that you cannot find in the books. That you can find only in yourself.
I am absolutely alert. Whatsoever I am saying, I am not saying according to some dogma, according to my own philosophy up to this moment. No, I am simply responding to this moment, to you. And I don't care about anything else for the moment. I am a man who lives moment to moment. And whatsoever happens in the moment, I am available to it.

Q: AM I WRONG WHEN I SAY, WHEN I TRY TO DESCRIBE YOUR NUCLEUS, THE NUCLEUS IN YOUR VISION, AS CELEBRATING LIFE?

A: No, that is just a by-product. The nucleus is consciousness, absolute consciousness. Out of it many things will be there: celebration of life, love, laughter. Out of it so many branches and so many flowers... but the nucleus remains consciousness. And that I have never contradicted in my whole life. I cannot, because whatsoever I have said, I have said with full consciousness. But that was in that moment.
For example, I may fall in love with a woman, and in that moment I may say to the woman that I will love her forever. And I am not cheating, I am not deceiving; that's my response in that moment, and I am absolutely clear about it. But that does not mean that tomorrow I will not change. I am not saying that I will never change; I am simply stating my response to the moment. The next moment nobody knows what will happen, and the next moment I will not find myself chained by my own past.
So my approach is to go on dying to the past moment continuously so that you can be alive in the new moment that is coming. Death to the past, life to the present. And the future is going to come to you as present, never as past.

Q: THAT MEANS, I THINK, TRY TO LIVE WITHOUT TRADITION.

A: Certainly.

Q: AND NOW MY QUESTION IS: THIS IDEA THAT YOU TRIED TO DESCRIBE OF LIVING OUT OF THE FULLNESS OF YOUR CONSCIOUSNESS AND IN THIS MOMENT, HERE AND NOW -- IS THIS IDEA NOT ALSO A PRODUCT OF TRADITION?

A: No, because nobody has said it before. No tradition exists around this idea. Buddha was very consistent. Forty-two years' teaching... you cannot find a single contradiction. In Buddha, Mohammed, you cannot find any contradiction. In Jesus you cannot find any contradiction either. These people lived according to a certain dogma. They were prisoners.
I am a free bird with no cage around me. And I want to break all the cages of everybody, so the whole sky is yours. Sometimes it is sunrise, sometimes it is sunset. Sometimes it is day and sometimes it is night. Things go on changing in existence, and a man of consciousness remains in harmony with existence, with the continuous flux of existence. My statements in the past are as dead as I am to the past.

Q: BUT WE ARE ALL STILL READING THE BOOKS YOU SPOKE IN THE PAST. IS THAT SENSELESS THEN?

A: It is significant. But don't trust those books against my present. Perhaps reading them you may be able to understand what I am saying now. All those contradictions and all those books will help you to understand my present state and my present statement about existence. That is their only use. If you can understand it without them, burn them. There is no need of all those books.
I have never read any of my books, and I am not ever going to look at them -- because past is past, gone is gone, and I don't live in a graveyard. Only dead people can be consistent, because they cannot contradict anymore. I am alive, and I am going to be alive to the very last breath of my life. My last breath will also be a statement, perhaps contradicting all that I have done and said before, so wait.

Q: SO, IT WOULD BE POSSIBLE THAT AT THE END YOU WOULD SAY, THE VERY NOTION OF ENLIGHTENMENT -- FORGET IT!

A: I can. I can say anything, I am so free. Don't you see the beauty of freedom? You can say anything, you can live anything. There is no bondage on me. At the last moment I can say, "All this business of enlightenment is simply bullshit. Forget all about it" -- and perhaps a few people may get enlightened only when I say that.
Nobody can make a dogma out of me; nobody can be a pope after me, because he will be in so much trouble. Nobody can be a successor to me because he will not be able to manage all the contradictions, thousands of contradictions.

Q: SO THE ONLY NUCLEUS IN YOUR VISION IS BHAGWAN HIMSELF

A: Certainly. I am the center of my circus and when I am gone, who bothers what happens to the circus?

Q: YOU SAID JUST A MOMENT AGO, "I WANT TO SHOCK PEOPLE AWAKE." AND I HAVE THE FEELING THAT VERY OFTEN YOU SHOCK WITH SUCH A HEAVINESS THAT YOU PROVOKE A LOT OF AGGRESSION AGAINST YOURSELF, AGAINST YOUR SANNYASINS. IS THIS PRICE WORTHWHILE?

A: It is absolutely necessary -- no question of its worthwhileness. I want their hostility, I want their aggressiveness, because their hostility and their aggressiveness is going to work in two ways. If my sannyasins are simply ignored, nobody takes any offense, that simply means I have nothing to offer to the world, no contribution, nothing new. It can be ignored. The only thing that I

hate is to be ignored. Be aggressive -- that I accept, because at least a certain relationship has started happening between me and the person who is aggressive.
Hostility is emotional and the beauty of the whole game is that the hostile person is burning himself. I am not hostile; I have simply triggered something in him and he is burning himself.
And nobody can remain hostile for long. It is a sickness. He has to find some way out of it. Either he has to forget all about me -- which is impossible because I have hurt him so deeply.... Neither can he forgive me nor forget me -- the only possible way is to come close to me and try to understand what I am doing. "Is it really right for me to be hostile to these people? Is it right for me to be so full of hate with these people?" And anybody who comes closer is going to change. This has been happening every day.
In Ahmedabad a man came and fell at my feet. I said, "What is the matter?" He was crying. He pulled out a big knife and he said, "I had come to kill you because what I have heard about you, that you are destroying the whole tradition of Hinduism, made me so angry, but when I heard you something suddenly changed in me. I could see that you are not interested in destroying any tradition. You are simply interested in helping people to find the truth, and if something has to be demolished on the way, removed from the way so the person can reach to the truth, you are doing that." And he wanted to be initiated into sannyas.
Hate can very easily turn into love, just as love can turn into hate. They are two sides of the same coin.
So it is with full awareness that I am continuously creating enemies around the world. I don't want anybody to go on sleeping without being disturbed. Perhaps a few of them may wake up. Most of them will take a turn, pull over their blanket and go to sleep again, but that is not my responsibility. If out of a hundred even one person wakes up and sees what has happened, that my hit over his head was not against him but was against his sleep, he will be grateful to me. Those who are hostile to me can be grateful to me if they wake up. If they don't wake up, they are already asleep, let them sleep.
And what harm can anybody do to me? At the most they can kill me -- that is nothing, because I have known everything that can be known and I have experienced everything that can be experienced. Now I am almost living a posthumous life. As far as I am concerned, I have come to the point beyond which there is nothing. And I am so.blissful that if somebody wants to assassinate me I don't see any harm in it.
People are afraid of death because they have not lived yet and death is coming closer. I have lived, I have tasted the nectar of life. Now there is no problem for me, so I can create as much hostility as possible in the hope that perhaps a few, out of thousands, may wake up. And they are waking up.

Q: WOULD YOU DESCRIBE WHAT IS ORDINARILY UNDERSTOOD AS "MENTAL HEALTH" IN SOCIETY... WOULD YOU DESCRIBE THIS AS SLEEP?

A: The society that exists today is retarded. Its mental age is below thirteen. It is worse than asleep. What do you expect of a seventy-year-old man, carrying a small intelligence of a thirteen-year-old boy? The distance between his intelligence and his life is so big.

This is sleep. The awakened person moves together almost as an organic unity. With his physical age, his mental age goes on growing. With his mental age, his spiritual awareness goes on growing. If a person really goes on growing simultaneously on all levels of life, then only you have a perfect Master someday. Otherwise, the so-called masters are masters just for those retarded people; the so-called saints, saints only for the retarded. And nobody wants -- your politicians, your priests -- nobody wants man to be intelligent because it is against their vested interests.

An intelligent man cannot be Catholic, an intelligent man cannot believe in the boundaries of nations, an intelligent man cannot conceive that white and black colors make any difference. An intelligent man will have a totally different vision of life.

These vested interests cannot allow this earth to become awake. Before it wakes up, they are ready with all their nuclear weapons to destroy it. It is such a calamity. To me, the destruction of life is not the real problem. The real problem is that man is now at a point where thousands of people can become enlightened, and the politicians are preparing to destroy this whole living beautiful earth.

Q: YOU MEAN WITHIN THE COMMUNITY OF SANNYASINS, THESE THOUSANDS OF PEOPLE WHO CAN BE ENLIGHTENED?

A: There are many who are not even sannyasins... they can be awakened. Man has gained a certain maturity.... Sannyasins certainly, but there are many who are potential sannyasins, like you; I can see you in the orange robe any day. It all depends on your courage. But I can see a man of intelligence in front of me, who can understand, and he would like to have his consciousness blossom to its fullest.

Q: YES, BHAGWAN, BUT IT WOULD BE, FOR ME, A BLIND GAMBLE.

A: Every search is a blind gamble. Those who are afraid of blind gambles remain stuck and starve, they never grow. One has to take the risk. One has to stake everything. And as far as I have known, anybody who has taken the risk has never been a loser.

I don't play the game of being a loser in any way. And if I tell my people to stake everything, I can say it with certainty, categorically, because I know that if they can stake and risk, they will be reborn.
There is an old story. A man was traveling and got lost in the night, in the mountains. He was really very much afraid, alone. The place was unknown, the road was lost, there was no light. As far as he could see, there was no village, no lamp. But still he tried to find his way, and then he slipped from a rock. Holding the roots of a tree, he was hanging.
The night was becoming colder and colder and he knew that soon he would not be able to keep a grip on the roots; the hands were becoming frozen. His death was near. He looked, and by the side, there was abysmal darkness. He knew there was a big valley by the side of the mountain and there was no chance of surviving.
Finally, his hands started slipping. There was no way to prevent it. But he was in for a great surprise. When the hands slipped and he thought, "This is my last moment," and he prayed to his god in whom he believed, the roots slipped out of his hand and he was standing on the ground. There was nothing, and the whole night he had suffered. And it was getting to be sunrise and he could see that this was strange, he was standing on the road!
Risk is there, but I know the path. I know that if you are ready to lose your grip, you will be immediately on the clear ground, on the way; you are not going to lose anything. This is the whole function of the Master. The function of the Master is not to give you beliefs, is not to give you philosophy. His function is to give you confidence in yourself, to make you a gambler from a businessman.

Q: BHAGWAN, WHEN I GET AROUND YOUR SANNYASINS -- I GET ALONG VERY WELL WITH THEM, IT'S PLEASANT TO BE WITH THEM -- BUT I VERY OFTEN FEEL THAT THEY FOLLOW YOU BLINDLY, AND I DON'T KNOW IF I AM WRONG OR RIGHT BUT I VERY OFTEN GET THIS FEELING. FOR EXAMPLE, YOU SAID THE OTHER DAY IT'S A GOOD IDEA TO PRODUCE TEST-TUBE BABIES. NOW I'M SURE, IN SOME DAYS, ALL YOUR SANNYASINS KNOW THIS IDEA OF YOURS AND THEY AGREE WITH YOU. NOW, IN TWO WEEKS YOU SAY SOMETHING OPPOSITE -- ALL YOUR SANNYASINS AGREE WITH YOU.

A: That means they are also growing with me. That does not make any problem.

Q: BUT WHERE IS THEN THE DOUBT AND THE RESPONSIBILITY FOR YOURSELF? I CANNOT, EVEN IF I WOULD LOVE YOU DEEPLY, I COULD NOT FOLLOW YOUR OPINIONS EVERY DAY. EVERY DAY YOU CHANGE YOUR OPINIONS, DON'T YOU?

A: That means you are not growing with me, you are lagging far behind. My sannyasins are my fellow travelers. Sometimes I walk fast, they have to walk fast. Sometimes I dance, they have to dance. Sometimes I just relax and they have to relax. They are just my fellow travelers. There is no philosophy, no belief, no faith. They are love, pure love towards me, just the way I am pure love towards them. It is a love affair.

Q: BUT YOU CANNOT DECIDE TO HAVE A LOVE AFFAIR.

A: Nobody decides. I am simply love. I never fall in love. I am in it, I am it. Others go on falling in love with me. But they don't lose anything; the moment they fall in love with me, they have discovered their life's juiciest moment. They could not have even dreamed about it. Your question is very relevant.
In the beginning, a sannyasin is baffled, confused that I said one thing yesterday and I am saying another thing today. Now what am I supposed to do? In the beginning, it happens to every sannyasin. Soon he starts understanding that what I say is not the point. Somewhere between my statements there is a gap. Between my words there is a gap. Between my lines there is a gap. That is my real statement.
Soon they start learning it, then they don't care what I said yesterday and what I said today. They don't compare. The gap is the same, the words have changed. The lines are different but between the lines.... The moment they start seeing me between the lines, between the statements, all their trouble disappears. And it is not belief

Q: THERE IS OBJECTIVITY BETWEEN THOSE LINES?

A: Yes

Q: MAY I ASK QUITE ANOTHER QUESTION? ALL OVER THE WORLD, AND IN THE NETHERLANDS ALSO, WE ARE VERY CONCERNED WITH YOUR ROLLS ROYCES, OF COURSE, AND I DECIDED I HAVE TO ASK A QUESTION ABOUT THIS.

A: You ask anything you want.

Q: SO I WOULD LIKE TO EXPLAIN THAT I, MYSELF, AM THE HAPPY OWNER OF A CAR OF THE JAPANESE MAKE, TOYOTA COROLLA. NOW, I WOULD RATHER HAVE TWO OF THEM, SO I WOULD HAVE ONE IN RESERVE BUT I COULDN'T IMAGINE WHAT TO DO WITH THREE TOYOTAS. YOU HAVE, IF I AM RIGHT, SEVENTY-FIVE ROLLS ROYCES AT YOUR DISPOSAL. THEY'RE NOT....

A: You're not right. One has just arrived -- and I have no problem. There are ninety Rolls Royces, and I have no problem; and you are having problems, even with three? Poor guy! And that, too, Toyotas, a third-rate car... just a toy. And just with three you are....
And I am soon going to have 365, and still there will be no problem. I don't see any problem. I never go to the garage. I don't even know what car they are going to give me today. My people are there and they are intelligent enough, they can take care of anything. If they can take care of ninety Rolls Royces, they will be able to take care of 365. This is their problem, not mine. And I don't think they are troubled either... they look so happy. A new car arrives and they are rejoicing.
There is no problem in having two or three cars. The problem is somewhere else which, out of respect, you are not asking me.

Q: WHERE IS THE PROBLEM?

A: Yes. It is not the number. Your question is not Rolls Royces but Ethiopia, India, poor countries, poor people around the world. I am making it clear to you, because I can see it is there within you. A Rolls Royce is just to bring the question out, but you love me so you cannot ask directly. You are going around about... there is no need.

Q: MAY I PHRASE THIS QUESTION?

A: That's what I was doing. You can phrase.... I was phrasing your question.

Q: MY QUESTION, WHICH I HAD WRITTEN DOWN FOR THIS, IS WHY, IN YOUR VISION, IT IS IMPOSSIBLE TO WORK ON YOUR OWN PERSONAL GROWTH AND AT THE SAME TIME HELP YOUR NEIGHBOR? WHY IS IT IMPOSSIBLE TO BE A SANNYASIN AND AT THE SAME TIME HELP ETHIOPIA?

A: Nobody is preventing anybody. I am not saying to my sannyasins, "Don't help the neighbor." I am telling them, "Help them!" And the only way to help them is to hit them. They are asleep, they have to be awakened first. Any other help will be coming later on. Set their houses on fire so they have to wake up and escape out, then we will catch hold of them.
I'm not preventing my people from helping, but again the same problem. Because you love me, you cannot say it directly -- I have to phrase it for you.

Q: PLEASE DO.

A: You want that the poor should be given bread, butter, clothes, shelter, that there are sick people who need hospitals, that there are beggars in the world... something has to be done for them, and this should be my sannyasins' responsibility.

I don't consider it my sannyasins' responsibility. If there are poor people in the world, the priests and the politicians, and the scientists and the educationalists all are guilty of it. They have created a world which has to be poor and they exploit the poverty in many ways. For example, this beautiful woman, Mother Teresa. I don't think her face looks beautiful, but tastes differ. Your taste is a little strange. Would you like to get married to her? -- then you will know how beautiful she is.

These people who have been serving the poor, catering to the poor, are helping the poor to remain poor. Otherwise, the poor either would have died out of poverty or would have gone through a great revolution and changed the whole society. Only two things are possible if no help is given to them. I want no help to be given to these people; they should take their own responsibility. If they are poor and they don't want to go through a revolution, change the whole structure of the society, destroy the whole status quo, throw these governments away... and if you cannot do that, then at least you can die. Don't unnecessarily be a nuisance around.

For example, in Ethiopia where thousands of people are dying every day, the priests and the bishops and the popes and politicians are all just sympathy for Ethiopia. And they are trying to send food, medicine, but their whole effort is very hypocritical. On the one hand they want to save the poor in Ethiopia, on the other hand they are piling up nuclear weapons. For whom? They are not lifeloving people, they are showing sympathy to Ethiopia just as part of diplomacy. It has nothing to do with service to humanity, because their small support that they are sending is not going to help, it has not helped. It is almost like dropping a teaspoon full of sugar in the ocean to make it sweet. Great responsibility you are fulfilling: you destroyed one cup of tea!

I am not in favor of sending any help to Ethiopia. Only one thing is possible: if these big dodos around the world, presidents and prime ministers and kings and queens, if they are really concerned with Ethiopia, then there are two alternatives for them. Stop piling up weapons and divert the whole money and energy towards Ethiopia, and Ethiopia will be saved today.

Or, if you cannot do that, then at least do one thing: send your medical people to inject these people with something that takes them into eternal sleep. It is better to die than to starve for ninety days and then die. It is compassionate. And there is no harm if there is no Ethiopia... what harm?

Q: SO, IF I UNDERSTAND YOU WELL, BHAGWAN, YOU SAY THAT THE MISERY IN ETHIOPIA IS VERY REAL.

A: Mm hmm.

Q:... AND THIS REMINDS ME OF ONE OF YOUR DISCOURSES IN WHICH YOU SAID, "YOUR MISERY IS BOGUS." AND THIS AT THE TIME MADE RATHER AN IMPRESSION ON ME, AND I BEGAN TO SUSPECT THAT MY PERSONAL MISERY IS BOGUS INDEED.

A: Mm hmm.

Q: BUT THEN I WONDERED, IS THE MISERY OF THIS ETHIOPIAN MOTHER, SEEING HER CHILD DYING OF STARVATION, BOGUS ALSO?

A: It is a totally different context. When I said your misery is your responsibility, I meant your anxieties, your anguishes, your expectations, your frustrations, your aspirations, your ambitions which are not going to be fulfilled. I meant your mental anguish. That statement was in a totally different context.
But in Ethiopia, it is not that the mother is imagining that her child is dying. He is really dying. The child is not imagining that the mother is dying; the mother is really dying and soon she will be dead.
And fortunately in Ethiopia there are not Christian Scientists. There has been a movement in America of Christian Science. Christian Science has as one of its fundamentals that whatsoever you think becomes sooner or later a reality. Thoughts are the beginning of a certain reality.
I have heard the story that a young boy met an old Christian Scientist lady. The lady asked the boy, "I have not seen your father for many days. Is he not coming to the meetings of our group?" The boy said,"He's sick. He's in his bed." The old woman said, "Nonsense. This is just mind. You just tell your father that he is only thinking he is sick:'Just think you are healthy. Think positively that you are healthy. Get out of your bed, be positive.' Don't fall into negativity -- this is our whole philosophy: positive thinking."
After three or four days, the boy meets the old woman again in the market and the old woman says, "What happened? Did you manage to convey the message to your father?" He said, "Now my father thinks he's dead. And not only my father -- everybody thinks he is no more in the house, he is in his grave!"
The misery in Ethiopia is real, objectively real, and these sympathies are not going to help. They are simply keeping people starving, dying. And it is better to die instantly rather than to wait and suffer all kinds of torture that this hungry man is bound to suffer.
And this is a thing to be understood, that a normally healthy man can live without food for ninety days, then he will die. Now, making these people suffer for ninety days does not seem to be compassionate. To me it is more compassionate that they are given injections so they go into eternal sleep. And

anyway the soul does not die, so what is the problem? All these religions believe that the soul does not die, so what is the problem?
Communists believe that when you die, everything dies. Then, too, there is no problem. I don't see a problem from any side. And if Ethiopia is not there, who bothers? What has Ethiopia contributed to the world?

Q: DO I UNDERSTAND YOU CORRECTLY, THAT YOU SAY NOBODY SHOULD DO ANYTHING ABOUT ETHIOPIA?

A: I am saying either do -- that means stop piling nuclear weapons, that is my first alternative. If you are really sympathetic towards dying people, then why are you creating weapons for death? That is simple hypocrisy. Stop! If you are really concerned with dying people, then whatsoever is happening in Ethiopia is nothing to what has happened in Hiroshima and Nagasaki.
Those few moments, the people of Hiroshima and Nagasaki have suffered as much as one can suffer in the Christian hell. And you have now seven hundred times more nuclear weapons than there were available at the time of Hiroshima and Nagasaki. And they go on piling up.
On the one hand, seventy-five percent of the income of every country goes to war; and on the other hand, these politicians really have beautiful masks. And they must be having many because they have to change again and again. When Ethiopia is there and people are dying, you are so sympathetic and you want to save Ethiopia.... These two things don't go together, they are inconsistent.
So my first alternative is that the nations should stop creating more war, and the poverty not only from Ethiopia but from the whole world will disappear today. The poverty is there because our whole energy is involved with war, with the preparation for war.
And if you cannot do it, then at least don't be a hypocrite. Be direct and say, "Let Ethiopia die. We don't care. We are going to make more nuclear weapons and we are going to have a third world war, and what does it matter?" The whole world is going to end in the third world war. Ethiopia will be saved from nuclear weapons, they will die before that. That's perfectly good. Let them die, but don't be a hypocrite.

Q: BHAGWAN, IF PRESIDENT REAGAN WOULD DECIDE TO ASK YOU TO BE HIS ADVISOR, WHAT WOULD YOU ADVISE HIM IN REGARD TO THESE NUCLEAR ARMS?

A: Just tell your scientists to find some creative use for all these weapons, because you cannot throw them into the Pacific; sooner or later they will explode just by accident. You cannot throw them into the Atlantic, you cannot throw them and bury them under the earth. Anytime, anything can trigger them and they can explode your own country or somebody else's. But energy is neutral,

energy is never decisive whether it can destroy or it can create. It depends on the direction that the human mind gives it.

If the human mind can create nuclear weapons to destroy, it can change nuclear power into construction. It can create more electricity, it can give better rains, it can give better earth. It can do miracles.
So much energy is piled up in these two nations, and smaller piles in smaller nations, that if they all simply think once, "What are we doing? Our scientists should be together...."
My advice is that the scientists should not be under any national regime. There should be a world academy of scientists who can decide how to convert nuclear weapons and energy into positive things. It is possible.

Q: BUT PRACTICALLY, SHOULD THE UNITED STATES DISARM?

A: I am not saying disarm. Changing nuclear weapons into creativity does not mean disarm; because you have many more arms than just the nuclear weapons. You could fight the first world war without weapons, you could fight the second world war -- you had already won before you threw the atom bomb on Hiroshima and Nagasaki. Germany had already surrendered and Japan was on the verge of surrendering.
Atomic and nuclear weapons should be completely converted to serve humanity. And go back before the first world war: those bombs and those airplanes are good. Whenever you feel an itch to fight, fight!
Up to the first world war I allow; then fight. It is perfectly good once in a while, good exercise. But I am not ready to accept the third world war. Every effort should be made to prevent it -- and this is a beautiful chance.
Ethiopia, India and other countries of the third world are on the verge; any moment there will be more Ethiopias. It is good we start transforming that energy into something positive and creative that can help these people who are dying.
If you cannot do it -- remember my condition -- if you cannot do it, then don't unnecessarily try to pretend that you are Christians and Catholics and Protestants, and you are sending money and you are sending blankets, and you are sending clothes and food. It is not going to help, it has never helped before. This has been happening again and again through history. Just be very clear and send medical teams so all Ethiopians in one night go into eternal sleep. At least they will not be hungry tomorrow morning.

Q: YES.

A: And you will be at ease, Ethiopia will not be a troublesome problem for you. So I am giving two alternatives. And remember my first priority is to stop

nuclear weapons piling up more and more, and divert the whole money that you are wasting on nuclear weapons.
My second alternative is: if that is not possible, then just simply accept the fact that we cannot save Ethiopia, but we can at least help them to die peacefully. We cannot help them to live peacefully, at least we can help them to die peacefully. And that will be really great compassion on the part of politicians. Rather than leaving them starving, dying, getting tortured by hunger.... For four years there have been no rains. Water has become almost impossible to get. Not only food is not available, water is not available.
And it is only in one country right now, but soon India will be joining it, because half of the Indian continent is starving. And you will be surprised to know that the Indian prime minister is selling wheat to other countries. Fifty percent of his own nation is starving and the wheat is being sold because he wants a nuclear plant in India. Can you see the stupidity of this whole thing?

Q: MAY I CHANGE TO A SUBJECT WITH A BIT MORE FUN?

A: You can change.

Q: IN THE PRESS CONFERENCE, YOU DESCRIBED YOUR COMMUNE AS A CIRCUS AND YOURSELF AS A GREAT SHOWMAN, THE GREATEST IN THE WORLD. WERE YOU MOCKING YOURSELF AND YOUR COMMUNE? WHY DID YOU SAY IT?

A: Again, you are bringing the past here. Forget all about that nonsense. I am a showman? And my people a circus? I contradict it completely.

Q: HOW WOULD YOU DESCRIBE IT NOW?

A: Yes... there is no circus here. This is the only place where a circus is not happening.

Q: AND YOU ARE A SERIOUS TEACHER?

A: I am a very non-serious teacher! And I have already forgotten about what news conference you are talking! I just respond to you. Why drag the dead unnecessarily out of their graves? Let them sleep silently. You are alive, I am alive, we can have an existential encounter.
And I see the potentiality in you, that's why I am saying that. I would not have said it to another person. I have been interviewed every night, every evening -- and now this is going to be continuous -- but I would not have said that to another journalist. I don't see you just as a journalist, I see you more as a seeker. I see you more as a human being. And I see your heart throbbing with me, in tune

with me, that's why I am saying it. Otherwise, I can go on answering about the past, anything that comes to my mind, there is no problem about it.
I love jokes. And to joke on other people's account is not very good, not nice. So, once in a while, I joke upon myself, upon my people. And it was simply a joke, and those idiotic newspaper journalists thought it is something serious. Do you think a showman will sit here in the desert? Is this the place for a showman? Then I would have chosen Hollywood. On the contrary, I have pulled all my Hollywood people here.
In this desert, 126 square miles, I am sitting the whole day in my room. I only come out twice: in the morning to talk with the sannyasins, in the evening to talk with any interviewer. What kind of a showman do you think I am? This is not the way of being a showman.
The showman has to be always running -- like Mother Teresa. She is in New York, she is in Chicago, she is in Washington, she is receiving a Nobel prize in Norway, she is in India, Calcutta. I wonder when she gets the time to serve the poor people. All the time she is moving around the world, becoming a bigger and bigger celebrity. The more she is becoming senile, the bigger a celebrity she is becoming. And when does she serve the poor people? She is inaugurating colleges, schools, hospitals....
I don't have any time for showmanship. I will tell you my routine and you will see: from where can I get the time? Six o'clock in the morning, I wake up. That too, my caretaker, Vivek, has to wake me up, otherwise I will not wake up. Who cares to wake up again? I have been waking for half a century again and again. It is enough.
But she wakes me up, gives me a cup of tea. Just to be respectful to her, I drink the tea. My tea is not much, it is just water and tea leaves. No sugar, no milk. If that kind of tea is served in heaven, all the saints will start moving towards hell.
Then -- I have always loved water, from my very childhood -- one and a half hours in the morning I am in my bathroom, enjoying the bathtub, the shower; and the same in the evening, one and a half hours again.
After my bath, immediately I have to get into the car and move to the Mandir where my people are waiting. Back to my place, it is lunchtime. I take my lunch at eleven, and go to sleep again, which I have done most of my life. I had to miss my classes when I was a student, and my teachers allowed it because if they did not allow, then I used to sleep in the class. I said, "There is no way... I have to sleep these two hours."
When I was a professor, I was sleeping two hours and I had told the vice-chancellor that during these two hours no classes should be given to me; otherwise I would be sleeping there.
At two o'clock I wake up, and for one hour I go for a ride. That is the only time I come in contact with the Rolls Royces. I love driving, and I have certainly one of the most beautiful roads, because it is made by my sannyasins only for me. There

is no traffic, so I need not bother whether I am driving on the right or on the left. The whole road belongs to me. One hour there and back home.
One and a half hours I simply sit silently in my chair doing nothing and let the grass grow by itself Then my bath.
After the bath, I take my supper; and after the supper, I am here. I will be back there nearabout nine, nine-thirty. Then comes my personal secretary -- with letters from all over the world; news cuttings about me from all over the world, anything that the personal secretary feels I need to know -- because I don't read. Since five years I have stopped reading anything: books, newspapers, magazines, anything.
The clippings that my personal secretary brings she has to read; I simply listen. Nearabout eleven, I go to bed again. Now, where will I find the time to be a showman? Yes, you can look at my dress and think it looks like the dress of a showman. It is not, it is the love of my people. I am dressing for them. They make beautiful dresses, they enjoy making them for me. I cannot refuse them. And to whom am I going to show? I never go out of this place.
You see my watch? I have hundreds. My people are really intelligent people -- no Master in the whole history can claim such an intelligent group. Now, this is made by my sannyasins. It has already defeated Piaget -- and it is made of real stones, not diamonds.

Q: REAL STONES?

A: Real stones, not diamonds. So don't carry the idea that it is a fake watch. Real stones are as real as real diamonds, there is no question of its being fake.
I just heard on television one stupid journalist saying that I have been using fake watches. I cannot understand: so authentic stones, and you call it a fake watch? Its time is absolutely perfect; in a year only one second will be the difference, and that is the best any watch can do. It is as beautiful as any diamond. The same watch from Piaget is a half million dollars, just because of an idiotic idea that diamonds have some value. This watch costs nothing, but I will not sell it even for ten million dollars because it is invaluable. It is made with such great love that it is not a saleable thing. Love cannot be sold. But to whom am I going to show the watch? My people know my dresses, my people know my watches, my people know me. I don't mix with anybody else, I don't go anywhere else. As far as I am concerned, the third world war has happened, and only Rajneeshpuram is saved. There is nowhere else to go.
I was simply joking. And my people are working hard, twelve hours, fourteen hours a day, transforming a desert into an oasis -- and do you think these people constitute a circus?
You will not find anywhere in the world such hardworking people, and they are not being paid, because we don't believe in any way inside the commune that money should be used. There is no need. We fulfill our needs, our food, our

clothes, everything, so nobody needs any money. Whatsoever he needs, he can get.
These people are working so hard, and for what? To entertain somebody? These people are creative people. They love me and now they want to materialize my vision into reality. And they are ready to do anything for it. In festival times, they are working fourteen, sixteen hours a day with no complaint. Nobody is telling them or forcing them.

Q: YOU'RE NOT SUGGESTING THEM?

A: No. Not at all. I never talk to them about these things. I never talk about the commune, about any mundane things. They are intelligent enough that they can manage themselves. And they are doing so well that it cannot be improved.

Q: IT WAS THEIR IDEA, IT WAS NOT YOUR IDEA, THIS COMMUNE?

A: It is my vision, and their love for my vision, but the idea to materialize it is theirs. I am a dreamer: I can give you beautiful dreams, and I give for free -- I don't charge for them. But then if you get caught up in the dream and you start trying to materialize it, that is your responsibility. I simply watch from the outside.
It is not a circus. The Vatican may be a circus, and with Pope the Polack it is bound to be a circus. Nothing more can be expected of this thick head. I was just joking, laughing. And our people were there in the press conference and they enjoyed. You should listen to the video of the press conference, then you will see how much our people enjoyed and how silly the journalists looked. They could not manage to ask any significant question.
But you need not bother about those people. You have a certain acquaintance with me, so I know these answers will be enough for you. If you want to add something, you can add -- I give you the authority. I love you and I trust you. I know you cannot do anything that will be against me.
Okay?

Q: THANK YOU.

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #18
Chapter title: It Is Possible
4 August 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This discourse is published in the book: The Last Testament, Volume 1, as Chapter 29.]
Mike Wolfe
KBND RADIO
BEND
OREGON

Q: BHAGWAN, MY NAME IS MIKE WOLFE. I'VE BEEN IN THE RADIO AND TELEVISION BUSINESS -- IN WASHINGTON D.C., DENVER, COLORADO -- SO I'VE TRAVELED A BIT AND GOT TIRED OF THE BIG CITIES AND CAME TO CENTRAL OREGON. ONE OF THE THINGS THAT I THINK IS INTERESTING TO ME, AND WILL ALWAYS MAKE ME REMEMBER YOU, IS THAT I HAVE A SIX-AND-A-HALF-YEAR OLD SON WHO WAS ALSO BORN ON DECEMBER 11TH. SO I WILL ALWAYS REMEMBER BHAGWAN'S BIRTHDAY.

A: That's great!

Q: I DON'T BELIEVE IT WAS THE SAME YEAR, HOWEVER.
THE HOSPITALITY, I MUST SAY, IN THE BEGINNING HERE THAT WE HAVE RECEIVED.... AND FOR THOSE WHO ARE LISTENING, THERE IS OF COURSE CONTROVERSY, MAYBE MISREPRESENTED CONTROVERSY, THAT RAJNEESHPURAM IS AN ARMED CAMP. I HAVE NOT SEEN THAT; THAT THE PEOPLE ARE COLD AND DISINTERESTED IN THOSE OF US WHO LIVE OUTSIDE -- AND I HAVE NOT SEEN THAT. AND I WOULD SAY TO YOU THAT I HAVE NOT FELT IN MANY ROOMS IN MY LIFE AS MUCH LOVE AS THERE IS IN THIS ROOM RIGHT NOW. AND I DON'T THINK PEOPLE MAY REALIZE THAT.
I WANT TO TALK FIRST ABOUT THE CITY OF RAJNEESHPURAM WHICH I HAD THE OPPORTUNITY TO VIEW AND VISIT IN A VERY QUICK WAY TODAY, AND ASK IF THIS DEVELOPMENTAL PROCESS, THAT MAYBE THE OUTSIDE WORLD IS NOT AS FAMILIAR WITH AS I NOW BELIEVE THEY SHOULD BE, COULD IN YOUR MIND DEVELOP INTO A PROTOTYPE OF WHAT CITIES POSSIBLY COULD AND SHOULD BE?

A: Yes, that's exactly my idea. This loving commune should become a prototype, because in the vast world, even though you are in the crowd, you are alone. Here, even if you are alone, you know and you feel the warmth of people all around you.
Love is something which is nobody's monopoly. A loving person is simply a love-radiating energy. And when there are thousands of people radiating love, there is a certain energy field. I called it the Buddhafield. Anybody who comes will receive the love, the friendship, the hospitality... but people are afraid to come.

Q: WHY?

A: For the simple reason that we are strangers. This is animal instinct. Animals are afraid of strangers. Every animal has its own territorial prerogative. If you keep out of the territory he will not get disturbed or upset, but if you enter into his territory, then immediately he is hostile. That instinct is still alive in man.
We are outsiders. In many ways our ways of thinking are different, our values are different, our priorities are different. We are for a better man and for a better humanity, and their fear and hostility is natural.

Q: ARE THE HOSTILITIES CREATED OR PERPETRATED BY THE LACK OF UNDERSTANDING AND THE ABSENCE, AS IT WOULD APPEAR TO THE OUTSIDE WORLD, OF A WILLINGNESS FOR THE RAJNEESHEES TO GO OUT, RATHER THAN ACCEPT IN, SO PEOPLE CAN LEARN MORE ABOUT THEM?

A: No. This is my basic standpoint: not to go out, because that is interfering into somebody's world. I am not a missionary and I hate the word. I don't want anybody to be converted, and I don't want anybody to be convinced that we are right. In fact the people who try to convince others that they are right are basically, deep down in themselves, not convinced that they are right. Convincing others, they are making an effort to convince themselves.
When they see they have a crowd convinced, then they feel at ease. Then they know, "I cannot be wrong. If so many people are converted by me, then I cannot be wrong."
This outgoing is impossible for me or my people. We are here, we do no harm to anybody, and we don't want to interfere in anybody's thinking, way of life, his style, his religion, his politics -- we do not want to interfere. We accept him as he is. But if he wants to be acquainted with our world, he is welcome.

Q: BUT TO BE EXPOSED TO YOUR WORLD, TO HAVE SOME POSITIVE EXPOSURE -- THERE ARE PEOPLE WHO hate THIS PARTICULAR GROUP, THERE ARE PEOPLE WITHIN THE GROUP, I WOULD IMAGINE, WHO FEEL

THAT AND REALIZE THAT HATE OUTSIDE. THERE ARE PEOPLE WHO HAVE ABSOLUTELY NO KNOWLEDGE OF WHAT GOES ON HERE -- WOULD IT NOT BE A GOOD IDEA, not AS A MISSIONARY, not REACHING OUT TO CONVERT, BUT IN FACT TO INFORM?

A: I will wait, because if they are hating me and my people, they are on the way towards Rajneeshpuram. Hate is a relationship, and sometimes far stronger than love. And once they come here, then we will see....

Q: BUT IT SEEMS THAT SOME OF THIS HATE -- USING THAT WORD, SINCE I BROUGHT IT UP -- IS BRED BY FEAR, WHICH IS BRED BY SOMETHING UNKNOWN. THIS IS A MYSTERIOUS WORLD INSIDE THIS VALLEY.

A: Yes, that is true. That mysteriousness in this valley will attract only those people who are ready to go on an adventure, who want to explore, who want to know the unknown -- and those are the only people who have any worth.

Q: WHAT KIND OF WORTH?

A: They are adventurers -- they are on a pilgrimage to know the unknown -- they are the real people. Others are just living like animals, without exploration.

Q: SO YOU'RE TALKING ABOUT THAT SELECT GROUP OF RISK-TAKERS?

A: Yes. With me, only that select group can have a communion.

Q: WHAT IS... WHAT IS THE FUTURE -- AND I KNOW YOU DON'T LIKE TO TALK ABOUT THE FUTURE OR ADDRESS YOURSELF TO IT -- BUT WHAT IS THE FUTURE OFRAJNEESHPURAM? WE GOT OFF THE TRACK A LITTLE BIT. I WANTED TO TALK ABOUT THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE CITY, THE TECHNOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT THAT I'VE SEEN TODAY -- AGRICULTURALLY, CERTAINLY THE COMMUNAL WAY OF LIFE. WHAT DO YOU VIEW AS THE DEVELOPMENT OF THIS VALLEY FOR THE PEOPLE WHO ARE IN THIS TRAVEL WITH YOU?

A: I'm not concerned with it. My concern is with people and their growth. The city is their concern, not my concern. And I have so many intelligent people here, architects, engineers, doctors, professors -- from all the professions, daring, adventurous people have come to me. Now it is up to them, a mundane affair, I don't care about it. I trust them, they will be able to manage, and they are managing. And they will be able to develop it technologically, but it is not my concern at all.

Q: WHAT IS YOUR CONCERN?

A: My concern is their spiritual growth. Their intelligence should come to its highest peak. They should be deprogrammed from all past, rotten and dead, meaningless and harmful.... My work is not to create the city, but to create the man, and then the man will take care of the city and the houses. That is a totally different matter. I don't bother about it.
But my basic concern is the individual. The individual is to me the highest value in life. And all the religions of the world have repressed the individual. They have all made him feel guilty, they have all made him somehow think himself unworthy, a sinner. All the religions, in different ways, have forced everybody into a corner where he is no more human. They have humiliated humanity. It was their vested interest.
They needed a world of slaves, not a world of rebels. And you can make a person shrink if you make him guilty. You can make him afraid of hell, you can make him greedy for heaven, and this way you can make him completely forget this moment, this life. All the religions have been trying... either they are focusing you on the past, or they are focusing you on future, beyond death. No religion bothers that you should be alive, laughing, living, loving, flowering -- here and now -- and that's my purpose.

Q: DO YOU THINK THAT THEY DO THIS BECAUSE THEY ARE BIG BUSINESS AND THAT IS THE WAY TO CONTROL PEOPLE?

A: It is a great conspiracy between the politicians and the priests. It has been for thousands of years. The conspiracy is that the politician rules people as far as worldly things are concerned and the priest rules people as far as their psychology, their mind, their souls are concerned. And they have enslaved man in every possible way: the politician from the outside and the priest from the inside -- they have destroyed all potential of human beings.
My work is to bring that potential back, make the person aware that he is not guilty if Adam and Eve disobeyed God -- that is their business. You cannot be guilty for Adam and Eve disobeying God. This is so stupid! In the first place, disobedience is not always bad. And as far as Adam and Eve's disobedience is concerned, it was certainly beneficial to humanity. In fact, God was the enemy, because he was prohibiting Adam and Eve from eating from the tree of knowledge and the tree of eternal life. Now, who is the enemy?
Wisdom, knowledge, science -- all that we value in life -- paintings, poetry, sculpture, nothing would have happened if Adam and Eve had not disobeyed. They would have been still naked animals in the garden of Eden, chewing grass!

Q: MY GOD, I HOPE THAT... I CAN'T PICTURE ALL OF US IN THIS ROOM CHEWING GRASS!

A: You cannot picture it because of Adam and Eve. You should feel grateful to Adam and Eve!

Q: I DO NOW!

A: Yes!

Q: YOU KNOW, PSYCHOLOGISTS TELL US ALL OF OUR PROBLEMS ARE DIRECTED BACK TO OUR MOTHER, BUT NOW YOU'RE TAKING IT SO DAMN FAR BACK, I CAN'T EVEN COMPREHEND IT!

A: They take all the problems to the mother and they forget the real father. That is male chauvinistic psychology. The whole psychology is created by man, just as all the religions are created by man. The woman is condemned by the religions, and she is condemned now by the psychologists. In fact the psychologist is slowly taking the place of the priest because the priest is becoming out of date. Younger generations are no more interested in the priest. They have seen five thousand years of human history, what these priests have done.
The younger generation is more interested in psychotherapy, in psychoanalysis, in other different methods of psychic exploration. The priest is no more in the powerful position that he has always been.
So you will be surprised that all the priests in the world are now studying psychology, to become psychotherapists. It is going to become a necessary qualification for every bishop, every priest, to have some degree of psychology, psychotherapy, psychoanalysis, because they are aware that their power is slipping away and the psychologist is replacing them. He is becoming the new priest. But the trouble is, the new priest is also serving the old vested interest; he is not revolutionary.

Q: IS NOT THE PROCLIVITY TOWARD PSYCHOLOGY APPOINTMENTS OR PSYCHIATRY APPOINTMENTS -- WHERE PEOPLE ARE TRYING TO ESSENTIALLY, AS THEY STATE IT, FIND OUT ABOUT THEMSELVES -- SOMEWHAT THE SAME PARALLEL AS TO WHAT YOU'RE OFFERING HERE IN RAJNEESHPURAM?

A: No! Because your psychologists, even the founders -- Sigmund Freud, Carl Gustav Jung, Adler, Assagioli -- even they knew nothing about themselves, so how can they help you to know yourself?
Jung had been to India. He went to see the Taj Mahal, he went to Calcutta, to Bombay, and everywhere he was told, "You being a great psychologist, the place you should go first is to a man in south India, Maharishi Raman." That man was conceived by the whole country as one who knows himself "You should go there

and see whether it is true or not. And if he knows himself, perhaps you can learn something from him; if he does not know, you can help him to know."
But he would not go there, and in his diary he wrote: "I was afraid to go there, to face the eyes of a man who knows himself, because I don't know myself." He returned without going to Maharishi Raman. And when he was back he must have been feeling guilty, that this is not right. Going to see the ruins of palaces was worthless for a psychologist. He was not a historian. Going to see big cities, what was the point for him? He must have started feeling guilty, that everywhere he went, every friend he knew, all the professors in all the universities, in all the psychological departments, were pointing towards one man -- and he did not go there.
Out of that guilt he started writing against Indian mysticism. He started saying that Westerners should remain aloof to the Eastern tradition of mysticism, because it is dangerous for the Western man. Western man's development is different, Eastern man's development is different, their psychologies are different. This he said for the first time after coming back from India.
Psychologies are not different. There may be minute details which are different, but the basic psychology is not different, cannot be different. He projected his own fear over all history.
So I don't think these psychologists are helping anybody in any way. They can't help themselves. Do you know, the suicide rate of psychologists is double that of average human beings.

Q: I THINK IT'S EVEN WORSE....

A: Yes. It may have grown higher, because for five years I have not been reading a single word, of any book, of any newspaper. For five years I have simply stopped... so perhaps it may have gone higher. But five years ago, it was double. And the same was the situation with madness -- it was double any other profession. And the same was the proportion of all kinds of perverted acts.
These people -- suicidal, insane, committing perverted acts, finding excuses to do them through psychology -- do you think they can help anybody to know himself?

Q: IF YOUR THINKING AND YOUR BELIEF IS AS YOU STATE IT -- AND I ASSUME CERTAINLY THAT IT IS -- AND THE WORLD IS IN THE CHAOS THAT IT'S IN... I MEAN, THIS IS ABOUT AS SCREWED UP AS IT CAN GET....

A: Yes.

Q:... MAYBE A LITTLE WORSE DOWN THE LINE, BUT I MEAN, IT'S PRETTY CLOSE TO MAXIMUM.

A: It is.

Q: WHY THEN DOES NOT BHAGWAN STEP FORWARD, NOT AS A SAVIOR OF THE WORLD, NOT AS A GOD, BUT AS A MAN WHO HAS RECOGNIZED WHAT THE PROBLEM IS, HAS AN IDEA OF THE SOLUTION, AND MAKE THAT AVAILABLE TO THOSE WHO DO NOT KNOW? GRANTED, IT'S AVAILABLE IF THEY COME HERE, BUT IT IS A MASSIVE JOURNEY TO COME HERE, AND THE ROAD IS TERRIBLE, BY THE WAY, WHICH DOESN'T HELP, EITHER....

A: It is a massive journey. That's why you are here: you take the message.

Q: BUT I'M NOT A MISSIONARY EITHER.

A: No, you are not a missionary.

Q: AND I DON'T WANT TO BE A MISSIONARY.

A: No. I don't want anybody to be a missionary....

Q: BUT YOU'VE BECOME A MAN OF THE WORLD.

A: No.

Q: YOU HAVE BECOME A MAN WHO IS VERY VISIBLE. OH, BUT OF COURSE YOU HAVE.

A: Mmm?

Q: THE WORLD PRESS KNOWS ABOUT BHAGWAN. YOU MUST BE ONE OF THE GREAT SHOW BUSINESS TEACHERS OF ALL TIME.

A: That's true!

Q: AND I BELIEVE THAT'S WHAT YOU WANT TO BE. HOWEVER, I THINK THAT AT THE SAME TIME, ON A SERIOUS NOTE -- WELL, AM I CORRECT OR AM I NOT? -- IF YOUR MESSAGE IS AS YOU STATED, WOULD IT NOT BE TO THE BENEFIT OF ALL MANKIND IF BHAGWAN WOULD TAKE HIS SHOW ON THE ROAD?

A: No, not on the road. I can manage from here! And I am managing it well!

Q: WELL, I'M SURE YOU ARE. BUT WHAT I'M SAYING THOUGH, GETTING BACK AGAIN.... YOU KNOW, I WAS INTIMIDATED.... I READ IN THE RAJNEESH TIMES, A RECENT ARTICLE -- AND ON THE BACK PAGE IS THE KIDS' CORNER WHICH WAS THE ONLY ONE I UNDERSTOOD. AND AT THE BEGINNING OF THAT COLUMN, A YOUNGSTER HAD TALKED ABOUT HOW HE WAS VERY EXCITED ABOUT THE PRESS CONFERENCE THAT WAS HELD HERE TWO WEEKS AGO AND THE OPPORTUNITY FOR THE WORLD PRESS TO GATHER AND MEET WITH YOU, AND TO HEAR WHAT YOU HAD TO SAY, BUT ALL HE HEARD WAS THE SAME OLD QUESTIONS.
NOW I HAVE BEEN RACKING MY BRAIN SINCE THE PRESS KIT WHICH CONTAINED THAT PARTICULAR EDITION CAME TO ME, TRYING TO THINK OF SOME OTHER QUESTIONS. BUT I'M JUST A PRETTY SIMPLE GUY. WHAT I SEE IS, VERY SIMPLY, THAT YOU HAVE SOME THINGS TO SAY THAT A LOT OF PEOPLE AT THIS POINT DON'T BUY, WHICH YOU MAY NOT CARE ABOUT. WHY DON'T YOU CARE ABOUT IT?

A: Why should I care?

Q: BUT WHY SHOULDN'T YOU CARE?... AND WE CAN PLAY MONOPOLY WITH THIS ALL THE WAY THROUGH.

A: No.

Q: YOU STATE THAT YOUR INTEREST IS IN THE INDIVIDUAL. IS THAT ONLY THE INDIVIDUAL WHO IS HERE, OR WITHIN THE RAJNEESH GROUP?

A: No. The individual is everywhere, whether he is here or not, because only the individual exists. Societies are just names, collectivities are all names. The reality is only of the individual. And I am trying my best, sitting in my room. That's why You can see in all the papers, on the radio, on the television, a man who does not go out of this small valley. And I will go on hammering all over the world from here. What is the point of traveling?

Q: WELL, LET ME ASK YOU THIS: YOU DO NOT GO OUT OF THE VALLEY, BUT IS IT NOT CORRECT THAT YOU SPENT THREE NIGHTS IN BEND AT THE RIVERHOUSE MOTEL A COUPLE OF WEEKS AGO?

A: No.

Q: THEN SOMEONE IS PAYING YOU THE HIGHEST COMPLIMENT BECAUSE THEY ARE IMPERSONATING YOU.

A: Hmm!

Q: BECAUSE IT WAS TOLD TO ME THAT YOU SPENT A SUNDAY NIGHT, A MONDAY NIGHT AND A TUESDAY NIGHT, WITH A NURSE AND A BODYGUARD. AND YOU WERE SEEN IN THE JACUZZI AND IN THE LOUNGE AND YOU WERE HAVING A GREAT TIME. SO I WANTED TO KNOW WHY THEY KEPT SNIFFING MY HAIR TODAY BEFORE I SAT DOWN TO TALK TO YOU, BECAUSE I KNOW THEY DIDN'T SNIFF EVERYBODY'S HAIR AT THE RIVERHOUSE IN BEND, OREGON.
THOSE KINDS OF MISDIRECTED IDEAS -- IF IN FACT YOU WERE NOT THERE -- SOMETIMES BREAK DOWN A LITTLE CREDIBILITY FOR BHAGWAN, AND I WONDER IF IT'S POSSIBLE FOR WHAT YOU ARE SAYING -- GETTING BACK TO IT SOMEWHAT SERIOUSLY -- TO BE PROJECTED TO THOSE PEOPLE WHO JUST DON'T UNDERSTAND.

A: First, the nonserious part.

Q: DON'T TRY TO GET A BIGGER LAUGH THAN I DID.

A: I was not in the hotel, but I can be.

Q: WELL, YOU PROBABLY COULD BUY THE HOTEL IF YOU WANTED TO.

A: In fact, I have... and I have everything that any hotel in America can have. You have just to see my bathroom. Perhaps it is the best in the whole world.

Q: YOUR BATHROOM?

A: My bathroom.

Q: IS THAT AN INVITATION?

A: Yes.

Q: I'VE NEVER BEEN INVITED TO THE BATHROOM BEFORE. I'VE BEEN TOLD I BELONGED IN THE BATHROOM BEFORE, BUT NEVER INVITED TO ONE.

A: I am a rare and a unique person in every way: I invite you into my bathroom!

Q: THAT IS UNIQUE. BUT WHERE DO WE GO FROM THERE?

A: There is nowhere to go. Enjoy the jacuzzi there, enjoy the shower there, enjoy the hot shower, enjoy the ice-cold shower....

Q: AND THEN GET OUT... L UNDERSTAND! I NEED TO KNOW THIS FOR MY OWN EDIFICATION: HAVE YOU EVER INVITED A MEMBER OF THE PRESS TO YOUR BATHROOM BEFORE?

A: No...

Q: THANK YOU. I THINK THAT'S IMPORTANT.

A:... because I never liked any man the way I like you.

Q: I WONDER IF THIS COULD BE LOVE?

A: This is!

Q: INVITED TO THE BATHROOM.... WELL, I'M SURE THE LISTENERS OF THIS PROGRAM ARE THINKING YOU AND I ARE GOING TO START A NIGHTCLUB ACT.
WHAT IS THE POTENTIAL -- SINCE YOU WERE TALKING ABOUT THIS A MOMENT AGO -- OF UNITING THE WESTERN PHILOSOPHY, WHICH IS SOMEWHAT MATERIALISTIC, AND THE EASTERN PHILOSOPHY, WHICH IS TRADITIONALLY NOT MATERIALISTIC BUT IS MORE AN INNER -- WHAT WOULD YOU CALL IT -- AN INNER RECOGNITION OF ONESELF?
NOW YOU HAVE DONE A MAGNIFICENT JOB IN MANY RESPECTS -- THAT DIAMOND WRISTWATCH OF COURSE IS CERTAINLY NOT AN EASTERN PHILOSOPHY -- AND YET THE REST OF YOUR PRESENTATION IS SOMEWHAT EASTERN. IS IT POSSIBLE FOR THOSE TWO CULTURES TO UNITE?

A: That's what I have been doing! And that's why both sides of the culture are angry at me. The Easterners are angry with me because they think I am materialist....

Q: AND ARE THEY RIGHT?

A: No.

Q: YOU'RE NOT MATERIALISTIC?

A: No, not in their sense. And the Western people -- particularly the materialist, the communist -- they are angry with me because I am bringing spiritualism.

My approach is that man is both together. This existence is not split into matter and spirit. This existence is one organic unity, just as your soul and your body are an organic unity. Your soul cannot exist without your body, and your body cannot be alive without the soul.
I am destroying the whole idea of the separation, of a split between matter and mind, body and soul, materialism and spiritualism. I call myself Zorba the Buddha. My restaurants, my discos are all named after me: Zorba the Buddha.
Now Buddhists are angry. The ambassador of Ceylon in America wrote me a letter saying, "In my country people will be angry about it. Please don't use Buddha's name with Zorba." I replied to him, "We don't mean your Buddha; your Buddha's name was Gautam Siddhartha. Buddha is not anybody's name, it is a quality. It means the Awakened One. It can be used for anybody who is awakened. So don't get upset about it."
My effort is that Zorba and Buddha have to be bridged. Zorba represents the materialist's life in all its luxury -- hence this diamond wristwatch, hence all my Rolls Royces. I live the most luxurious life that any man has ever lived, with no worry. People have much more money -- I don't have a single cent -- but they cannot live such a luxurious life as I am living, with no worry, no bank account, no income tax... and having everything that anybody can have!

Q: WHAT IS YOUR SECRET, BHAGWAN? I REALLY THINK YOU'RE IN THE WRONG BUSINESS. I MEAN BECAUSE OF WHAT YOU'VE JUST DOCUMENTED, YOU MUST BE ONE OF THE WORLD'S GREAT CON MEN, IT WOULD SEEM.

A: I am!

Q: AND IT TAKES A GREAT MAN TO ADMIT THAT.

A: Certainly!

Q: AND IT TAKES AN EQUALLY GREAT MAN TO SIT AND ACCEPT IT AND REVEL IN IT, BHAGWAN.

A: Right!

Q: I WANT TO ASK YOU A QUESTION ABOUT THE FORMER DEAD CITY OF ANTELOPE. THIS HAS OF COURSE CREATED A GREAT DEAL OF CONTROVERSY. I HAVE ONLY LIVED IN THIS CENTRAL OREGON AREA FOR ABOUT FOUR AND A HALF MONTHS. THIS IS MY FIRST TRIP TO THIS PARTICULAR AREA. IT WAS MY FIRST TRIP THROUGH ANTELOPE, AND I GUESS THE QUESTION I WOULD HAVE TO ASK IS: WHY WOULD ANYBODY WANT ANTELOPE? I MEAN WHAT IS THE PURPOSE AND

WHAT ARE THE PLANS? I DON'T SEE IT BECOMING A RESORT AREA. I DON'T SEE IT BECOMING AN INDUSTRIAL AREA. THERE ARE PEOPLE WHO LIVE THERE FOR THEIR OWN PARTICULAR REASONS, WHO OF COURSE DON'T THINK YOU'RE SUCH A GREAT MAN -- AS I'M SURE YOU'RE AWARE. WHAT WAS THE POINT?

A: In fact, again you bring me to something in which I have no interest. Just not to be impolite to you, I am answering it.
When we came here four years ago there was 126 square miles of land, just desert, and that one house there, for a guard to take care of the land -- what could he do with 126 square miles of land...? And the owners had been trying to sell it for almost half a century, but who would purchase this desert, for what?
When we came here I wanted a big place. That big a property was not available anywhere else. When we came here we needed our people to stay in Antelope, because there were no houses here. Before we made houses and roads and restaurants and eating places, they had to remain in Antelope. The population of Antelope was less than my sannyasins. And the Antelope population started behaving with great hostility: they wouldn't allow any permit, they wouldn't allow them to purchase any land, they wouldn't allow change of zone -- small things. My people told them, "We don't want your city or your government. We are simply here for the time being, and we will be moving to our own city. But we have to create the city, and before we create it we have to be here. This is the nearest place."
And because they wouldn't listen, and they tried in every possible way to hinder, naturally my people thought that the best way was to take over the government. What is the need of asking permission from these people when we have the government and we give the permission? -- so they took over, there was no problem in it.
If you had come four years ago and seen Antelope, you would not have believed it.

Q: I DIDN'T BELIEVE IT TODAY. I COULDN'T FIGURE OUT WHAT ALL THE FLACK WAS ABOUT.

A: Four years ago it was absolutely a cemetery.

Q: WHAT IS IT NOW?

A: Now it is a dancing place. We have made a dead city alive. Now hundreds of sannyasins are living there. And since we took over the government, we have done many things there: we have made better roads, we are trying to make new houses, a big housing colony, we are going to make a big hospital there, we have

taken the school and raised the standard of the school. We are doing everything there, and now it is part of us. Now nobody can take it over from us.

Q: BUT THEY ARE TRYING?

A: They are trying and we are enjoying. They are trying to collect 84,000 signatures so that in the next election they can ask the governor to dissolve Antelope into Wasco County.
They certainly know they cannot win, because only eight or ten old Antelopians are there and one hundred sannyasins are there. They cannot win democratically, and this is absolutely unconstitutional. If it is done, then we are going to fight up to the Supreme Court.

Q: WAS IT CONSTITUTIONAL TO TAKE IT OVER IN THE FIRST PLACE?

A: Taking over is not the problem. They are the majority; the majority should rule. It is not a question of taking over.

Q: IS IT AN IMPORTANT ENOUGH QUESTION THOUGH, NOW THAT YOUR CITY IS ESTABLISHED?

A: Not yet. They are not allowing it to be established yet. Our city is under litigation. And we have been telling them that if you allow us whatever we need, if you help -- and we are creating a beautiful place for you in a desert -- we can leave Antelope. That was our basic proposal to them.

Q: AND THAT STANDS NOW?

A: No. No more.

Q: NOW YOU'RE NOT GOING TO LEAVE?

A: Now we are not going to leave!

Q: AND YOU'RE NOT GOING TO INVITE ANY OF THOSE PEOPLE INTO YOUR BATHROOM?

A: No.

Q: YOU WILL FIGHT THIS AS HIGH AS IT MUST GO?

A: We will fight it, and I know constitutionally it is absolutely wrong to dissolve. So let them.. and then we go to the Supreme Court. And it has been so in many cases; we have never been losers.
Last year we brought thousands of street people to share our homes with us, and the Oregon government got simply mad about it. They started thinking that we were going to take over the county or we were going to take over Oregon.

Q: THEIR FEELING WAS THAT YOU WERE CONTROLLING THE ELECTION, I THINK, IS THAT NOT CORRECT?

A: No, not at all.

Q: NO, I MEAN their FEELING WAS THAT.

A: Their feeling was that.

Q: AND THAT WAS REJECTED BY THE ELECTION COMMISSION LAST WEEK.

A: Yes. That has been rejected.

Q: BUT, IN DEFENSE OF YOUR ACTIONS, IS NOT THE OREGON ELECTION LAW, RESIDENT LAW -- I MEAN YOU CAN WALK IN AND TEN MINUTES LATER YOU CAN VOTE -- SO ANTIQUATED THAT, ON THE BOTTOM LINE, IF YOU WANTED TO CONTROL THE ELECTION -- WHICH PROBABLY YOU DID...

A: No.

Q:... THAT YOU COULD BRING THESE PEOPLE IN AND THAT THEY COULD HAVE VOTED LEGALLY IN THAT ELECTION. IS THAT NOT CORRECT?

A: We were not concerned with taking over the county. What will we do with the county? It is unnecessary, taking the burden of the county, which is bankrupt -- why should we bother? We have to develop our own place!

Q: WHAT DID YOU BRING THE PEOPLE IN FOR?

A: We had surplus money. After every festival we have nearabout two to three million dollars and we want to share it. This time we will be bringing some other group. Each year we are going to bring different groups of people -- perhaps we may invite the blacks!

Q: MY GOD, I DON'T KNOW IF OREGON'S READY FOR THAT!

A: Get ready! But every year we are going to invite somebody or other.

Q: WELL, THE COMPLAINT THOUGH, IN THE BEND AREA AND IN OTHER AREAS, WAS THAT YOU BROUGHT THEM IN AND THEN YOU TURNED THEM LOOSE.

A: No.

Q: AND THAT THEY THEN BECAME WARDS OF THE VARIOUS VENUES THAT THEY LANDED IN, FOUND THEMSELVES IN... FOUND THEMSELVES INTENTIONALLY BREAKING LAWS SO THAT THEY WOULD HAVE....

A: No. That is absolutely wrong, because we had brought people first with a contract that whenever they wanted to go, we would give them the ticket, return ticket.

Q: YOU PROVIDED THEM ALL A TICKET?

A: We provided all those people with whom we had the contract. After two weeks, we dropped the idea of the contract, because the idea was... how would these poor people dare to come here on a one-way ticket? So we gave them round trip tickets -- they could go back -- but once they settled here, they started sending messages to their friends. Then we told the people, "If they want to come.... Your people are there, you can contact them. You know what the situation is here -- if they want to come, we will give them only a one-way ticket" -- and that was the contract. So those people who had the contract for a one-way ticket got a one-way ticket, and that was their responsibility. We have nothing to do with it.

And we were giving them three months to be here, every facility, but the Christians -- particularly Christian churches and associations around -- became very much troubled about that. The fear was that perhaps we would turn them into sannyasins. Christians started coming here, Christian priests started having demonstrations in Madras, in Portland, and they persuaded them to go back.

Here they were receiving everything free, here they were living better than they had ever lived before, and many of them are still here. After three months it was a free choice for them: if they wanted to go back, their ticket was there; if they didn't want to go back, they could remain here. They HAVE remained here, and we have been receiving hundreds of letters from the people who have left saying that it was wrong on their side to listen to the Christians and leave the place. They would love to come back again.

It was not our responsibility letting those people loose in Oregon. It was the State of Oregon and the Christian churches of Oregon who created the whole paranoia. The state created the paranoia about the election, and the churches created the paranoia about religion. But the people who are here -- nobody has tried to make them sannyasins. If they wanted to become, that was their business.
And sannyas is such a nonserious phenomenon. It is not a fanatic type of group; it is very loose and free. If you want to become a sannyasin we don't make any conditions, we don't ask for any qualifications. You simply become a sannyasin. If you want to drop it, goodbye, you drop it. When you drop nobody stops you, when you want to become a sannyasin nobody stops you.
So those people who are still here are never going to leave. And we had no intention about the election. That's what the commission has found, that we had no intention at all to bring those people for the election.

Q: IS THERE ANY WAY FOR THIS SEGMENT OF THE GENERAL SOCIETY TO COEXIST WITH THE GOVERNMENT AND THE PEOPLE OF OREGON UNDER THE CURRENT STRUCTURE OF THINGS? CAN YOU GUYS GET ALONG WITH THE FOLKS OUTSIDE? IS THERE A POSSIBILITY OF THAT?

A: I don't think so.

Q: I MEAN, I DON'T CARE WHETHER YOU WANT TO OR NOT, BUT NO MAN OR NO GROUP IS AN ISLAND, AND I THINK THAT'S PROBABLY THE TRUTH. AND AT SOME POINT THERE IS GOING TO HAVE TO BE SOME COOPERATION IN SOMETHING. I KNOW YOU ANSWERED AT THE PRESS CONFERENCE IF THERE WOULD BE ANY POSSIBILITY FOR COEXISTENCE, SAY WITH THE PEOPLE OF WHAT USED TO BE ANTELOPE, AND YOUR ANSWER WAS NO. BUT MY QUESTION IS: IS THERE THE POSSIBILITY THAT THE RAJNEESHEES CAN BECOME COEXISTING, NOT SUBSERVIENT, BUT COEXIST WITH THE PEOPLE OF OREGON?

A: No. To me the word COEXISTENCE is political, and it does not carry any good connotations with it. Coexistence means that we are enemies, but -- what to do? -- we have to get along.

Q: CHOOSE ANOTHER WORD THEN, WHERE THE PEOPLE OF OREGON, WHERE THE STATE OF OREGON IS CONCERNED, THAT THE RAJNEESHEES COULD IN FACT ACCEPT.

A: I don't compromise on anything.

Q: WELL, I DON'T THINK THAT I'M ASKING YOU TO COMPROMISE.

A: No. I will make every effort to bring to the Oregonians what we are. We are exposing ourselves to all media and everybody is welcome, but we are going to remain ourselves and there is no need for any coexistence. They exist there in their way, we exist here in our own way -- PARALLEL EXISTENCE, that is my word.

Q: PARALLEL MIGHT BE EVEN A BETTER WORD.

A: Yes

Q: Coexistence, I THINK, DOES DENOTE A HOSTILITY THAT IS ACCEPTED.

A: That's it. That's why I said "Never." When the question was asked about coexistence, I said, "Never." But the woman did not even wait for me to explain what I wanted to say. She did not ask about the implications. She simply left. That was enough. Coexistence finished! That woman immediately left the mike, and that was really symbolic.

Q: WELL, I DIDN'T WANT TO COME TO THE PRESS CONFERENCE, BECAUSE I KNEW THAT YOU AND I WOULD GET ALONG VERY WELL, AND I'D PROBABLY DOMINATE THE WHOLE PROCEEDINGS.
AT THE... AT THE RISK OF BEING REDUNDANT -- AND THESE ARE THE MECHANICAL THINGS, SOME OF THE OTHER THINGS THAT CAME OUT OF THE PRESS CONFERENCE TALK TO ME FOR A MINUTE ABOUT GOD, AND THE FACT THAT YOUR ANSWER OR RESPONSE WAS, I BELIEVE, PARAPHRASING "HE IS MAN'S GREATEST LIE."

A: Right.

Q: OR SHE IS MAN'S GREATEST LIE -- WHICHEVER THE CASE MAY BE.

A: Right!

Q: THAT'S IT?

A: Yes.

Q: LET'S TALK AGAIN ABOUT YOUR BATHROOM!
WHAT ABOUT THE QUESTION THAT CAME UP AT SOME POINT.... I HAD READ SO MUCH ABOUT RAJNEESHEES AND BHAGWAN. FOUR AND A HALF MONTHS IN THIS AREA, I HAD NOW BECOME SO INUNDATED WITH INFORMATION.... YOUR CHAMBER OF COMMERCE, YOUR PUBLIC

RELATIONS DEPARTMENT, SENT ME THE WORLD'S LARGEST PRESS KIT. IN SIXTEEN YEARS I COULD NOT READ EVERYTHING THAT WAS IN THERE, BUT I TRIED! THE QUESTION THAT HAS COME UP IS THE JIM JONES PROBLEM, THE PARALLEL THAT HAS BEEN DRAWN THAT THIS IS IN FACT A RELIGIOUS FANATIC WHO IS CONTROLLING A CULT OF PEOPLE WHO WILL DO ANYTHING THAT HE DECIDES THAT THEY SHOULD DO -- WHETHER OR NOT HE DECIDES THAT. I BELIEVE YOUR ANSWER WAS SIMPLY THAT THE CHRISTIANITY FACTOR IS NOT IN EXISTENCE HERE, THAT LIFE AFTER DEATH IS BETTER THAN LIFE DURING LIFE. IS THAT THE COMPLETE ANSWER, AND IS IT NOT PROBABLY SAFE TO ASSUME THAT IN SOME RESPECTS THE TRAGEDY THAT HAPPENED AT JONESTOWN WAS A RESULT OF PEOPLE FOLLOWING AN INDIVIDUAL BLINDLY, AS OPPOSED TO A CHRISTIANITY QUESTION?

A: Wait!
It is not only that he was a Christian priest. There is great implication in it. The whole Christianity is death-oriented; the cross is its symbol. And if Jesus was not crucified, there would have been no Christianity at all. The Jews simply missed the point. The man was nuts! They should have ignored him, he was doing no harm to anybody. To crucify that nut created Christianity. I call Christianity, CROSSIANITY. It is not Christianity.

Q: HOW ABOUT THE PEOPLE WHO SAY BHAGWAN IS NUTS, AND IF THEY WERE TO CRUCIFY YOU WOULD THE SAME THING HAPPEN?

A: It will happen again if they crucify me. Again there will be another Christianity, so better tell them....

Q: LEAVE YOU ALONE!

A: Leave me alone!

Q: OKAY.

A: It is in their favor if they leave me alone. If they assassinate me, it will be in my favor.
Reverend Jim Jones had no similarity at any point with me. All his disciples were mostly black, illiterate. All my disciples are white....

Q: I SAW THREE BLACKS TODAY.

A: Yes, three you can see in five thousand people. That does not make even one percent. These white people have come from all over the world, they are all well educated, most of them are graduates, a large number of them have master's degrees, many are Ph.D.s, few are D.Litts. His group and my group are poles apart.
Those people were blindly following him, because that is what Jesus teaches. He was simply repeating Jesus' drama. Jesus is responsible.

Q: FOR JONESTOWN?

A: Yes. And the pope should be hanged!

Q: WHO SHOULD BE...?

A: For Jonestown -- the pope.

Q: WELL, HE WASN'T IN OFFICE THEN. THE POPE AT THE TIME SHOULD HAVE BEEN HANGED...?

A: Any.

Q: JUST PICK ONE OUT.

A: Any will do, because he represents Jesus Christ.

Q: BUT THEN WHY NOT HANG ALL THE PRIESTS AND THE BISHOPS AND THE CARDINALS AND THE ARCHBISHOPS...?

A: That will be great!
But that's what Jesus was doing with people, his followers: "Believe in me, have faith in me, follow me." And that's what Reverend Jones was doing: "Whatever I say you have to follow."
Here I am saying to my people, "Don't believe in my statements. Think over them, argue over them. You love me -- that is another thing. That should not become your belief."

Q: BUT ONE OF THE GREAT PLOYS IN THE HUMAN MIND AND MANEUVERABILITY IS FOR SOMEONE TO SAY, "DON'T DO THAT," WHICH MAKES THEM WANT TO DO IT EVEN MORE.

A: So what do you want? I should say, "Do it"?

Q: NO, NO. DOES THAT NOT PUT AN AWESOME RESPONSIBILITY ON YOU TO HAVE THIS KIND OF DEVOTION?

A: No. Because I have been consistently denying to them, telling them, almost every day for thirty years, that I am not your leader, that I am not a prophet, that I am not a messiah, that I am not the only begotten son of God -- I am just an ordinary man as you are, with a slight difference: you are asleep, I am awake. But that is not much of a difference. I can just shake you a little and you will be awake.

I have been telling them that I don't have any dogma to give them, any belief system to give them. Christians have told me that I should publish a catechism in which my whole doctrine is presented in short, but that is impossible. I have 360 books and I have contradicted myself thousands of times, because to me, consistency is something that belongs to the stupid, unintelligent, retarded. A consciousness which goes on growing is bound to contradict at each step the step that preceded it.

They cannot make any belief out of my books, out of my teachings. They can love me, and love is not adoration. Adoration is for somebody who is higher than you. Now I am doing my hardest to tell them that I am not higher, but I don't take any responsibility if they don't listen. If somebody adores me, that is his responsibility, not mine. If somebody thinks he is my follower, that is his idea, not mine. I am not responsible for anybody. I am only responsible for myself, and I want my people to be responsible for themselves.

Q: IS ANYONE HERE RESPONSIBLE FOR ANYONE ELSE?

A: No, nobody is responsible for anybody else.

Q: IS ANYONE IN THE WORLD RESPONSIBLE FOR ANYONE ELSE?

A: In fact they should not be. Only politicians and priests have been exploiting people and saying "We are responsible for you. We take the responsibility." That is a strategy to make them enslaved. The priest says, "Don't be bothered. You just follow the Christian dogma, have faith in Jesus Christ and you will be saved."

They are taking their responsibility. Jesus was taking the responsibility for saving the whole of mankind, and he has not been seen for two thousand years -- what a great savior!

I am nobody's savior. I have saved myself, that's enough.

Q: QUITE LUXURIOUSLY TOO.

A: Quite luxuriously, because I don't believe in any ascetic ideas. My idea about asceticism is that it is a psychological sickness, it is masochism. It is torturing yourself, and in a sick mind you can enjoy torturing yourself
There are two kinds of torturers: the sadist who tortures somebody else and enjoys, and the masochist who tortures himself and enjoys. Both kinds of people fit together very beautifully. The best couple in the world will be a sadist husband, a masochist wife, or vice versa. Both will be of great....

Q: A MARRIAGE MADE IN HEAVEN, RIGHT?

A: Yes, a marriage made in heaven, because one will enjoy torturing the other and the other will enjoy being tortured. So that is perfect, the best marriage I can conceive.
I am not a masochist, hence I enjoy everything that life can give to me. And I am not a sadist, so I don't tell any of my people to torture themselves in any way: enjoy to the fullest. And I don't give them any promises.
Just see the difference: I don't give any promises for their future, after death, that they will be benefited, rewarded -- I don't even talk about the future, I simply talk about this moment. I cannot believe how people can even think of me in reference to Reverend Jones and Jonestown. This is just the opposite place.
Here we love, we live, we live to totality, and we try to squeeze every moment to the very last drop of its juice. I have never ordered them in anything.
And as far as death is concerned, I am life-affirmative. I want death to disappear from the earth, and there is a possibility if the idiotic politicians don't go on wasting scientific genius in piling up nuclear weapons. There is a possibility, very commonly accepted by biologists, that a man can live for three hundred years very easily, and without any old age.
In India I have seen people, in a small part of Kashmir which is now under Pakistan -- they have invaded that part; it is a very small place, a few thousand people -- who live for 150 or 160 years. The oldest man in that community was 180 years old when I went there, and he was working in the field!
I asked him, "How long have you worked?" He said, "I don't know how to count. People say that I have been working here for at least 150 years. When I was thirty, my father died, and since then I have been working." And he was still young!
There are hundreds of people in the Soviet Union who have reached beyond 150; they also are middle Asian, from the other side of the Himalayas. Scientists think that three hundred years is very easily possible, and if more efforts are made, we can postpone death as long as possible.
Unless a man wants to die -- because who would like to live for one thousand years? Perhaps....

Q: I CAN'T FIGURE OUT WHY THE GUY OF 185 WOULD WANT TO KEEP LIVING WHILE HE'S WORKING IN THE FIELDS.

A: You cannot. It is difficult to believe when you....

Q: THEN WE'D HAVE TO CHANGE THE WHOLE STRUCTURE OF THIS PLANET. THE ENTIRE PLANET WOULD HAVE TO BE CHANGED.

A: No, nothing. All that we have to change is the way we have been producing children -- only that has to be changed, nothing else, because the father's cell and the mother's egg have the program for the whole life. The meeting of those two decides the whole life of the person: how long he will live, what kind of nose he will have, what color of hair, what color of skin, what kind of diseases he will have, when he will die. The whole program is in the first two genes.
The only thing that bioengineering has to do is to change the program. And they ARE capable, they are saying they are capable of changing the whole program, that the child will not have any old age, that the child will live three hundred years, that he will not be vulnerable to all kinds of diseases, infections, that he will have the highest I.Q., intelligence possible.

Q: WOULD THAT BE, IN YOUR MIND, A HEALTHY WORLD?

A: It will be for the first time healthy. Up to now it has been just a sick and mad world. It will be really healthy when there are no diseases....

Q: WELL, WOULD YOU DO AWAY AT THE SAME TIME WHEN YOU TALK ABOUT CONSTRUCTING GENES AND THE DNA PROGRESS THAT'S BEING MADE, AND PROCREATION AND THE ENTIRE PICTURE -- WOULD YOU DO AWAY WITH EGOS, WOULD YOU DO AWAY WITH THE COMPETITIVE FACTOR? COULD YOU DO AWAY WITH ALL OF THE NEGATIVES LIKE JEALOUSY, LIKE GREED AND THINGS LIKE THAT?

A: Yes. That can be done.

Q: SO YOU'RE REALLY TALKING THEN ABOUT A GENEALOGICAL, BIONIC PERSON, CONSTRUCTED?

A: Certainly. And that will be the dream of all those people who for centuries have been thinking of a superman.

Q: DOES THE WORLD REALLY WANT A SUPERMAN?

A: This world does not deserve it.

Q: BUT THIS IS WHERE IT HAS TO START, OR AT LEAST WHERE OUR LIFETIME IS CONCERNED.

A: It needs it.

Q: THIS IS NOT "THE PRICE IS RIGHT" AND YOU SUDDENLY OPEN THE CURTAIN AND THERE IS A SUPERMAN -- IT'S THE DEVELOPMENTAL PROCESS, THE EVOLUTIONARY PROCESS....

A: Very simple. Within twenty years -- because one generation of twenty-year-old young people, supermen moving around, not hippies -- you will see the difference. Within twenty years -- it is not a question of a very long time. And when we can give the child the intelligence of an Einstein, we can give him the aesthetic sense of a van Gogh, we can give him a face as beautiful as Alexander the Great or Cleopatra, why should we go on living with this mediocre, biological, accidental world?
And it is strange that whenever I mention it to people, they raise the question that it will be something inhuman, mechanical, but about other things they don't bother. When you have cancer, then you don't say,"It is natural. Leave it, don't do anything, because that operation is going to be mechanical, that operation is going to be technological, and this beautiful cancer in me is natural."
When we are ready to take man-made medicines for our diseases -- and diseases come from nature -- nobody bothers about it, everybody is willing for medicines, operations, surgeries.

Q: WELL, THEY ACCEPT IT TO HEAL, BUT NOT TO CREATE.

A: That is just the next step! If so much healing is needed, why not create a man who needs no healing?

Q: I DON'T KNOW IF I BUY ALL OF THAT PART OF IT. I SEE WHAT YOU'RE SAYING BUT... I DON'T KNOW IF I'M READY TO START ACCEPTING.... WE'VE GONE FROM YOUR BATHROOM TO CREATING SUPERMAN AND THAT IS A GIANT, QUANTUM LEAP FOR ME.

A: It is!

Q: AND FOR MOST PEOPLE?

A: No. Not for my people! They are accustomed to

Q: BUT WE'RE BACK TO THE ACCEPTANCE OF WHAT BHAGWAN SAYS....

A: No. That is not the way. They have been listening to me and they know that I give them every day a quantum leap that they have never expected. And they have been with me for a decade or two decades, and they had not been expecting that I will say this. They go on waiting for tomorrow morning.

Q: AND THEN THEY SAY, "WHAT HAS HE GOT FOR US TODAY?"

A: Yes!

Q: COUPLE OF THINGS, POPULAR QUESTIONS. THERE HAVE BEEN NEWSPAPER REPORTS, TELEVISION, RADIO, ANY OTHER FORM OF MEDIA THAT THERE MAY BE, THAT THE RAJNEESH EMPIRE -- YOU EXCUSE MY WORD -- IS CRUMBLING, THAT THERE ARE MAJOR DEFECTIONS, SOME OF THE CORPORATIONS ARE NOT DOING AS WELL FINANCIALLY, AND SUSTAINING THEMSELVES AS IT HAD APPEARED THEY WERE. TRUE OR FALSE?

A: It is all wrong. But those people need some consolations. People who are hostile to us need some consolations. If these things give them consolations, good. But everything is wrong -- my empire is increasing every day.

Q: WELL, PROBABLY IT'S BECAUSE YOUR RESTAURANT CLOSED IN PORTLAND, DID IT NOT?

A: We closed it not because we are shrinking; we closed it because we wanted our people to be here.

Q: DIDN'T BUSINESS GET A LITTLE BAD?

A: No, our business is increasing so much in Europe that we have to send people from here to Europe.

Q: DIDN'T YOU HAVE A BUSINESS THAT JUST WENT BANKRUPT SOMEWHERE?

A: Nowhere!

Q: I WONDER WHO I WAS READING ABOUT. WHERE DO THEY GET THESE REPORTS?

A: These reports come to you or to the newspapers and they make big headlines out of them. If a sannyasin has a business of his own and he goes bankrupt, that does not mean that my empire is going bankrupt.

Q: BUT IT DOES TO THOSE PEOPLE WHO WOULD LIKE TO THINK THAT YOUR EMPIRE IS NOT SUCCEEDING.

A: They can go on dreaming.

Q: IS THIS AN EMPIRE? IS THAT A QUOTE?

A: It is certainly an empire!

Q: I WANTED TO MAKE SURE I CHOSE THE RIGHT WORD.

A: It is the right word.

Q: I FOUND IT INTERESTING THAT WHEN SOMEONE ASKED YOU AT THE PRESS CONFERENCE IF YOU WANTED TO TAKE OVER ALL OF OREGON AND YOU SAID NO, IT WAS TOO SMALL, YOU WANTED THE WORLD, THEY PROBABLY TOOK YOU SERIOUSLY. DO YOU WANT TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD, BHAGWAN?

A: I was serious!

Q: ARE YOU INVOLVED IN AN EFFORT TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD?

A: Certainly!

Q: WHEN CAN WE LOOK FOR SOMETHING LIKE THIS TO TAKE PLACE? ANTELOPE TODAY, THE WORLD TOMORROW?

A: No. We are not going to take the world the way we have taken Antelope. This is nothing. We are going to take the world over in a totally different way which is not political at all. We are increasing our people all around the world. We will take it over spiritually. We are not interested in politics. They forced us to take that dead town, Antelope, they FORCED us to take it.

Q: HAD THEY NOT FORCED YOU -- AND I THINK WE TALKED ABOUT THIS BEFORE AND I WANTED TO CLARIFY IT -- HAD THEY NOT FORCED YOU, WOULD YOU HAVE GIVEN IT BACK?

A: Now, no.

Q: I THOUGHT YOU SAID EARLIER THAT YOU WOULD HAVE. NOT NOW.... I MEAN, HAD THEY COOPERATED.

A: Things have gone.... In the beginning if they had cooperated there would have been no question of us taking it, because it is unnecessary trouble for us. We have our own work to do, we need more people here; we don't want our people to live in Antelope, because it is unnecessary trouble. Every morning they have to be brought here, every evening they have to be sent back.

Q: THEY'D NEVER HAVE TO DISPLAY THEIR COURAGE TO ME, RIDING THAT ROAD TWO TIMES A DAY, EVERY DAY.

A: It is something, because this road, this county road, is worse than the road that goes to hell!

Q: I CANNOT YET SPEAK FROM PERSONAL AUTHORIZATION ON THAT.

A: I can, because I visited.

Q: I WILL TAKE YOUR WORD FOR IT. IS THERE A HEAVEN AND IS THERE A HELL? AND WOULD YOU LIKE TO TELL ME WHAT PART OF OREGON THEY ARE BOTH IN?

A: You are sitting in heaven and the county road goes to hell!

Q: YOU ARE A MAN WHO CERTAINLY, THERE IS NO DOUBT, LOVES THE CONTROVERSY THAT SURROUNDS YOU.

A: I love it.

Q: YOU ARE A MAN WHO I THINK WOULD LIKE TO HAVE EVERY HUMAN BEING IN THIS ENTIRE WORLD AT LEAST TO HAVE HEARD ABOUT YOU.

A: Certainly. I would like the entire world either to love me or hate me; I would not like a single individual in the whole world to ignore me. And that's the way my empire is expanding. I have more friends, I have more enemies -- every day they are increasing.

Q: YOU ARE ALSO A MAN WITH, WITHOUT QUESTION, A MAGNIFICENT SENSE OF HUMOR. AND IN ORDER TO RULE THIS EMPIRE -- NOT RULE, I'M SORRY... YOU DO NOT RULE; YOU JUST LIVE IN THIS EMPIRE -- TO

ACCEPT ALL OF THE HASSLES AND CONTROVERSIES AND MISREPRESENTATIONS AND PROBABLY SOME OF THE TRUTHS ABOUT YOURSELF, YOU WOULD HAVE TO HAVE A GREAT SENSE OF HUMOR.

A: I really enjoy....

Q: LET ME STOP YOU ONE SECOND. I READ IN THE OFFICE, IN THE WELCOME ROOM -- WHAT DO YOU CALL IT?... THE VISITORS CENTER -- THAT IF THE WORLD COULD LAUGH, IF EVERYONE IN THE WORLD COULD LAUGH OVER A TWENTY-FOUR HOUR PERIOD IT WOULD CHANGE THIS ENTIRE MALIGNANCY THAT WE ALL SEEM TO LIVE IN. THAT'S NOT WHAT YOU SAID; THAT'S WHAT I SAID.

A: It will help, but it will kill that woman.... Laughter is good medicine, but you should take as much as you can absorb; otherwise it can kill you, it can drive you mad.

Life is a very mysterious phenomenon where laughter is part and where tears also are part. Once in a while to be sad, really sad, is not bad. Sadness has its own beauty. You have just to learn to enjoy the beauty of sadness, its silence, its depth.

Life is everything all together, and we allow our people to live in all dimensions. If somebody is crying and weeping, nobody is going to stop him here. Somebody may give him a hug and go on his way. That hug was not to stop his tears, but just a spontaneous response.

We believe in life in its totality, in its days, in its nights, the sunny days and the cloudy days. We believe that everything in life can be enjoyed. You need just a little more awareness, more consciousness of what is happening. You are not your mind, you are not your body. There is a witness somewhere inside you who can go on looking at the mind, at the emotions, at the physiological reactions. That witness is you. And that witness is capable of enjoying everything, once you get centered there.

My whole method of meditation is to get centered at your witness, and then let life and its games go on. Enjoy, laugh, cry, but whatever you do, do it totally, with no shame, with no guilt.

And, as you said, I am certainly a man who enjoys being controversial. I cannot conceive a man who has any guts not being controversial. The people who are not controversial are simply hypocrites -- just goody-goody, nice to everybody, just changing their masks the whole day, to fit with everybody.

One American, Dale Carnegie, has written a book, HOW TO WIN FRIENDS AND INFLUENCE PEOPLE. My idea is "How to Influence People and Create Enemies."

Q: WHY? WHY IS IT IMPORTANT, BY COMPARISON, TO CREATE ENEMIES?

A: Because if you can create an enemy, you have created a potential friend. I will tell you one old Hassidic story.
Hassids are not traditional Jews. Jews don't accept Hassids as religious for the same reason that nobody will accept my people as religious: the Hassids sing and dance and enjoy and eat and drink.
This Hassid sent one of his disciples to the chief rabbi of Jerusalem to present him the first copy of his book that had just been published. And he said to the disciple, "When you give it to him, remember, give it to him, not to anybody else. You have to be very alert and watch what he says, remember exactly every word; what he does, remember exactly his acts."
The disciple went. The chief rabbi was sitting in his garden -- it was a beautiful evening, the sun was just setting -- and the wife of the rabbi was also sitting there. He presented the book of his Master and said, "It is my Master's book's first edition and this is the first book that has come off the press. Out of great gratitude he sends it to you."
The chief rabbi said, "That Hassid? He has some guts to send me his book." He took the book from his hand and threw it over the fence into the street. The wife said to him, "This is not right. You could have thrown that book when the disciple had gone, or you could have put it in the library where you have thousands of books. What harm could that book have done to you?"
The disciple came back and he said, "That chief rabbi is just a rotten man! He is not even a gentleman. You send him a present and he throws it with such hatred over the fence into the street. But his wife is certainly a woman worth respecting. She suggested to him,'You could have thrown it afterwards. Why hurt him? Or you could have just put it in your library where there are thousands of books. What harm could that book have done to your library?' "
The Master said to the disciple, "I am going to convert that rabbi one day, but his wife is beyond me."

Q: WHAT KIND OF A MAN ARE YOU? NOT WHAT YOU BELIEVE WE'VE TALKED ABOUT THAT -- WHAT YOUR THINKING IS.

A: Just crazy, nothing.

Q: JUST A CRAZY OLD MAN? SOMEHOW I FELT THAT YOU WOULD ANSWER SOMETHING LIKE THAT.

A: It is a fact!

Q: WHEN YOU SAY, "JUST A CRAZY MAN..." WHAT DOES THAT MEAN?

A: Exactly what it means.

Q: MENTALLY DERANGED?

A: No.

Q: WELL, IN THE INTERPRETATION OF CRAZY, TO SOME, THAT'S WHAT IT MEANS.

A: No. Crazy simply means one who has gone out of his mind. Now, two types of people go out of their minds. One is the madman that you know ordinarily as crazy; another is the meditator. He also goes out of his mind, but going out of his mind he goes higher, to the witness. The madman going out of the mind goes lower, to the mind. Both are crazy! I belong to the first category.

Q: TOMORROW I'M GOING TO TALK TO SOME PEOPLE WHO ARE INVOLVED IN YOUR CITY AND I LOOK FORWARD TO THAT. AFTER THAT I'M GOING TO TALK TO THE FORMER AND CURRENT RESIDENTS OF OUR FAVORITE SUBJECT, ANTELOPE.

A: Good!

Q: IF YOU WERE TO WANT ME TO SAY SOMETHING TO THEM DURING THIS CONVERSATION -- NONE OF WHOM I'VE MET -- WHAT WOULD IT BE, IF ANYTHING?

A: No. I have nothing to say to them, because I don't consider they will be able to understand anything. I have seen idiots around the world, but Antelope simply defeats all the idiots. You will come across them tomorrow!

Q: BHAGWAN, THANK YOU FOR YOUR TIME. I HAVE ENJOYED IT. I THINK YOU ENJOYED IT TOO.

A: I enjoyed even more!

Q: THANK YOU!

A: Good!

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #19
Chapter title: Half Of Humanity
5 August 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This discourse is published in the book: The Last Testament, Volume 1, as Chapter 30.]
Carlo Silvestro
(Swami Swatantra Sarjano)
PANORAMA
MILAN,
ITALY

QUESTION: I'D LIKE TO SAY A FEW WORDS ABOUT OUR MAGAZINE, WHICH IS A WEEKLY MAGAZINE IN ITALY WITH A REPUTATION OF AN OPINION MAKER, LIKE NEWSWEEK IN AMERICA. SINCE IT IS THE FIRST TIME ANY ITALIAN JOURNALIST HAS THIS OPPORTUNITY TO SPEAK WITH YOU, WE WILL HAVE QUITE A LOT OF QUESTIONS AND WE HOPE THAT WE HAVE AN ANSWER FOR ALL OF THEM FOR OUR READERS.
THE FIRST QUESTION IS: YOU SAY THAT YOU ARE NOT A PROPHET, YOU ARE NOT A MESSIAH, YOU ARE NOT A GOD, YOU ARE NOT A SAINT. SO WE WANT TO KNOW, WHO ARE YOU?

ANSWER: Is it necessary for anyone to be a messiah, to be a prophet, to be a son of God? Cannot one just be a human being? I am simply a human being as everybody else is, with a very little difference: I am awake and others are asleep.
It may look like a great difference to the person who is asleep, but to the awakened there is no difference at all. Just a little shaking, shocking, and the asleep one will be awake and they both can laugh at the whole stupid game of Master and disciple, of messiah... of the savior and the saved. Except laughter there will be nothing, because they will know that they are both exactly the same.
And because these names -- prophet, messiah, incarnation of God -- have been used in the past to exploit people, to create bondage for their spirits, for their psyches, these names have divided people into different religions and the result was thousands of wars. Five thousand wars in three thousand years... crusades in the name of God, people killing thousands of other people, burning people alive in the name of God, and with the authority that they are the representative of the messiah or the prophet or the successor.
I don't want to be in this company of criminals. I want simply to be an ordinary human being -- that's what I am.

Q: IN ANY CASE, DO YOU THINK THAT YOU HAVE A BIG POWER?

A: I don't have any power. I have love, big love, but love knows no power. Power is desired by those who are incapable of love. Only the loveless become politicians, power hungry. They think that if they have power over people perhaps their desire for love will be fulfilled. It is never fulfilled. No politician dies contented. It is impossible -- he has gone wrong from the very beginning. The path of power leads farther away from yourself, and from love. The path of love brings you closer home to yourself

I have immense love to give, inexhaustible love to give, but no power to order or command or tell somebody to be this, be that. I don't give any ten commandments.

Q: WHY HAVE YOU SAID THAT YOU ARE A GUEST HERE? DO YOU PLAN TO LEAVE, TO TRAVEL?

A: No. I have always been a guest wherever I was, because I belong to the whole universe. So anywhere I am, that particular place is only a guest house. I am not planning to leave -- I never plan. I can leave any moment, I may not leave ever.

Q: YOU SAID, "I MUST CHOOSE, I PREFER TO BE ZORBA RATHER THAN BUDDHA." WHAT DOES IT MEAN?

A: It means that Zorba is the foundation and Buddha is the palace. Buddha is the peak, but the foundation stones are laid by Zorba. It will be foolish to choose to be a Buddha without having the foundation stones.

I am absolutely mathematical about it: Zorba should be there and the stronger a Zorba is there, the better a Buddha is possible. So I can become Buddha any moment, Zorba is absolutely needed as the basic energy out of which the Buddha is going to be carved. Zorba is the marble rock out of which the Buddha statue has to be carved. I choose the rock... and Buddha is easy.

It is just a question of opening your eyes. I don't bother about Buddha; I am worried about people who are not Zorbas. How will they become Buddhas? They don't have the basic material out of which a Buddha is made.

And this poverty has been given to people by our religious leaders. They have been told not to be materialists. They have been told to be celibate. They have been told to live in poverty. They have been told that life is out of sin. All these things have destroyed their Zorbas. Otherwise, every man is a born Zorba the Greek.

And if everything goes according to me, every man will die as Zorba the Buddha. Between the Greek and the Buddha there is not much distance, but first you must be the Greek.

Q: WHAT DO YOU MEAN WHEN YOU SAY THAT YOU ARE THE GURU OF THE RICH PEOPLE? ARE YOU AS RICH AS MANY OF YOUR SANNYASINS? YOUR CRITICS -- AND I'M TRYING TO UNDERSTAND -- SAY THAT YOU COLLECT MONEY JUST AS YOU COLLECT THE ROLLS ROYCES AND THE WATCHES. ARE YOU AGAINST THE POOR?

A: First, I collect nothing. There is not a single thing that I possess. For thirty years I have been the poorest man in the world. And on the judgment day, if there is a line you will find me in the front, ahead of Jesus Christ.

But my people who love me are there. That is my possession, that makes me rich. Their love is more to me than power over the whole world. I would not like to become Alexander the Great. Out of their love, whatsoever they want to do, they do.

If they want me to have Rolls Royces, they are free. If they want me to have diamond watches, they are free. They know my taste, and for that simple reason my people can manage to offer me everything that not even a king or queen is capable of having.

The reason is very simple: whatever I teach can be understood only by the very intelligent and creative people. So only the cream of intelligence comes close to me.

I am against poverty and against the poor. I don't want any poverty, any poor people in the world. I am not in agreement with Jesus that the poor are the blessed; they are the cursed, they shall inherit the kingdom of hell. There is no need for anybody to be poor. We have enough intelligence, we have everything that can make the whole earth a beautiful garden. But politicians will not allow it to happen; priests will not allow it to happen, because if the garden of Eden can be created here, then what is going to happen to their paradise, their God, their hell and all the business that goes on around those bogus words which mean nothing?

Politicians would not like that there are no poor people in the world. If there are no poor people in the world, communism will lose all hold immediately. If there are no poor people in the world, it will not be easy for the capitalists to exploit anybody. In the capitalist countries, the capitalist wants there to be poor people because they can be purchased easily. In India you can purchase any vote for two rupees; that is the highest price for any vote. Now what kind of democracy can exist where you can purchase a vote for two rupees?

The rich people want the poor to exist, the priest wants the poor to exist, because without the poor, who is going to go to the church? The rich people have their Rotary Clubs, their Lion's Clubs, the Club of Rome -- who is going to the church? The priest wants the crippled, retarded, blind, sick, old, starving, all kinds of people who are not wanted at all. The priest needs them; otherwise, who is going to gather around Billy Graham?

If there are not orphans, who is going to give a Nobel prize to Mother Teresa? These people are exploiting. With all the scientific and technological developments in the twentieth century, I am saying that it is absurd to allow poverty to exist for even a single moment more.

Q: WE'VE BEEN HERE A FEW DAYS NOW AND THE COMMUNE LOOKS SO PEACEFUL AND PEOPLE ARE REALLY BEAUTIFUL. YOUR WORDS ARE VERY BEAUTIFUL, TOO. WHAT I AM ASKING MYSELF NOW IS, HOW COME THE PRESS AND THE OREGONIANS ARE SO UNUSUALLY AGGRESSIVE AGAINST YOU AND YOUR PEOPLE?

A: Because I want them to be aggressive. They are simply following my wishes. If they are not aggressive, then there is not much hope. If they are aggressive, we can put them right.
Their being aggressive is their first step towards friendship. They may not understand, but I understand it. For my whole life I have been creating enemies and turning enemies into friends. And in fact it is better this way, rather than vice-versa: you put all your energy into creating a friend and then he becomes your enemy. That is sheer wastage. The better thing is to put your whole energy into creating enemies, and then let them turn into your friends. And they are bound to turn, because whatsoever they are carrying is absurd. The moment they come to know the truth, they will become your friends.
And it is a simple psychology: the deeper their hate, the deeper will be their love, in the same proportion. I do not believe in people like Dale Carnegie. I work just in the opposite way, and you can see my business is succeeding. And where is Dale Carnegie? And how many people has he turned into friends?
I want the whole earth, the whole humanity to be divided in two camps -- no more Russian, no more American -- either they hate me or they love me, but both ways they are connected with me, and I love both of them. They are like the two wheels the bullock cart moves on; they are not aware that they are playing into my hands.

Q: YOU SAID, "I AM A SIMPLE MAN." BUT WHY DO THOUSANDS AND THOUSANDS OF PEOPLE, SIMPLE MEN, FOLLOW A SIMPLE MAN?

A: Because it is very difficult to find a simple man. Nobody is simple, everybody thinks himself extraordinary. He may not have the guts to say it -- that's another matter -- but everybody, deep down, thinks himself to be the most superior, the most beautiful, the most intelligent person in the world. And if he is not succeeding, it is because the whole world is hostile to him, everybody is preventing him. Otherwise, he would be on top of Everest.
I am a simple man with no ambition to be anybody other than I am, and these people have been attracted towards me just because of my simplicity, humanity.

They have fallen in love with an innocent man who has no secrets and no privacy, who is absolutely open, available.
You cannot find people open, available, innocent, simple. Even the most idiotic people think they are great geniuses. I am not a genius, just an average, ordinary person.

Q: DO YOU HAVE ANY KIND OF PERSONAL STRATEGY FOR THE FUTURE, ANY MESSAGE TO LEAVE? DO YOU HAVE ANY IDEA OF RAJNEESHISM AND RAJNEESHPURAM AFTER YOU? DO YOU HAVE ANY SUCCESSOR?

A: No, because all the religions who have followed those lines have turned poisonous, have turned into curses on humanity. I don't want to be a curse to humanity. I am a blessing and I want to remain a blessing.
So nobody is going to succeed me.
And my message for my people is that the moment I am gone, your religion is gone. Then whatever remains is just a corpse. Don't start worshipping the corpse. I am a free man and I want every sannyasin to be a free man. My love is the only binding force between them; otherwise, there is no theology, no belief system, no agreement on anything.
Only one thing is keeping them together around the world, and that is their love for me. When I am not there, nothing can keep them together. There is no bridge. Each sannyasin is individually connected to me. You don't ask the sun, "If one day you stop rising, what is going to happen to the rays?" You know that the rays will not be there the moment I am dead and gone.
They have lived with me, they have danced with me, they have enjoyed with me -- now they know the secret of how to enjoy life, how to live life. And there is no need to go on making a church, popes, successors... because they have done so much harm. I will not allow my people to do that.
When I am gone, then you disperse. What is the point? my love was keeping you together, and I am no more there. It is good that I am no more, because now your last attachment is also dropped. I was the last attachment to be broken, now you are totally free. You were free from your family, from your nation, from your religion, but a small thin thread of love was binding you with me. Now I am no more there; I give you the last, the final taste of freedom.
And then whatever happens, happens. I am not responsible for it. The people who will be coming after me will have the responsibility. And I never think about the future. I am so totally involved with the present... I am talking to you, and at this moment only you exist for me. The whole space has disappeared and the whole time has stopped. Just you and me... only then can there be some communication.
And I don't think about what is going to happen tomorrow. I am not thinking what you are going to write about me, and I am not going to read it, whatever

you write! It doesn't matter at all. What matters is that we enjoyed this moment together, loved this moment, laughed together, felt each other's humanity.
I cannot see anybody as a journalist, as a doctor, as an engineer. Those are not your realities, they are just your jobs. When I look at you, I put aside your journalist, I am talking directly to you. Journalism is just your way of earning bread and butter. What importance does it have? I cannot love bread and butter, but I love you as a person, as an individual, and whatsoever I am saying is totally different from what you would have found in the past with the many other people you have interviewed. Even in the future you may not come across a man like me.
My whole interest in this moment is how to help you enjoy the time you have been with me. Your magazine, your writing, does not come between me and you, so when you started introducing the magazine, I was going to stop you, but just out of politeness I listened. What concern do I have with magazines, newspapers?
My concern is purely with the individual, and then it is up to him. Whatsoever he wants to make out of it, he will make out of it. I trust in my love, and I trust in the dignity of the individual that is sitting before me, and the trust will take care of everything. I never think of tomorrow.

Q: BUT YOU DON'T THINK THAT YOU ARE RESPONSIBLE FOR ALL THE SANNYASINS LIVING HERE, FOR THE LIFE AND THE FUTURE OF THE CHILDREN I HAVE SEEN IN THIS CITY?

A: I am not responsible for anybody. I am not even a member of this commune. I live outside the City of Rajneeshpuram. And I am not a sannyasin, as you can see. It is the commune's responsibility. I am very irresponsible.
When I was leaving the university, one girl used to love me. But just the way girls are -- and particularly in India -- she was shy, and I am not the one to chase anybody. I do chasing sitting in my chair... I am just a lazy man. She loved me; and continuously she was sending messages to me. She wanted to get married to me. Then the day of departure came and we were leaving. We had passed our final examinations and then she could not contain it any more.
She pulled me aside and told me, "I have loved you for two years, but I had not the courage to say it. And you are a strange man... I made so many efforts and so many messages, and you just remained as if I am not here."
I said, "You do not know. It is just out of compassion that I have remained that way, because I am a very irresponsible man. I may marry you, and tomorrow morning I may forget all about you. I may give birth to children and then I will not bother at all what happens to you and your children."
Just out of compassion, I kept out of it. It is enough that I am carrying my own responsibility towards myself That's why I have never accepted any responsibility for anything.

India's first prime minister, Jawaharlal Nehru, wanted me to join politics. I was introduced to him by India's very old seniormost parliamentarian, who had been a member of parliament from 1916 up to 1976. He was known as the father of the Indian parliament. Jawaharlal used to stay at his palace -- his father was given the title of rajah, king, so his house had become the palace, and it was palatial.

And Jawaharlal was a man of tremendous intelligence. He talked just for five to ten minutes with me and he said, "You'd better join politics. You don't waste your time here and there, you have a great future and I am with you and I will support you."

I said, "Thank you for your generosity, but I am not going to be in any position where I am responsible for anybody."

Politics means responsibility, and if you are not responsible you have to become a hypocrite. That's what all the politicians have become. They talk about being responsible and nobody is responsible.

Now, millions of tons of food in Europe have been thrown in the ocean, but they will not send it to Ethiopia. One hundred thousand dollars were needed to take it to the ocean, and they dumped it there -- fresh fruit, fresh food. But its presence was going to bring the prices down, and that they would not like. And who cares about Ethiopia? And why should anybody care?

In speeches, everybody will talk about Ethiopia and responsibility, but the real face is totally different. The prime minister of India, Rajiv Gandhi, is one of my friends. He is Jawaharlal's grandson. If I had accepted Jawaharlal's offer, perhaps I would have been in his place. He is selling wheat to other countries while half of India is starving and dying.

And they go on talking about sympathy and compassion for the poor... but he needs nuclear weapons. For that he needs money, and India has only raw materials to sell. It has no technology, no high technology. The poor man works his whole life producing wheat and dies starving while the wheat will be sold to purchase uranium to make nuclear weapons.

I don't take anybody's responsibility. In this way I help whoever comes close to me to be responsible for himself. People who take others' responsibility are responsible for creating retarded, dependent slaves all around the world. If nobody had taken their responsibility, they would have taken the challenge of life and struggled for themselves.

I have heard about a very super-rich woman. She had come to a holiday resort, to the best hotel. Her boy, who looked perfectly young and healthy, was carried from the car on a stretcher. Even the hotel manager and others thought that there must be something wrong. The young man looked perfectly healthy, in the best of health. They said, "What is wrong with this young man? What has happened?"

She said, "Nothing has happened, but he can afford to be carried on a stretcher. Why should he walk?"

Now, this woman thinks she is making the life of the boy luxurious, but she is crippling him. He may become crippled, he may not ever be able to walk. Somebody took the whole responsibility.
It is a known fact that in the whole history of humanity, not a single genius has come from superrich families. And the reason is simple. All that he wanted was available, there was no challenge. When there is no challenge intelligence goes out of function, it is not needed.
It is strange. It should have been otherwise. The richer people should have given birth to better geniuses, better Einsteins, better painters, musicians, poets, but they have just given birth to buffalos.
I don't take anybody's responsibility, because I love people and I have compassion enough not to take their responsibility on my shoulders. They have to take their own responsibility.

Q: I WANT TO EXPLAIN TO OUR READERS WHO THE SANNYASINS ARE. IS THE SANNYASIN A SORT OF NEW MAN? YOU SAY THAT THE SANNYASINS ARE INNOCENT CHILDREN. YOUR CRITICS SAY THAT THEY ARE YOUR SLAVES, SLAVES OF YOUR ATTITUDE TOWARDS WORK, LIFE, LOVE, SEX. MAY WE HAVE YOUR OPINION OF THE SANNYASINS?

A: I don't care at all what the critics say. They all can go to hell -- the sooner the better. But I can tell you about my sannyasins.
I don't have any dogma that they can follow. I have no philosophy that they can live. I don't have any catechism that they have to repeat and cram.
Being with me, all that happens is a very delicate deprogramming, and once a person is deprogrammed I don't have any program for him. In fact, my sannyasins are simply losing what they have, and I am not going to replace it with with anything. They will lose Christianity, they will lose Hinduism, and I will not replace it with another program. I will leave them to themselves.
They are not my slaves; neither am I their slave. Slavery is a very strange phenomenon, it is a double-edged sword. The master is dependent on the slaves as much as the slaves are dependent on the masters.
I am nobody's slave, nobody is my slave, because I know that if you create a slave, you become a slave immediately. My sannyasins cannot even expect anything from me for the simple reason that I never expect anything from them. When I said that I am not celibate because I am not unnatural, a few sannyasins were shocked. They started writing letters to me, and I informed them that they cannot have any expectations about me. I can do anything I want. We don't have any contract that I will follow your expectations or you will follow mine.
I have no contract of any kind. My sannyasins cannot expect what I am going to do tomorrow. I can do anything, and they also are absolutely free. They can do anything they want: they can be here, they can leave. It is their freedom.

Out of freedom they have become sannyasins, out of freedom they can become non-sannyasins. There is no problem. It is not a church and it is not some contract which has always existed between the leader and the follower, the Master and the disciple. But this delicate thing is rarely understood -- that they both become dependent on each other.

I am reminded of a beautiful story about Diogenes. Greece has given a few beautiful people to the world, but none comparable to Diogenes. He is not much mentioned in the history of philosophies or even if he is mentioned, it is only in the footnotes -- for the simple reason that the man was so rebellious and such an outsider that the professors of philosophy would find it difficult to explain the man and his behavior.

He lived naked. Now, in India it is a tradition, there are many naked sannyasins. But in Greece, he was the only one in the whole of history who lived naked. Just like Buddha in India, he used to carry a begging bowl to beg food or to drink water.

One day he was thirsty. It was hot and he was rushing towards the river to fill his begging bowl with cool water. Just before he was going to dip his begging bowl, a dog came running in and started drinking. He stopped, for a moment he thought, and he said, "This dog seems to be more independent than me. I have to depend on this begging bowl. If a dog can manage without a begging bowl, then Diogenes is going to manage it, too."

He immediately threw the begging bowl into the river. Even in small things -- what to say about human beings -- when you make human beings your slave, you are entering into a mutual slavery, a mutual dependence.

I have no contract with my people. I have not promised them that I should be this or that, so they can never question my behavior. I remain individual; and that's what I want them to remain, individual.

Now, the persons who were shocked when I said I am not celibate had carried the idea for centuries that a religious person should be celibate -- and particularly nobody has heard that an enlightened man had made love to any woman after his enlightenment. Naturally they were shocked.

It is up to them. They can think that perhaps I am not enlightened. Perhaps it is time for them to leave this place. Perhaps they have come to a wrong person. But as far as I am concerned, I am going to be totally free, absolutely frank, no secrecy, no privacy.

I know for certain that celibacy is unnatural unless you are impotent; and I don't think any impotent person has ever become enlightened. No, there is no mention of it. In fact, just the opposite is the case. The people who became enlightened were really too much sexual, that's why I call them Zorbas; they were really too much sexual -- so much that finally they understood that there is nothing much in it. They experienced it through and through and found nothing in it. And that was the point from where they started searching for something else. That led them towards Buddhahood, enlightenment.

But once they had become enlightened -- they were fulfilling people's expectations because they wanted to be great enlightened Masters, prophets, messiahs -- they could go on fooling with women. Buddha would not even look at a woman. What cowardliness! Buddha would not allow any woman close to him, she had to remain eight feet away.
Is this enlightenment? so afraid, so shaky that even a woman coming close and you become afraid? This is repression, this is not enlightenment.
I want to declare to the whole world that unenlightened people can have only sexual relationships, which they call love. This is not right. They should stop calling it making love; they are simply making sex. Only an enlightened person can make love, because it is no more his need. He can be without it for years and not even for a single moment will he feel its need. But he can enjoy it as fun.
I can play cards; it is not a need. I can drink once in a while; it does not disturb my enlightenment. I can make love. I don't see... but it can disturb people's idea of enlightenment. That is their business. My enlightenment is not made of such fragile matter. It cannot be disturbed by anything. In fact, they have been asking whether enlightened people transcend sex, and I have sent the answer to them that the enlightened person finally transcends enlightenment, too.
And I have transcended enlightenment, too. Now I am again the same old ordinary man I was before all this round trip jet journey. I am back home.
I have passed through everything, all meditation, all enlightenment, and come back home, with new eyes, new clarity, new vision. It is almost like living continuously on LSD.

Q: WHY ARE SO MANY WOMEN SANNYASINS?

A: Because I am a man, and it is natural for women to be attracted to me. You can see my grey beard. This beautiful grey beard is the work of the ladies. The whole credit goes to them; otherwise, I would be having a black beard by this time. But so many ladies... but I don't bother about the color of the beard -- the grey is so beautiful!

Q: IT SEEMS THE WHOLE COMMUNE IS RUN BY WOMEN. IS THERE A PARTICULAR PURPOSE OR STRATEGY TO THAT?

A: Certainly there is a particular strategy. Man has dominated women for centuries and forced the idea on them that they are the weaker sex, that they cannot do anything that man can do. They can do small homely things -- that is their world. I want to destroy that idea completely. And you can see I have destroyed it.
My communes are run by women, and they have proved far superior to men in every possible way. My sannyasins are doing better business than any man can do, finding better bargains than any man can find. I wanted it to be a solid

argument before the whole of humanity that women are not inferior, that if you give them a chance, they can even prove superior in many matters. At least they are going to prove equal.
And this is a strange way: to keep half of humanity in a downtrodden state. How much is the loss? -- half of humanity means that women, if they were accepted equally, would have produced a Dostoevsky, a Turgenev, a Chekhov, a Gorky, a van Gogh, a Picasso, a Nijinsky. They may have proved a Buddha, a Jesus.... Half of humanity! -- it is a vast ocean to whom you have denied all possibilities of creation, expression. And you have behaved with women as if they are cattle, not human beings.
It is not going to be so in my commune.
But I do not agree with the liberation movement of women, because that is going in a reactionary way, creating hate for men -- so much so that their basic approach is now that no woman should love any man, that they should all be lesbians.
Here, women are running the whole commune, everything, but no man who is here has ever felt that he is inferior. In fact, for the first time he feels a respect for women. He can see the dignity of women. Every day I receive letters from my male sannyasins asking, "What is happening? The commune sannyasins, the women, are becoming juicier and juicier, more and more graceful, more and more beautiful. And they are working so hard!"
For the first time, they have been given the chance to show their mettle. It is not a loss to men: they have found a companion, equal to themselves, side by side with them.
You were missing half of humanity.... And remember, because you have repressed that half, that half was trying to take revenge in every possible way. Of course, the woman has her own ways of taking revenge, and every man knows how the woman can take revenge. Every woman has been taking it for centuries. She will be nagging the husband, she will be spying on the husband. She will make the husband just a henpecked person.
All husbands are henpecked! I have never come across another category. Outside they may roar like lions, but that is not to be believed. Just look through the keyhole in their houses -- the woman is roaring and the husband is hiding like a rat behind this chair, behind that table. It is natural, because if you repress their energy, somehow they are going to revolt against it. Here, men also are feeling tremendously relieved because no woman is nagging them.
Women's liberation is automatically men's liberation. Women's slavery is automatically men's slavery. They go together.
But this is only a transitory period.... Once I have proved my point, all around the world in different countries and different communes -- even where I am not present -- women will be on the top, once the point is proved and people can see.
Just four years ago, when we came here, we did not have a single dollar. My women sannyasins managed to purchase 126 square miles, an area three times

bigger than New York. In four years we have poured almost two hundred million dollars into creating this oasis, and all has been managed by women. They have proved their mettle -- and without insulting men, without putting them down, without in any way taking revenge. And they are not lesbians.

So it is, in fact, a tremendous revolution which is needed, which has been needed for centuries. And the sooner the whole world goes the way my communes function, the better, because I don't think women will be ready to use nuclear weapons in the third world war. Women won't want to kill; that is not part of their feminine psychology. They would like people to come closer, to be more loving.

If the world is run by women -- and man can take his place more significantly in scientific research, in the service of life and creativity -- and the governments and all other functional things are run by women, we will have a tremendous balance.

It will take a little time for women to produce Einstein and Picasso and Michelangelo. It will take a little time to bring a Mozart, a Leonardo da Vinci, because for thousands of years -- in fact, for the whole history -- they have been repressed, so it will need a little time. And once the repression changes into expression, it will be just like land which has been lying fallow for thousands of years gathering all kinds of fertilizers, rain water, and nobody cultivating it. When you cultivate it, it is going to give you a bumper crop. All other fields will look poor because they have been exploited every year; they have lost their energy to produce more.

The same is the situation of the human mind. The feminine mind has not been used, has not been allowed to function. If it is allowed, it may take a quantum leap. And it will be a blessing for all.

An intelligent woman, respected as equal to men in the society, will not become a lesbian because it is unnatural, absolutely unnatural. She will be heterosexual. And if all women turn to heterosexuality, we will be declaring war on homosexuality, too, because from where are they going to find men? They will chase the homosexuals to their deaths. They are chasing them here. We have got a few homosexuals, and they go on writing letters of complaint to me: "We are homosexuals and women are chasing us. We are not interested, but we do not want even to declare that we are homosexual." I say, "What can I do? Drop your homosexuality."

We can make a better world together. Men and women should be really half-and-half of a whole. There are qualities which men have and women do not have; there are qualities which women have and men do not have. Both together, the human being will be richer in every possible way.

Just think of a woman pilot dropping the atom bomb on Hiroshima and Nagasaki. I cannot conceive of it. If there had been a woman pilot, she would have refused to follow the order. She would have preferred to be shot dead, but she would not go to kill innocent people who have nothing to do with war.

And anyway, the war was ending. Germany was already on its knees, it was only a question of a week or two until Japan would surrender. There was no need of an atom bomb to create a hell for two beautiful cities.
I don't think a woman could have done that. A woman would rather have said, "You can court-martial me. You can shoot me. That seems to be easier than killing 100,000 people in one city, and 120,000 people in another city."
But what did the man pilot do? He dropped atom bombs on both the cities, came back to his base, had a good dinner, smoked the best cigar, joked with his friends, and went to sleep with a woman. In the morning when the journalists reached him, they asked the man if it had been very difficult for him to sleep having caused 220,000 people's deaths.
He said, "No, I slept beautifully. I did my duty, and once the duty was fulfilled -- and it was a great duty to be fulfilled -- I was feeling so happy that I managed to do it that I went to sleep with a woman and had a beautiful sleep."
Because it had been his orders, President Truman was asked early in the morning the next day, "How was your night?" He said, "I felt immensely relieved. Now there is no question of the war being prolonged any more. Not only that, we have made a point to the whole world: Don't come in conflict with America, otherwise the result will be more Hiroshimas, more Nagasakis" -- not a single word of sympathy for those innocent people. They were civilians, they were not in military camps.
I have seen a picture that I cannot forget. One friend from Japan sent me a photograph of a small child, maybe eight or nine years old. His bag hanging on his shoulder, his books in the bag, he was going upstairs into the attic which was allotted to him as his place to study and sleep. And just when he was on the middle of the staircase, the atom bomb fell on Hiroshima. The boy simply got burned and got stuck into the wall -- just a burned body with a burned bag, burned books.
When I saw that picture, I could not believe that man can do this to man. If a woman was president of America, I don't think this could have happened. Man has been given enough chance; now let the woman come up, and man can pour his energies more into scientific fields. Meanwhile, women will pick things up.
Yes, there is a certain basic strategy why my communes are run by women. But you can meet my male sannyasins. They are not in any way thought to be inferior. No woman is treating them as inferior in the way they have always treated women as inferior.
Perhaps it is that the male ego functions in that way: unless it makes somebody feel inferior, it is not satisfied. The woman functions in a different way: unless she feels somebody needing her, desiring her, she feels frustrated. A man's need seems to be to dominate, and the woman's need seems to be to be needed. That is a far better need -- to be needed.
And I am doing an experiment, I am not a philosopher. I hate philosophy because it is simply a wastage of time. My commune is my experiment, and

everything that I have envisioned has come true in it. The same can happen all over the world. This is a prototype.

Q: YOU HAVE ALSO SAID, "WE ARE NOT MISSIONARIES." WHY? DON'T YOU WANT MORE SANNYASINS?

A: We are not missionaries because we don't want anybody to be converted into sannyasins by us. We are available for anybody who wants to join us. He is welcome. We are receptive to anybody without conditions, but we are not going after people like the Christian missionaries or the Witnesses of Jehovah, forcing their Bible on you, knocking on your doors every morning. We are not going to knock on anybody's door.

Yes, we will spread the message -- that's why I am talking with you. We will spread the message and if anybody wants to come with us and join our caravan, we are perfectly happy.

But this is a very different approach from missionaries. It is not aggressive, it is receptive; it is not masculine, it is feminine. That is the difference I make between these two psychologies. The male psychology is to go after the woman -- that is the missionary. The woman's psychology is to escape from the missionary, but remain receptive. She never escapes too much. She always remains within the boundary so you can catch hold of her, but she lures by running away. By running away she becomes more beautiful; by running away she becomes a dream girl a very homely girl can become a dream girl.

I trust in the feminine psychology because these missionary types of people around the world are aggressive. They are in a kind of war; very subtle, but it is a war. They are in politics -- very subtle, but it is a politics of numbers. What has the pope got that he should be respected? I have seen his statements, which are not even his statements, his secretary goes on writing them. Even then, all those statements prove only a thick head. Nothing of importance ever comes out of these popes.

And the missionaries I have been in touch with in India were of a very high caliber -- men like Stanley Jones -- but the whole effort is how to convert people into Christianity. What did Stanley Jones do? He created a Christian ashram. To exploit Hindus, he used the word ashram. He managed his ashram just the way Hindus live in their ashrams: getting up early in the morning, going to the Ganges for the bath, then going to the church to pray. Every ritual of the Hindus was copied.

The only difference was that Krishna was missing, and there was Christ. And that is not much of a difference because there are scholars who say that Christ never existed, it is just another name for Krishna. I was looking at how Krishna can become Christ in Indian languages, and then I came across Bengali: in Bengali, Krishna is called Christo. Now that comes very close to Christ.

There are scholars who think there has never been any Christ, it was just that the story of Krishna, changing through many forms, finally took this Aramaic transformation; and Christianity was born out.of a borrowed myth.
I asked Stanley Jones, "Can't you see your diplomacy? Whom do you want to deceive?" He used to wear Hindu clothes. In his ashram, everybody used to wear Hindu clothes. Nobody could smoke there. No alcohol was allowed. But the whole point was somehow to attract Hindus there, and then convert them.
This is aggression, violence. It is interfering into your inner being. It is far worse than cutting off your head. At least I cut off your head without changing you. I respect you as you are and cut off your head. They don't cut your head, but they destroy your mind, they reprogram you. They replace Krishna with Christ, they put a cross in place of a flute -- which is an ugly replacement.
The flute is life-affirming and the cross is death-oriented. No Jonestown could have ever happened under Hinduism, Buddhism, Jainism. It is impossible. A Jonestown needed absolutely a Christian context. It needed a cross.
And Reverend Jim Jones was doing exactly the same foolishness that Jesus did. He was simply following step by step. Jesus had told his people that they would be coming with him into the kingdom of God. Of course, he would be going first to make arrangements for them. And for two thousand years he has been making arrangements -- and the idiots are still waiting.
Jim Jones was more contemporary. He thought it better to take the whole lot, the whole congregation with him. Why should he go first and prepare the ground? -- and then Jesus has not been heard from for two thousand years. Perhaps people are not allowed to come back here; it seems to be better to take everybody with.... This could happen only in a Christian context.
If women are leaders in politics, leaders in science, leaders in poetry, painting, they will bring a totally new perspective to everything. Women should be professors, educationists, they should be everywhere. They are half of the world -- they own half the world. And my experience here is that they are tremendously capable, reliable. You can trust them more because they connect with you not from the head, but from the heart.

Q: YOU SAY YOU CAN'T COEXIST WITH THE REST OF THE WORLD. DO YOU WANT A RED OREGON, A RED WORLD? AND ARE YOU READY TO FIGHT FOR THIS PURPOSE?

A: We never plan anything, but we are always ready to fight for human rights. Whatever the consequence, we will fight for democracy. We will fight for freedom. We will fight for respect towards the individual. We will fight for America and will not allow Americans to destroy its beauty, its Constitution, its Declaration of Independence. We are on the side of America, and the Oregonians are not. That is my basic standpoint.

We have not committed a single crime, we have not done anything illegal. We have not done anything against the Constitution, and the State of Oregon has done everything against the Constitution, against the law. They have used the law in a way it has never been used against anybody. They have taken advantage of the loopholes in the law.
But my commune is not Reverend Jim Jones' uneducated black people. My commune has four hundred law experts. There is no other firm in the whole world which has four hundred law experts.
We are going to fight to the very end. And remember, we are fighting for the values America stands for, and they are fighting against their own values, their own Constitution, their own law.
They are fascists, and I don't think fascism can win. We are a small minority, but we are not threatened by them; they are a big majority, and they are threatened by us. You can see clearly what is the reason.
The reason is that we are standing for their Constitution, and they are going against their own Constitution. In the courts they are getting defeated everywhere. In the lower courts perhaps they may succeed, because they belong to the state, they are under the pressure of the state; but as we move higher, our number of wins gets bigger.
The moment we are in the federal courts, we immediately win. And I am absolutely certain I myself am going to stand in the Supreme Court of America to save the Constitution of America against all those who want to prostitute it.
Is it a Constitution or a prostitution?
We are not threatened, we are really enjoying the whole game.
Anything more?

Q: THE LAST QUESTION! ONCE YOU SPOKE ABOUT A HOLOCAUST BETWEEN 1984 AND 1999. WHAT DOES IT MEAN?

A: It means nothing. Eat more spaghetti! There will be no holocaust.

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #20
Chapter title: none
6 August 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This is a typed tape transcript and has not been edited or published, as of August 1992. It is for reference use only. The interviewer's remarks have been omitted where not relevant to Osho's words]
INTERVIEW WITH PENNY ALLEN, FREELANCE JOURNALIST, SISTERS, OREGON

QUESTION:* I HAVE READ THAT YOUR GOAL IS TO MAKE ENLIGHTENMENT AVAILABLE TO AS MANY PEOPLE AS POSSIBLE. NOW I HAVE HEARD THAT YOU'RE SAYING THAT ENLIGHTENMENT IS NOT ALL ITS CRACKED UP TO BE, AND THAT YOU WANT TO BE NORMAL. WHAT'S HAPPENING?

ANSWER: Enlightenment is only the beginning; there is infinity to go for. Enlightenment is only a door, and then there is an unending existence, an unending evolution, expansion.
The people who are unconscious, for them enlightenment is the goal; they are not aware of the fact that enlightenment is only a door. Once you have reached it, then a new kind of pilgrimage starts. Up to this door, you were an entity. Beyond this door, you will not be an entity. You will be just pure consciousness without a body, without a mind; you will be just a fragrance which will go on spreading all over existence.
And the fragrance is luminous. It is full of awareness. It knows itself and it knows the whole existence around it -- not as separate, but part, a kind of at-one-ment. It is the universe, and the universe is it; there is no division, no duality.
Now the observer becomes the observed; the seer becomes the seen. He is both. It is difficult to explain to people who have not even thought about the door, whose lives go on like sleepwalkers, somnambulists. They live, but at the very minimum level without any intensity, without any totality.
And this calamity has happened because of a few vested interests. The priest, the politician, all those who have been in power. They never wanted man to be awake, because if humanity consists of awakened individuals, there is not going to be any Christianity. There is not going to be any Hinduism. there is not going to be any American, and Russian, any German. There is not going to be the white man and the black man; there is not going to be man the superior and woman the inferior. All these stupidities will disappear.

For the awakened man, the whole existence is one. Not only this earth, but now he is joined with the stars, too. And in his vision the smallest blade of grass is as significant and important to existence as the biggest star millions of light years away.
The priest does not want people to be awake because they can be exploited only when they are asleep. The politician does not want people to be awake; otherwise, they will not be democrats, republicans, socialists and communists. They will be individuals intelligent and conscious enough to decide for themselves. They will not need parties and religions and cults and all their struggles and squabbles.
The vested interests have kept man almost drugged. I don't agree with Karl Marx on any other point, but on one point I absolutely agree with him -- religion is the opium of the people. On that point also I have my reservations.
First, he was only aware of Western religions: Judaism -- he was a Jew; Christianity -- which is an offshoot of Judaism; and a little bit of Islam -- that, too, is an offshoot of Judaism. He had no knowledge about the Eastern religions: Buddhism, Jainism, Tao, Zen. They were unknown dimensions to him.
Secondly, he was not aware he could not be aware, of me and my people -- we were not yet there -- and a totally new quality of religion which I call religiousness. Not religion, but religiousness; no God, but godliness. I change every noun, every pronoun into a verb because existence is a verb, it is not a noun. It is continuously growing, flowing, expanding.
Now physicists say that the stars you see in the night are continuously running farther away from the center. We don't know where the center is; we don't know where they are going, and the speed is immense -- 186,000 miles per second. With that speed, although the stars are going farther and farther away, this continuous growth needs not static things but growing things.
That's why you will find so many contradictions in me. I have never stopped anywhere. I have been going in absolute tune with existence, wherever it leads. And if it contradicts my yesterdays, it is perfectly okay. They are dead anyway.
I am happy that I am in tune in the present moment. I am happy that I know the secret of being in the present, because time has no other tense. It is always now. And once you know the secret of being in the now, you have known the greatest mystery of existence.
But the people who are in power would like human beings to remain involved and occupied with very stupid things -- communism, socialism, this party, that party, Christianity, Hinduism. The people are burdened with their own problems. They, too, are mostly created.
For example, marriage is a problem created by the priests. It is unnatural, it has not happened naturally. Now the man is being nagged by the wife; the wife is being continuously put down by the man. Then there are children. And the Pope and Mother Teresa go on telling people that these children are sent by God, so don't use any birth control methods -- that's sin.

So people have dozens of children, thousands of worries. How to bring them up? How to educate them? We have made a world for human beings so difficult, and on top of it there is hell. If you just slip a little bit, you fall into eternal hell. For small things. And there is paradise luring you with all those things every religion condemns here on earth. And the saints are enjoying all those things there.

I have heard a story of a Zen Master. He was always teaching his disciples that celibacy is categorical. Without it, you cannot enter into nirvana, the kingdom of God. The poor disciples were trying hard to be celibate. It is really doing something unnatural, almost impossible. They were all feeling guilty. And then the Master died. His last words were, "Remember celibacy is the foundation of religion."

After a few days, one of the disciples died, and the moment he entered paradise he was so full of joy that now he would be meeting his Master. He had been with the Master for thirty, forty years.

He saw the Master sitting by the bank of a beautiful river under the shadow of a very huge and ancient tree, with a beautiful naked woman sitting in his lap. The disciple could not believe his eyes. Still just out of old habit, he fell in the Master's feet and asked, "What is happening? What happened to celibacy?" The Master said, "You will always remain an idiot! This is the reward for all my celibacy. Now I can enjoy as many women as I want, and here no woman grows old, no woman perspires, no woman has menstrual periods. You cannot improve upon the women that are available here. Their very body is fragrant; they don't use French perfumes." But the poor disciple was at a loss. It was such a shock.

This is the situation of all the religions. All the things that they deny to people here, they will give a million times more as a reward in paradise. Naturally, the poor human being is pulled. To be, or not to be? To enjoy a woman here or to wait just a few years more and enjoy as many women as you want for eternity. No marriage happens in heaven; all marriages happen in the churches. And they say that marriage is made in heaven, but in heaven there are no couples, only individuals.

The poor man is pulled apart. His fear of hell represses him; his greed for heaven represses him. With so many problems of day to day living he has no time to think of enlightenment. He has no time to think that there is anything more than this miserable world.

And this is a created situation, because only in such a situation can you keep them enslaved. You can send them to Vietnam to kill innocent people without any hate. You can send your pilots to destroy Hiroshima and Nagasaki within seconds without any feeling. You have turned people into robots. Millions of people around the earth are in the armies, just functioning like robots. And those who are not in the armies are also imprisoned in some kind of social, political, religious ideology. It is so difficult to find an individual who is clean, completely clean.

And that's my whole effort: to create a complete clean human being, unburdened of the past, unburdened of any guilt. unburdened of fear and greed, unburdened of politicians and priests. Just clean, so clean that he becomes a mirror. And in that mirror, you see for the first time where the door is. In that mirror, the door reflects.

Just as our eyes are mirrors in which things reflect -- we find where the table is and where the chair is because our two eyes are mirroring things around us -- when a man is completely clean, silent, serene, his inner being becomes a mirror and the inward door that was always there is reflected in it. And the magnetism of the door is such that once one has seen it, there is no way to escape from it.

You start moving toward that door the way a moth moves toward a flame knowing perfectly that coming closer to the flame he is going to be burned, he is going to die. But some strange attraction, the moth is ready to die.

The same is the situation when you see the door of enlightenment for the first time. You become the moth and the door becomes the flame. You know you are going to die; but at the same time you know that you are going to be reborn on the other side.

This is resurrection.

Q:* IF I COULD ASK YOU A QUESTION ABOUT YOUR PAST.... WHEN YOU WERE LOOKING FOR THAT DOOR, YOU SPENT A YEAR WHEN YOU WERE MAD -- IN WHICH YOU COULDN'T FORMULATE A SENTENCE -- AND YOU LOST YOUR PERSPECTIVE. IS THIS CORRECT? IS THAT THE TIME THAT YOU WERE LOOKING FOR THAT DOOR?

A:* I have been looking for that door as long as I remember, from my very childhood. I must have carried that idea from my past life because I don't remember a single day in my childhood in this life that I was not looking for it.

And as far as my craziness is concerned, naturally I was thought crazy by everybody. I never played with any children. I never could find any way to communicate with the children of my own age. To me, they looked stupid, doing all kinds of idiotic things. I never joined any football team, volleyball team, hockey team; of course, they all thought me crazy. And as far as I was concerned, as I grew I started looking at the whole world as crazy.

In the last year -- when I was twenty-one -- it was a time of nervous breakdown and breakthrough. Naturally, those who loved me, my family, my friends, my professors, could understand a little bit what was going on in me -- why I was so different from other children, why I would go on sitting for hours with closed eyes, why I sat by the bank of the river and went on looking at the sky for hours, sometimes for the whole night. Naturally the people who could not understand such things -- and I did not expect them to understand -- thought me mad.

In my own home, I had become almost absent. I would be there in the room and my mother would be asking me, "If you see someone in the house, just tell me,

because I don't see anybody here and I have to send somebody to fetch some fruits or some vegetable from the market." The market was not far away, just two minutes walk; but I was not considered to be anybody. They had accepted the fact that I was good for nothing.

And they were right. In the morning they would send me to purchase something which was needed immediately and I would return in the night. And then I would say, "I think you had sent me for something, but I completely forgot about it. If you remind me, I can run again." And they said, "Please, excuse us that we sent you. Now if you go again, then the whole night nobody knows when you will turn up."

By and by they stopped asking me anything, and slowly, slowly they started feeling as if I were not there. And I loved it, the way I had become a nothingness, a nobody, an absence.

That one year was tremendous. I was surrounded with nothingness, emptiness. I had lost all contact with the world. If they reminded me to take a bath, I would go on taking the bath for hours. Then they had to knock on the door, "Now come out of the bathroom. You have taken enough bath for one month. Just come out."

If they reminded me to eat, I ate; otherwise, days would pass and I would not eat. Not that I was fasting, I had no idea about eating or fasting. My whole concern was to go deeper and deeper into myself, and the door was so magnetic, the pull was so immense -- like what physicists now call black holes.

They say there are black holes in existence. If a star comes by chance to a black hole, it is pulled into the black hole. There is no way to resist that pull, and to go into the black hole is to go into destruction. We don't know what happens on the other side. My idea, for which some physicist has to find evidence, is that the black hole on this side is a white hole on the other side. The hole cannot be just one side; it is a tunnel.

I have experienced it in myself. Perhaps on a bigger scale the same happens in the universe. The star dies; as far as we can see, it disappears. But every moment new stars are being born. From where? Where is their womb?

It is simple arithmetic that the black hole was just a womb -- the old disappeared into it, and the new is born. This I have experienced in myself -- I am not a physicist. That one year of tremendous pull made me farther and farther away from people; so much so, that I would not recognize my own mother. I might not recognize my own father. So far that there were times I forgot my own name. I tried hard, but there was no way to find what my name used to be.

Naturally, for everybody that one year I was mad; but, to me, that madness became meditation and the ultimate of that madness opened the door.

I passed through it. I am now beyond enlightenment -- on the other side of the door.

Q:* EVEN THOUGH YOU'RE BEYOND ENLIGHTENMENT ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE DOOR, DO YOU STILL HAVE BLACK MOMENTS? FOR

EXAMPLE, THIS SPRING WHEN YOU STOPPED GIVING DISCOURSES FOR TWO MONTHS, WHERE WERE YOU? WERE YOU IN THE BLACK HOLE?

A:* No. I have passed the black hole. Now I am always in the white house. Presidents will come and go, but I am going to remain in the white house all the time.

Q:* IS THERE A REASON WHY YOU WERE SILENT FOR ABOUT TWO MONTHS AROUND APRIL AND MAY OF THIS YEAR?

A:* Yes. I was sick at that time. I was not feeling fell, so I simply rested. But I was not in silence.

Q:* IT WASN'T A LOSS OF PERSPECTIVE, OR SOMETHING LIKE THAT?

A:* No, nothing. That cannot happen now. That is an impossibility.

Q:* YOU HAVE SAID THAT HERE ON THE RANCH, IN THE BUDDHAFIELD, YOUR SANNYASINS EXPERIENCE AND SHARE MOODS; THAT JOY IS CONTAGIOUS. DOES A BAD MOOD EVER PASS THROUGH THE COMMUNE?

A:* Just wait a minute. First let me finish your last question; otherwise you will be in a difficulty to figure it out.
For three and a half years I was silent to sort out those people who were hanging around my words, who were enchanted by my words, who loved my voice, who loved the way I speak, I argue. But that is not my basic function. I speak to help you to be silent. I say something so that you can go beyond words.
I use words to help you to go into wordlessness. It is just like having a thorn in the foot, with another thorn you pull it out. Your mind is full of birds, so many and so much chattering, yakketty-yak, yakketty-yak. It goes on and on.
But then, people became intoxicated with my words. That was not my purpose. I continuously insisted, "Don't be concerned with my words; be concerned with my silences, the gaps between the words, the gaps between the lines."
Three years I remained silent. Those few remained hanging around for a few months. Some managed to hang around for one or two years. Three years was too much; by and by they all left me thinking that I was going to remain silent forever. The day I saw that all those people who were interested in my words but not in silence had left, it was time to speak.
And this speaking is totally different from the speaking that was there three and a half years ago. I was speaking to people who were listening through the head. I was arguing, I was rationalizing, I was doing everything to convince their heads. Now there is no need of that. I have got people with whom I can talk heart to

heart. My words don't pass their heads. There is no scrutiny in their heads when they hear my words. My words simply penetrate directly into their hearts.
Albert Einstein has proved according to non-Euclidean geometry that there are no straight lines in existence. He is right as far as objective lines are concerned. Every line is a curve -- of a very big circle, so you cannot see it as a curve -- if you go on drawing the line on both ends, one day you will find that you have made a circle.
In existence there are no straight lines. If we draw a straight line here on the floor, it looks absolutely straight, but it cannot be because the earth is round. This small straight line is just a piece of a vast round which goes around the earth.
Einstein is dead; otherwise I would have said to him that I know there are lines which go straight, too. But those lines are not of geometry, they are lines of love.
I experience it every day. My being and my sannyasins' beings are joined not by curved lines but by straight lines. Now it is a totally different affair. I can say whatsoever I want to say. Three and a half years ago I had to say things which people wanted to hear. I had to drop a few things because they would not be able to digest them. I had to impose interpretations on Jesus on Krishna, on Buddha for the simple reason that if I impose that interpretation on Jesus, I can have a certain communication with the Christian. We can come close.
Now I have my own people so I don't take the trouble to interpret Jesus, Mohammed, Mahavira, Buddha, Lao Tzu. On the contrary, all the things that I left unsaid before my silence began I am saying now. And the interpretations that I had managed through Jesus's mouth I am taking back and putting Jesus in his own place.
So my work has really started now. Before the silent period, I was just preparing the ground and finding the people who will be able to remain with me in every climate, in every season, in every change. I am not a thinker who remains consistent. Because I am an existential man who moves with existence, only those who don't bother about what I said yesterday can move with me. If today I am contradicting it, they don't worry about it.
One thing is to be understood very clearly: to my sannyasins whatever I am saying is not important; what is important is that I am saying it. Whatever is being said has no significance; but in saying it on my part and hearing it on their part, something else side by side with the words has transferred.
Those words were just vehicles creating a way for something which cannot be said, cannot be reduced to language at all. that's why they are never concerned about contradictions. I am not creating a philosophy or a theology. It is a religious field of experience.
Now, you were asking something.... You can ask.

Q:* I ASKED ABOUT THE ENERGY FIELD HERE; AND I WAS WONDERING IF IT EVER HAPPENED, PARTICULARLY WHEN YOU WERE NOT FEELING

WELL, THAT A MELANCHOLY CAUGHT ON? OR, IS THE ENERGY HERE ALWAYS POSITIVE?

A:* It is always positive. My sickness is a physical thing; the energy has nothing to do with my body. The energy is never sick. It is never negative.

I mean the energy of an enlightened person is never negative. the energy of an unenlightened person is always negative. The unenlightened knows nothing of positive energy. He only reads books on positive thinking and this and that. Idiots like Norman Vincent Peale go on writing books on positive thinking, and millions of people read those books thinking that perhaps by positive thinking they can become millionaires, by positive thinking they can produce palaces. And they don't bother about how many palaces Norman Vincent Peale has created. They don't bother at all that Rockefeller has never read Peale, that Henry Ford has no idea of Peale.

It is not a question of positive thinking. Positive thinking is appealing only to negative people, because they know their negativity continuously. But without enlightenment, you cannot have positive energy. So I saw throw away all those books on positive thinking. They are deluding you. They are giving you a sense as if without being enlightened you can be positive. That is impossible.

Positivity is beyond the door of enlightenment. Negativity is on this side. The night is on this side -- the black hole -- and the day is on the other side where the sun never sets.

So as far as I am concerned, I am always overflowing with energy. My body can be sick -- but that makes no difference to my innermost being; it remains exactly the same. and whether I am speaking or silent, my field is vibrating, is ready to welcome anybody who comes with an open heart, is ready to receive into the innermost center of the energy field one who is not resistant, not reluctant, but is ready, vulnerable, open, is willing to risk.

There is a field already existing. And the moment you enter Rajneeshpuram, you will feel a different air, a different milieu, a different silence, a different loving energy all over the place. But those who come with closed eyes and closed heart, those who come with prejudices already determined with their conclusions -- naturally, they come, they go, and they remain untouched by the immense energy that was available, free.

I have been known around the world as the free sex guru. Now they should change it because things have gone far beyond sex. Sex is energy, the energy of the sleepy man. The moment a man becomes enlightened, the same energy turns into a positive field. Now they should start calling me the free energy guru, because I have traveled miles, and the go on calling me something which I have left far behind.

Even if I die and my people can remain rejoicing, loving, the energy field will remain. I cannot take it away with me. But if they start being ordinary again, jealous, full of hate, hostility, violence, then they will destroy the energy field.

I have created the energy field; now it is existing almost independent of me. And my whole effort is that while I am alive I should detach myself completely from the energy field and see whether my people can manage it.
And that's what I am doing every day. I am giving more and more responsibility to my people. I am sending people from one commune to another. If twenty people are ready here, I send them to Germany. If in Japan they need, I send people there. So twenty people go to Germany and from that commune twenty people come here. So in both ways it is a great exchange program. My twenty people there will try to create the energy field, and those twenty people here will learn how energy fields are created and how one should preserve them.
Soon I want a belt of energy around the earth. And as far as I am concerned that energy belt is the only hope for life to exist beyond this century. Otherwise the politicians have already arranged for global death.

Q:* HOW CAN THE ENERGY FIELD, THE GESTALT, OF THIS PLACE CONTINUE WITH NO CHILDREN BEING BORN? I CERTAINLY UNDERSTAND YOUR VIEWS ON THAT SUBJECT AND I AGREE WITH THEM. I JUST WONDER HOW WILL YOU ACCOUNT FOR THAT? HOW CAN IT CONTINUE AND EVERYONE JUST GETS OLDER AND THERE ARE NO YOUNG PEOPLE COMING UP?

A:* They will be coming. I am telling my people not to produce children. Enough young people are all around the world. why bother creating children and waste your energy in growing them up? I need all that energy for my energy field. So right now I cannot spend any amount of energy in giving birth to children and rearing them.
And what is the use when all over the world there are millions of young people frustrated with the whole society, searching for a new way of life? It is so easy. When you can get ready-made young people, it is simply uneconomical to produce children. And we are going to get hold of the whole youth because there is no competitor around.
The young man has fallen away from the old generation and the old people are trying hard to bridge the gap. Their priests are learning psychology, doing research work, getting Ph.D.s in psychology, in psychiatry and philosophy to figure out somehow what has happened, why this generation gap goes on becoming bigger and bigger and bigger.
But they are not going to be able to bridge it for the simple reason that they are still trying to bridge it so that they can keep the young people in the old fold. The young people need a milieu of freedom, love, responsibility, joy. They are not concerned with your God, whether he exists or not. They are not interested in your heaven and hell.
The whole old mind is so out of date that just by changing words and paraphrasing old things into new language, they are not going to manage to

fulfill the needs of the young people. In fact they are the cause of creating this whole frustration, anxiety, anguish in young people all around the world.
I am the alternative. I will tell my people to produce children only when we cannot get any from the ready-made market. And I don't think that is going to happen. The ready-made market is so big, and people are continuously bringing new children into the world, not knowing that they are bringing people for me. They would stop if they knew that Pope the Polack and Mother Teresa-type people are all working for me by preventing people from using birth control methods, the pill, by teaching people that abortion is a sin. They don't know -- unknowingly, they are my agents. They are working; and, for centuries, you need not worry, new people will be coming in.
And when we have enough energy field that the whole earth is surrounded by a certain belt of energy, then I can tell to my people: it is time. You produce. Certainly your children will be far better. They will come out of your meditativeness, out of your love. They will not be accidental. But not now. The way I have got all these people from ready-made shops -- I am going to continue my business the same way.

Q:* I KNOW THAT YOU HAVE SAID THAT YOU DON'T WORRY ABOUT WHAT THE COMMUNITY IN OREGON THINKS ABOUT YOU; THAT THEY WORRY ABOUT YOU, YOU DON'T WORRY ABOUT THEM. BUT I WANTED TO ASK SOMETHING ABOUT THE POLARIZATION THAT HAS GONE ON FOR FOUR YEARS OR SO IN OREGON. I FINALLY CAME TO THE CONCLUSION THAT THE POLARIZATION WAS A KIND OF PUBLIC DYNAMIC MEDITATION THAT YOU WERE CARRYING ON TO TRY AND INCREASE TENSION FOR A LONG TIME SO THAT AFTER A WHILE IT WOULD RELAX. YOU'RE SHAKING YOUR HEAD, "YES."

A:* I will go on finding new ways to create more and more madness in the Oregonians because that is one of my ways of working. That's what I have been doing in India, and I am going to do it in America. Wherever I am, my way of finding friends is to create enemies. Then a clear-cut polarization happens. If there are no enemies outside, your friends become lousy, lazy, dull, dead. A certain hostility around is absolutely necessary for you to be alert, to be stronger, to be together. This happens naturally. I can create any kind of opposition. If one dies, another; there is no trouble in it. And since we are not troubled and we are always the beneficiaries of it, why should we stop it?
That's why I refused point blank the question of a journalist who asked if there were any possibility of coexistence. I said, "Never. Either we or they." It is a question of either/or. It is not politics in which nations coexist. Jews and Christians coexist with all their hostility repressed. They are not friends.
Now the Pope is trying to make some arrangements with the Jews, trying to forget all those two thousand years of hostility. But neither can Christians forget

that Jesus was crucified, nor can Jews forget what has been done to them continuously for two thousand years. This is a political way: You keep your hostility repressed and I keep my hostility repressed, because somehow we are here; we have to be here, so we coexist.

I don't like that word at all. I have my own word. I call it parallel existence: We will exist the way we want to exist; you exist the way you want to exist. There is no question of coexistence, it is parallel existence -- two lines running parallel, meeting never.

The only way is that you convince us that you are more joyful, more dancing, more blissful. I am not concerned about theories -- that you convince us about God; I am concerned about people. You have to prove that you are more joyful than we are, you are more blissful than we are, you are more peaceful than we are. Then certainly we will mix with you. What is the need to remain separate?

Or, sooner or later you have to recognize -- ion fact, even in their hostility people have recognized it reluctantly -- that these people are certainly happy, far happier than they have ever been.

Their theology has not helped. It has helped them to become more miserable. Their Jesus Christ has not come to save them. Their politics and their politicians have failed them. Their leaders are just professional liars.

They have to see that there is a small oasis amongst them where no politics exists, no competition exists, no jealousy exists; where the people are working so hard for twelve and fourteen hours a day, seven days a week with no holiday. Since I don't believe in God, I don't believe that on Sunday he stopped working, so I cannot give any holiday. People are working fourteen hours a day and looking so happy and so radiant and so joyful and so dancing -- how long can they ignore that fact?

It is something existential, not theoretical. It is not like Protestant Martin Luther arguing with the Catholic Pope. It is not Hindus arguing against Buddhists. It is a totally different kind of argument. We are not saying anything -- we are showing them something; and sooner or later they will have to see it. They will have to hear our laughter, they will have to see this desert becoming again green, bringing flowers. For fifty years it has been a dead land. They will see birds coming again, animals coming.

I don't think that they are more stupid than the animals. You go in the night in the commune and you will find deer standing on the road not caring at all about you. They know my sannyasins -- nobody is going to hurt them. People have to get out of their cars to push them away.

In my own garden I have one hundred peacocks. They don't allow even me in the house. They are blocking my way all over the place; not only blocking, if they are somewhere else, they rush toward the car just to stand in front. I enjoy. That means they have understood that nobody is going to harm them, and they love the play. I will move the car slowly, they will go on moving backwards slowly, but they will not go out of the way.

I don't think Oregonians are more stupid than the peacocks and the deer and the swans that we have. Nobody is worried here, not even animals.
When I came to this place the junipers were small, dying, almost dead. Now they are lush green, have become thicker, bigger. Just four years more and you will see all these hills green and all this valley full of laughter.
Oregonians cannot resist the temptation to come here, to see the people, to understand the people. That's why I don't believe in coexistence. My denial was not understood by the journalist who had asked, because the moment I said, "Never," she immediately left the mike. She should have asked what were my implications, what did I mean by never, why was I saying never.
Perhaps she had come to hear that word, and once she got it, her prejudice was fulfilled and she immediately left. If she had asked my implications, she would have understood -- we coexist only with enemies.
I would like to be one with the Oregonians, not coexist -- that word is ugly, but that woman was so prejudiced she could not stay a single moment. She did not give me a chance to explain what I meant. That's what I was going to do, but as I looked, she was gone. So I said it is better to let her go; that will create more hostility and it will do something good.
In my life everything has been doing good to me. I have never come across any situation which finally has not been a blessing. So I have learned to trust life and its ways.

Q:* THERE'S SO MUCH MUSIC THAT HAS COME OUT OF THIS PLACE, A MUSIC OF AN ORIGINAL SORT. DO YOU THINK THAT THERE WILL EVER BE A LITERATURE COMING OUT OF HERE?

A:* Soon everything will be coming out from here. And everything that will come out from here will have a different flavor to it. We have sculptors here, for example, but right now they are making houses, roads, and other things which are of more basic necessity. Once we are finished with the infrastructure of the commune, all our sculptors will be free, all our painters will be free, all our poets will be free, and you will see something of a totally new quality coming in every direction, every dimension.

I have here around me the most intelligent group you can find -- the most talented people who can do anything -- you just have to give them time, the opportunity, and they are ready to do anything.
Do you see my watch? Piaget was asking half a million dollars for it. One of my sannyasins I sent to Switzerland to learn how to make watches. Within two weeks he was back and since then he has made four or five watches and he has been teaching other sannyasins. The other sannyasin has made this watch. It is far better than the Piaget, far more accurate, and it is made of real stones -- not of diamonds. It is not fake: real, authentic stones.

One of the idiots from Portland said on television that I was wearing a fake watch. He does not understand language -- these stones are not fake. These stones are as real as any diamonds. If he cannot make the distinction between diamonds and stones, that simply means he should accept his ignorance about jewelry.

But he cannot make my watch fake! It has been made with so much love, that to me, these stones are far more precious than any diamonds can be. I will not sell this watch for ten million dollars; no price will be accepted for the watch. It cannot be sold: love cannot be sold and purchased.

Hearing the man calling the watch fake, I could see how people are blind. If I was saying that these are diamonds and later on you find they are not, then certainly it is a fake watch. But I am saying these are stones. And if you cannot understand any difference between stones and diamonds, it shows your state of knowledge or ignorance. To me it makes no difference. These stones are so beautiful, I don't see any reason why diamonds should be costlier than these stones. These stones have cost nothing, and my sannyasin's work was a meditation for him.

We have all kinds of people here. We have made all the houses ourselves. We have made the big Gurdjieff Dam, and soon we are going to double it because there is still space and we can go deeper into the mountains. We have made all our roads ... and sometime I can take you to my own road which my people have made especially for me. Perhaps I am the only man in the whole world who has a road for himself. No traffic, no need to follow any rules of the road. I can go the British way or the American way or the Russian way, it makes no problem. The whole road is available.

And my people who made the road had never made roads, but they learned it immediately. You need just a little intelligence to learn anything. My people are doing all computer work. They have become so expert that now they are selling their expertise in the outside world. My people had never made any houses. Now they have become so expert that they are making houses for others in Germany, in Switzerland, in England. Cheaper, better, more comfortable, more contemporary.

Novels will be coming. Dramas will be coming everything that man can do, we are going to do, and better. We just have to settle down.

And we are settling down even against the Oregon government, the Oregonians. Nothing makes any difference -- we are settling down, we are settled -- nobody can throw us out from here.

Q:* WOULD YOU PERSONALLY LIKE TO EVER TRAVEL AGAIN?

A:* No, because there is nothing outside. Here, yes -- I have been to the disco yesterday. I enjoyed it!

Q:* DID YOU DANCE?

A:* Yes.

Q:* I READ IN THE RAJNEESH TIMES FROM ONE OF YOUR INTERVIEWS THIS PAST WEEK THAT YOU SAID THAT YOU DIDN'T HAVE THE ENERGY TO MAKE LOVE TO A WOMAN ANY MORE -- YOU DIDN'T HAVE THE ENERGY FOR THOSE GYMNASTICS -- BUT NOW THAT YOU'RE GOING TO THE DISCO....

A:* I have energy for women also. I just wanted my men sannyasins not to be worried! Because if I am interested in any women, then her boyfriend is finished. It is just to solace them. I have enough energy, there is no problem. So all my male sannyasins have been immensely happy. The women sannyasins look a little sad, but I find other ways to make them happy. There is no problem.

Q:* WHAT HAPPENED TO YOUR GLASSES?

A:* That was just because of these lights, my eyes were feeling teary. Continuous exposure for two hours in the morning or two and a half hours, two and a half hours in the evening, my eyes started feeling teary. That's why I used those glasses; I don't need them now that they have managed to put the lights a little farther away. I think they need still to adjust because I can feel the strain on the eyes a little. Otherwise, my eyes ... you just look at my eyes.
People think they get hypnotized ... I don't know. Journalists avoid looking into the eyes that perhaps they may get hypnotized. And for me it is such a simple job that I don't need to exert too much energy -- just a little smile toward a woman is enough.

I don't have to chase her and go through all the dramas and traumas. There is no need. In my whole life I have never met a single woman who was not ready the moment I looked into her eyes. Where she was going to find such a simple man who has not even asked her name, who has not asked her address? And on the next railway station, I get down and we shall never meet again. The introduction has not happened, but I have made love to the woman.
I am not British. They will not do anything without introduction.
But to me everything is love. Talking to my people is making love to them. My words reaching into their hearts create orgasmic reactions in their being. Just coming and going, dancing with my people ... just for a second stopping to dance with someone, and that's enough. That woman is not going to sleep the whole night -- you can ask the woman -- she is going to dream continuously of the dance.

I have already made love. To me love is nothing in particular to do with sex. there are a thousand and one ways of making love. Sex is the lowest, the animal heritage. And I would like my people to rise above biology. Only then will they be really free. Then you can find thousands of ways of making love. Just sitting silently together doing nothing, but full of love for each other, and there is a certain meeting which is happening between the two energies. So I am continuously making love to my people in every kind of possible way.

Don't be worried about my energy. And don't be worried about my eyes. They are perfectly okay and I am a non-serious man, so I have the freedom to say anything that comes to my mind without ever bothering about the consequences. And my whole life's experience is such that nothing has ever gone wrong. So I have become absolutely certain that nothing ever goes wrong, you just have to trust existence. And whatever happens is right.

You meet my people and you ask them ... everybody will say I have made love to them. Talking is a way of making love. Dancing is a way of making love. But these are higher qualities of love. Animals cannot understand it; you can go on playing the flute and the buffalo will go on chewing the grass. She will not even stop to look at what you are doing. The flute makes no sense to her. But to the lover, you play the flute and something immediately starts transmitting from your song and showering on your beloved.

And my people are searching all possibilities, finding all possibilities of being in love. Sex is only one of them, and the very lowest of the kind. In fact, everybody should have a film of himself making love and see it once in awhile. Then he will see what kind of gymnastics and what happens to the woman's face -- distortions, and you call it orgasm? She is having a fit. And the man is trying so hard, huffing, puffing.

Everybody should have a film of his own lovemaking just to see it whenever the desire arises. Just see the film and that will be enough. That is the very lowest type of thing that is available to all animals. Man can manage to have many other dimensions, many other levels. And the higher you reach towards enlightenment, new dimensions open up.

For a man who has passed through the door to the other side, everything is love. My whole twenty-four hours, I am making love to existence in different ways. If I am taking a shower, I enjoy it as much as making love to a woman. So what is the difference? I am contacting existence through water. It is not necessary that I should make the contact with existence through a feminine body.

Eating, I am making love, because I eat with such joy. And I don't see any difference. My joy is the same. So twenty-four hours I am in love. It does not matter what I am doing. That you can take as a criterion of the man who has gone beyond enlightenment: whatever he does is love. Whatever he says is love. If he does nothing, that is love. If he remains silent, that is love.

Now, should we start dancing?

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #21
Chapter title: none
7 August 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This is a typed tape transcript and has not been edited or published, as of August 1992. It is for reference use only. The interviewer's remarks have been omitted where not relevant to Osho's words]
INTERVIEW WITH KNBC-TV, LOS ANGELES, CA

QUESTION:* HOW SHOULD I ADDRESS YOU? WHAT NAME DO YOU PREFER?

ANSWER:* Whatever you like.

Q:* CHOICES MAKE IT SO DIFFICULT FOR ME. ALL RIGHT.

A:* Choices are always difficult.

Q:* DURING THE THREE YEARS OF YOUR SILENCE, WAS THERE ANYTHING SPECIAL IN THE WORLD OCCURRING THAT ALARMS YOU? MORE SO THAN WHAT HAD TRANSPIRED PREVIOUSLY?

A:* Two things: One is that nuclear weapons are coming to a point where either we have to stop producing them totally, or we have to be ready to evaporate from this planet. The second thing that has been of tremendous significance is the discovery of the disease AIDS.
Now it seems humanity is between two ditches. Almost walking on a razor's edge. Either nuclear weapons will destroy it, or the disease AIDS will destroy it. The destruction is becoming more, more probable than it was before.
It is easy to control the politicians, convince the politicians not to go forward, but how to convince the virus that creates AIDS, and how to convince the people to turn away from all the perversions that religions have forced upon their sexuality? AIDS is the culmination of homosexuality, lesbianism and all kinds of perversions.
But the source is religious insistence on celibacy, which is unnatural. If you force people to be celibate, and you force men and women to live separately in monasteries and nunneries, homosexuality is bound to happen. You cannot prevent it, because man's sexuality will have to have to find some way out.

And AIDS is the ultimate of that perversion. They don't know that there is any possibility to find a cure for it. Almost all the experts are agreed that a person who has confirmed AIDS is going to die within two years.
But within two years he can spread the disease to thousands of people. By sexual contact, just by kissing somebody, and a few experts are even suspecting that it may be contracted by breathing. Then we are on wildfire, which can spread all over the earth without any limitation.
It seems everything is against humanity. It is as if this planet is going to die. That's why I started speaking again. I felt that seeing the death of the planet just as an observer is irresponsibility. I have to respond to the situation, and I am spreading -- through my sannyasins, through mass media, in every possible way -- how we can destroy the idea of celibacy from religions, how we can convert homosexuals into heterosexuals, how we can convince the women's liberation movement that lesbianism is not liberation but sheer stupidity, and how we can create an atmosphere around the world that will force politicians to stop piling up more and more nuclear weapons.
It is almost an impossible task, but not absolutely impossible, and when the life of the whole planet is at risk, everything should be done to prevent it. Every intelligent man's door should be knocked on. It is time to take the challenge and come out.
The artists, the painters, the scientists, the dancers, the musicians, all the creative people around the world should declare that any government that goes on piling up nuclear weapons is anti-people, anti-humanity.

Q:* YOU SPEAK OF CHANGING HUMAN NATURE. NOW THAT THE VIRUS AIDS IS HERE, IT IS PRESENT, IT IS THERE. NOW THE NUCLEAR WEAPONS ARE IN EXISTENCE. IS CHANGING HUMAN NATURE AKIN TO CLOSING THE BARN DOOR AFTER THE ANIMAL HAS ESCAPED, NOW THAT THE PROBLEM IS ALREADY HERE?

A:* Changing human nature can make a lot of difference, because AIDS is not a natural disease.

Q:* HOW DO YOU KNOW THAT?

A:* Because all the medical experts are agreed that it is a by-product of homosexuality. No heterosexual couple who has remained together without sexual contacts with other people has come up with AIDS. Homosexuality -- if we can simply convince the popes and the imams and Ayatollah Khomeini and all these idiots to stop this idea of celibacy -- allow your monks, your nuns to make love, and allow humanity freedom from the guilt of making love, don't make it a sin. At this moment every resource should be used to convert

perversions back to nature. Heterosexuality is a natural phenomenon. And out of heterosexuality there is no possibility of AIDS.
Secondly, the very fact that we have so many nuclear weapons that we can destroy the whole humanity 700 times is enough, if everybody comes to know about what the politicians are doing. Even the politicians are no more so enthusiastic about a nuclear war. They can also see that in this war nobody is going to be defeated and nobody is going to be victorious. This war is a global suicide, it is not war. Just a huge amount of nuclear weapons is enough to prevent it being used.
So I am not without hope. I see every possibility that we can change the course where we are going unconsciously. There is no need for AIDS to be there, and there is no need for a nuclear war to be there. In fact, we can change the nuclear energy into creative sources. We can make this earth a beautiful garden without hunger, without poverty, without disease. It will be simply idiotic to use so much energy for destroying innocent people, and for destroying the only planet around here that is alive.

Q:* ARE YOU GETTING USED TO THE TAPE CHANGES, THE INTERRUPTIONS?

A:* I am accustomed to every kind of change.

Q:* BHAGWAN, WE HEARD A LOT OF RUMORS DURING YOUR THREE YEARS OF SILENCE ABOUT YOU OWN HEALTH. HOW DO YOU FEEL NOW?

A:* I am feeling better.

Q:* THE BACK PROBLEMS, THE ALLERGIES, THEY ARE IMPROVING?

A:* No, they are there, but these are not sicknesses which can ever be cured. You have to take care and avoid the situations in which they can occur. I am as allergic as I have ever been, but all the possibilities of allergy are prevented. I don't come in contact with any perfume. I don't come in contact with crowds, perspiration, smells, dust. Then I am perfectly okay, there is no problem. Those allergies are not diseases -- they are simply my heritage.

Q:* ARE THEY FRUSTRATIONS, LIMITING YOUR...?

A:* No, no frustration in it. In fact, it keeps me absolutely clean. And it keeps me isolated, which I enjoy. Because to be silent and alone gives the greatest bliss that is possible in life.

So I don't take allergies as a disadvantage -- it has proved a blessing in disguise. My back also has been a blessing in disguise. It is the same -- the problem is there. The best experts in India and from England confirmed that it is not something that will leave me. I will have to live with it.
And, you will be surprised, because of my back, only Rolls Royce suits me. No other car, no other chair. So you can see the blessing in disguise: my back has brought Rolls Royces to me.

Q:* SO THAT'S THE REASON! I'VE BEEN WONDERING!

A:* Yes, that's the reason. Everybody has been wondering, but that is the reason. I keep people wondering about many things.

Q:* HOW CAN A MAN WHO LIKES ROLLS ROYCES DISLIKE SPAGHETTI?

A:* That is a long story! I used to have a very beautiful woman around me -- an Italian woman -- twenty years ago. I don't think she ever took a bath. She was simple against it, it seems. She smelled... just disgusting! But she was a beautiful woman....
At that time I was not aware that I am allergic. The day I became aware that I am allergic, I got rid of that woman. She was the first woman who brought spaghetti to me, and it smelled of her. That's why I am against spaghetti -- even the name of spaghetti reminds me of that woman, and I immediately start feeling that my attack of athsma is coming. Otherwise, I have nothing against spaghetti.

Q:* LET ME ASK YOU ABOUT A SUBJECT THAT MAY BE LESS PLEASANT THAN SPAGHETTI, OR MORE UNPLEASANT....

A:* No, nothing is more unpleasant....

Q:* WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO YOUR FOLLOWERS WHEN YOU PASS ON?

A:* Who cares? What was happening to them when I was not here? The world goes on. When I was not here -- it is not a problem to me -- what was happening in the world was happening.
I was not here, I was not responsible for it. When I am gone, to you I am gone; to me you are gone. So the curtain falls.

Q:* WHY IS IT IMPORTANT TO YOU NOW TO BE HERE, TO REMAIN IN THE UNITED STATES, TO REMAIN IN OREGON, TO HAVE THE ATTORNEYS FIGHTING THE BATTLES WITH IMMIGRATION?

A:* I enjoy fighting. And because I have found the most backward people here in Oregon, I have chosen it. The fight is going to be long. The longer it goes, the longer it will keep me alive. The longer it goes, the stronger it will make my people. And we are on the right path.
We are fighting for those values America stands for, and they are fighting against America. We are fighting for the Constitution of America, and they are doing everything against the Constitution. So it has to be seen who wins. We may be a small minority, but I promise you that we are going to win in every case against the state of Oregon.
And we are going to prove to these people that it is not so easy to go against the only constitution in the world which has some democratic fragrance about it.

Q:* DO YOU THINK IT IS POSSIBLE TO PERSUADE THE PEOPLE OF OREGON, OR DO THEY HAVE TO BE DEFEATED?

A:* I don't want to persuade anybody. Either they defeat me, or I defeat them. No compromise.
Truth knows no compromise. The lies always are ready to compromise. Naturally, because in compromise, truth will always be the loser and the lie will always be the gainer. The lie is zero, it has nothing to lose.
Yes, the state government has been trying to compromise. The federal government has been sending their mediators to compromise. I am not going to compromise, and when the other party is trying to compromise, that shows where they are. They know that if they don't compromise, they are going to lose the whole thing. And why should I compromise when I know that the whole thing is going to be mine?

Q:* WHEN YOU USE PHRASES THAT ARE TAKEN BY THE PEOPLE OF OREGON AND OTHERS AS INFLAMMATORY IN YOUR DISCOURSES.... YOU HAVE REFERRED TO PEOPLE WHO ARE HELD VERY DEARLY BY PEOPLE HERE ... BY PHRASES SUCH AS "POPE THE POLACK," "CHRIST THE CRACKPOT," "MOTHER TERESA, THE CRIMINAL." ARE THOSE PHRASES INTENDED TO BRING ENLIGHTENMENT TO PEOPLE, OR DO THEY INSTEAD FILL THE HEARTS OF THOSE PEOPLE WITH SUCH HATRED THAT THEY CANNOT HEAR WHAT YOU ARE SAYING?

A:* It works in many ways. Those are my devices. First, I am talking to my own people. They are not hurt by what I am saying about Pope the Polack, Teresa the Terrible, Christ the Crackpot -- nobody is hurt. On the contrary, they start looking at things in a totally new way, the way I want them to look at them.
I want outside people to get hurt, shocked. I want them to be angry, hateful, because it is a very fundamental principle of psychology that if you can create hate in a man, it is very easy to change it into love. Love and hate are not so

different as people think, and certainly they are not opposites. They are two polarities of one energy, just like darkness and light.
So without going anywhere, just sitting in my room, I can manage to give shocks all around the world, shake people in their sleep, in their slumber. Because to me their Christianity is a kind of opium, and their Hinduism is a kind of marijuana, and so on, so forth. These people need to be shaken really badly.
And I will go on throwing ice-cold water on their eyes as long as they don't open their eyes and jump out of the bed. It is not a question of persuasion. You don't persuade a sleeping person to wake up, because between a person who is awake and a person who is asleep there is no possibility of communication. So whether they hear me or not, I want them to be hateful against me, that's enough -- I have done my job. All these people....
And there are almost one million sannyasins around the world. Even in Soviet Russia, even in East Germany I have my sannyasins. Of course, they are underground sannyasins. From where are these people coming? First they were shocked, first they were hurt, but their shock and their hurt started a great question, a great quest in their minds.
They became suspicious about their own conditioning: Perhaps Christ was a crackpot? Let us give it another thought. And Pope is certainly the Polack, there are not two opinions about it, and you cannot find a thicker head than Pope the Polack's, because the world is suffering from overpopulation, and he is preaching around the world against birth control, against the pill, against abortion.
This man -- if I call him a criminal, I am not condemning him, only describing him -- perhaps he is the greatest criminal alive. And the same is my attitude about the Hindu leader, shankaracharya, Mohammedan leaders like Ayatollah Khomeini -- I call him Khomeiniac -- because these are the people who are insisting on more and more population on the earth.
Ethiopia is dying, India is dying, soon the third world will be dying of starvation. And who will be responsible for it? Mother Teresa will be responsible for it, Pope will be responsible for it. In the eyes of the future, these people will be as criminal as middle ages popes are criminal in our eyes. They burned innocent old women, just calling them witches. So what? If somebody wants to be a witch -- the word is not bad, it just means a wise woman -- so whose business is it to prevent?
In the middle ages, the same popes representing the same Jesus Christ, calling themselves infallible, burned thousands of women alive because they decided that they are in conspiracy with the devil. Now no intelligent person today can stand on their side in that matter. They themselves feel ashamed. In fact, they burned Joan of Arc as a witch, but it was so much against people's love for that courageous young woman that finally after three hundred years, they changed their verdict.

One infallible pope burns the woman alive, declares her a witch; another infallible pope declares Joan of Arc a saint. From the grave the bones are pulled out and worshipped.
Now these idiots -- you want me to be polite with them? And they are dragging the whole world towards poverty. They have a vested interest in poverty -- they have to be exposed. Mother Teresa wants more and more orphans in the world; otherwise who is going to give her Nobel prizes and all kinds of awards and titles? She is roaming around the world -- I don't know when she finds time for serving humanity -- receiving rewards, awards, titles, opening functions, conferences. I can't think when she serves humanity. All she is doing is collecting Hindu and Mohammedan orphans and converting them into Catholics. This is sheer politics of number, she is a cunning politician. It is not even right to call her a woman -- she has no heart. She is simply a puppet in the hands of the Vatican.

Q:* IS IT POSSIBLE FOR YOU TO LOOK AT A CHILD DYING OF STARVATION AND NOT TO FEEL A TUG AT YOUR HEART, A DESIRE TO DO SOMETHING FOR THE CHILD?

A:* I will do something for the child: I will give him an injection and send him into eternal sleep. That is my compassion. To keep him alive for his whole life to starve again and again, fall sick, create more children who will be sick, who will be again orphans -- this is sheer stupidity.
I am a simple man of mathematics. If Ethiopia is dying, my compassion says there is no point in sending food, because these Ethiopians with that food will crate more Ethiopians. This is not a solution.
Either give them so much that they can live at your standard of living -- but for that you will have to stop all your nuclear weapons and all your war efforts and all the money that you go on pouring into them. Or, if you cannot do that -- and nobody is willing to do that -- these hypocrites go on calling themselves compassionate. What kind of compassion is this?

[text missing here in change from tape one, side A to side B]

... a little butter to the Ethiopians. For four years they have been dying, because for four years there has been no rain. And now every day thousands of people are dying. All over the world politicians feel compassionate. They send a little bit, but their gifts prove to be only spoonfuls of sugar thrown into the ocean to make it sweet.
No, I am not so gullible. I can see the point is either, if you want to destroy poverty from the earth, stop war, stop all this nonsense of America and Soviet Union; or, be at least honest and say we cannot save Ethiopia, we cannot save India.

Why allow those people to starve and suffer? We can easily send medical teams -- I can send my own medical team. And this is such a simple affair, just one injection and the person goes into eternal sleep. And there is no problem, because if the soul is eternal, as all the religions say, then you have not done anything. Just the house was falling and you have moved the soul into a new house, a better house, a fresher house.
But if all these religions are wrong and communists and materialists are right, then too, there is no problem. They say when the body dies, everything dies, there is no soul left -- no problem is there. So whether one believes in the soul or does not believe in the soul, it is better to let these poor people at least die peacefully. You could not help them to live peacefully, joyously, but you can at least send them to death peacefully, silently. That is my compassion.

Q:* BHAGWAN, LET ME ASK YOU ABOUT SOME OTHER MISFORTUNATE SOULS....

A:* You can ask about anything, because I have no secrets to keep about anything, I have nothing private, I am absolutely open to all kinds of queries. And I am going to say exactly what everybody wants to say, but they don't have the guts to say it. And I don't care about any respectability -- I am already notorious enough. And I enjoy it.

Q:* YOU ENJOY IT? HOW SO?

A:* Yes, I enjoy it. To be respectable means bourgeois; to be notorious means rebellious. Every revolutionary will be notorious in his time, and every respectable person is nothing but in the service of the vested interests. Certainly, you don't give Nobel prizes to notorious people like me. You give Nobel prizes to Mother Teresa. She is respected because she is serving your vested interests.
I am notorious, but I enjoy it. I don't want to be respectable. To be respected this mad humanity is insulting.

Q:* LET ME ASK YOU ABOUT ONE OF THE THINGS THAT'S PERHAPS MADE YOU NOTORIOUS IN THIS HUMANITY -- BRINGING THE UNFORTUNATE SOULS I WAS ABOUT TO TALK ABOUT EARLIER, THE HOBOS, THE TRANSIENTS, THE DERELICTS WHO WERE BROUGHT HERE LAST FALL. DID YOU APPROVE OF THAT? WAS THAT A WISE THING TO DO?

A:* We enjoyed doing it, and it was the best thing to do. And we are going to do something better soon, so you will forget about it completely. And each year we are going to do something better. That's the only way.

When you have a headache and you feel it is unbearable, I will just set fire to your house, and soon you will forget all about your headache.

Q:* WHY DID THOSE MEN NOT FORGET ABOUT THEIR HEADACHES? WHY COULDN'T THEY ADAPT HERE? WHY DID THEY LEAVE?

A:* Because they were uneducated, because they had been provided for their whole life food, clothes and other things by the churches and Christian associations, to live a life of misery on the streets. Those people were retarded.

Q:* BUT YOU KNEW THAT. WHY DID YOU STILL BRING THEM HERE?

A:* I tried it as an experiment. Those who could understand me are still here. Those who could not, they have left -- they were free. In an experiment, you have to take the risk.
I am going to take a greater risk soon.

Q:* COULD YOU AMPLIFY ON THAT?

A:* No.

Q:* WHEN WILL YOU?

A:* Not right now. It is going to be declared in a world press conference. It is not a simple, small thing. It is really big.

Q:* BUT THE INTENT IS TO BRING THE WORD TO ADDITIONAL PEOPLE?

A:* No. Just to bring more notoriety to me!

Q:* ARE YOU HAPPY WITH THE WAY THIS COMMUNE HAS DEVELOPED? LET ME ASK IN PARTICULAR ABOUT ALL THE SECURITY PRECAUTIONS THAT APPARENTLY HAVE BECOME NECESSARY TO MAINTAIN THE INTEGRITY OF THE COMMUNE. IS THAT THE KIND OF ENVIRONMENT IN WHICH YOU LIVE TO LIVE?

A:* No. Your question is wrong. I am absolutely happy with the commune and its development.
But behind the question, you are being journalistic. You are saying, "To save the integrity of the community there are guns and guards." That is absolutely wrong.

Q:* WHAT IS THE REASON FOR THEM, THEN?

A:* The reason for those guards is because I have been attacked many times in my life: I have been poisoned; an attempt was made to kill me with a knife before then thousand sannyasins -- and twenty police officers, because they got the message that something was going to happen that morning, so they reached in time before the knife was thrown at me. The man was caught red-handed. Ten thousand witness, twenty police officers as witnesses -- and still the man was freed by the court with punishment.

Now, if my people feel to protect me, I am not going to interfere, for the simple reason that I don't interfere. If somebody is going to assassinate me, I will say hi to him, too. I will not interfere.

And if my people who love me want to protect me -- and what protection? In a nuclear world, do you think those guns mean anything? Except for their love for me, those guns are toy guns. What can they do?

But I respect their love. I don't care about their guns. And those guns are not for the integrity of the community. The community is integrated on its own. Those guns have nothing to do with it. And those guns have not been used for four years to harm anybody. And they will never be used to harm anybody.

But if somebody tries to harm the community, certainly, we will do everything to fight back. I believe in tit for tat.

Q:* THE COMMUNE HERE DEFENDING ITSELF IF THERE SHOULD BE SOME ATTACK -- IS THAT IN CONCEPT ANY DIFFERENT FROM A NATION STOCKPILING NUCLEAR WEAPONS TO DEFEND ITSELF FROM AN ATTACK?

A:* No.

Q:* I GATHER FROM YOUR CONDEMNATION, THEN, OF STOCKPILING NUCLEAR WEAPONS THAT YOU ARE NOT PLEASED WITH WHAT THE COMMUNE IS DOING.

A:* No. I am not stockpiling nuclear weapons here, and I won't allow my commune to stockpile nuclear weapons. And I don't want nations not to have armies, not to have other weapons. I am just against nuclear weapons. Other weapons are just a football match, and man is an animal -- once in a while there is an itch to fight.

I am in favor of pre-first-world-war weapons. Do your best -- those weapons were perfectly good. And the world was a far more pleasant place to live before the first world war, because the population was small, and your wars helped to keep the balance of population. You need wars.

I am not a pacifist. I think if wars completely disappear, it will be a loss. It is perfectly good for this mad humanity once in a while to erupt into a war, destroy a few people, because they were surplus, and keep the balance.

I am against nuclear weapons because that will destroy the whole humanity and then there will be no fourth world war. And that I don't like! I would love fourth world war, fifth world, war, and history goes on. But this third world war is dangerous -- it simply puts a full point on history. That's why I am against it.
Otherwise, I am not against war. It is just children playing. Let them play -- there is no harm. So if my commune wants to collect pre-first-world-war weapons, I am for it!

Q:* I DON'T THINK THEY HAD OUZIS IN WORLD WAR I, DID THEY?

A:* They are not nuclear weapons. They are freely available in the market, anybody can purchase them. The government does not think them serious weapons. Anybody who wants to purchase them in any numbers can purchase them. They are freely available.
And if Oregonians have them, I will not prevent my people. If Oregonians have one, my people will have two, because in a game you should not lag behind. And what does it matter? People have to die anyway.
And the strangest thing is that most of people -- ninety-nine percent of people -- die on their beds. That is the most dangerous place! Ninety-nine percent. Only one percent manage to die in varieties of ways.
So this is nothing wrong. Just if people want to fight, have a good fight -- enjoy it, celebrate it! Oregonians will be fighting with hostility and we will be fighting with songs and dances and celebration.
Perhaps they will be able to kill us, but they cannot kill our spirit -- the spirit of ecstasy. And that will haunt them more. The ghost of Rajneeshpuram may haunt the whole of America!

Q:* THAT'S AN OMINOUS STATEMENT. I MEAN, DO YOU HAVE A VISION? IS THIS COMMUNE GOING TO BECOME SOME FORM OF MARTYR?

A:* No, no. I am just joking!

Q:* HOW MUCH OF THE TIME ARE YOU JOKING?

A:* All the time!... One hundred percent! I am absolutely a non-serious person, so I can say anything because a non-serious person has no bondage.

Q:* BUT WHAT DO YOU DO ABOUT THE PEOPLE WHO TAKE YOU SERIOUSLY?

A:* They are foolish! They should learn to take me non-seriously, the way I take the whole world non-seriously. If they don't learn it, then they unnecessarily get terrified, go through nervous breakdowns. I am absolutely non-serious. What I

am saying to you, I may contradict tomorrow -- or if you want, right now! I can do that, too.
Just don't change the cassette in the middle!

Q:* YOU AT TIMES HAVE SPOKEN WELL OF SOME OF THE THINGS JESUS SAID, SOME OF THE WORDS THAT ARE ATTRIBUTED TO BUDDHA, TO MOHAMMED. AND I HAVE ALSO UNDERSTOOD YOU TO SAY THAT MUCH OF WHAT THEY DID THAT IS GOOD WAS LOST IN THE FORMALISM OF THEIR FOLLOWERS, WHAT THE FOLLOWERS TRIED TO ESTABLISH. I WANT TO ASK YOU IF YOU SEE A PARALLEL HAPPENING IN THIS COMMUNE HERE -- THAT WHAT YOU ARE SAYING IS BEING LOST IN THE FORMALISM OF YOUR FOLLOWERS?

A:* No. It is impossible. First I have to remind you that whatever I have said about Jesus, Buddha, Mohammed -- and that there is much good in them which has been lost by their followers -- is centuries old. You are quoting Old Testament, and I am now in the middle of the LAST TESTAMENT.
Those statements belonged three and a half years ago, before I went into silence. And do you know why I went into silence for three and a half years? Because I got tired of telling beautiful things about Jesus, knowing perfectly well that he was a crackpot.

Q:* WHY DIDN'T YOU SAY IT, THEN?

A:* Because I wanted to catch hold of Christians, and I got them! I have my devices -- I may be a madman but I have my methodology.

Q:* DO THE ENDS JUSTIFY THE MEANS?

A:* Yes.

Q:* DO YOU BELIEVE IN MACHIAVELLI? IS THAT PART OF YOUR PHILOSOPHY?

A:* Machiavelli can be my disciple, and he will enjoy learning a few more things that he has missed. I spoke on Jesus and I said he had said many beautiful things. And I interpreted him, but that interpretation was mine. It has nothing to do with Jesus. I was simply trying to catch hold of a few Christians, but that I was doing with all the religions.
It is natural, because all the people of the world are already divided. When I came into this world, somebody is a Mohammedan, somebody is a Christian, somebody is a Hindu -- no customer available! And I have to do my business, too. I have every right. So, how to get customers?

I had to plan devices. And the natural way was -- the simpler way -- that anything that is wrong in Jesus, throw it on his disciples. And anything that can be seen as good, can be polished, given a more contemporary ring, bring it above and give the credit to Jesus.

Great Christians like Stanley Jones, who was a world-famous missionary, he told me, "I am puzzled. No Christian down the centuries has even been able to give such beautiful meaning to the words of Jesus." I said, "The trouble is, I cannot tell you the truth." That poor fellow is dead now -- but to you I can tell the truth:

What beauty can be in Jesus' words? He was uneducated, uncultured, a carpenter's son. In his time it was said laughingly, "Look at the Messiah.... Who has ever heard that prophets and messiahs are born in Bethlehem?" Bethlehem became a laughing stock because of Jesus, and he was looked at like a buffoon. Riding on his donkey, proclaiming himself as the only begotten son of God.... Just see it, visualize it: a man sitting on a donkey looking like a perfect hippie, declaring he is the only begotten son of God, and telling you, "Unless you follow me, there is no way to be saved. At the last judgment day, I will choose my sheep and they will enter into paradise. And those who are not chosen by me, will fall into eternal hell."

And have you ever thought of the meaning of eternal hell? In a seventy-year life, how man sins can you commit to deserve eternal hell? Is there any fairness, justice in existence, or not? In seventy years -- because Christians believe in only one life -- how many sins can you manage to commit to deserve eternal punishment? This is simply stupid. Because of this simple statement, Bertrand Russell went against Jesus and he wrote a book, WHY I AM NOT A CHRISTIAN, because this is simply unfair, unjust, inhuman. And the man certainly is a mental case.

Now I have got my people -- from all sources I have caught them, from Buddhists, from Hindus, from Christians, from Jews. From every land, from every country, from every race, I have caught hold of those who can now listen to me directly, and I don't need any Jesus, any Buddha, any Mohammed to stand between me and my disciples. So I am kicking them out.

For three years I remained silent, just to give a gap so people forget all about what I said before those three years, and I can start from the very beginning again. So don't quote anything from my books. Those days are dead -- those books are dead.

Q:* DO YOU WEAR THAT WATCH EXCEPT DURING TV INTERVIEWS?

A:* I have got hundreds of watches. And this is the least costly -- just $180,000. I have watches which are a half-million dollars, or more. And I have hundreds -- but they don't belong to me, they belong to my sannyasins. This watch, too, is borrowed. Nothing belongs to me; everything is provided for me. I am just a guest here in this commune. I am not even a sannyasin.

Q:* IF I UNDERSTOOD YOU CORRECTLY, THAT YOU SAW SPEAKING HIGHLY OF JESUS AS A STRATEGY TO APPEAL TO CHRISTIANS, TO GET YOUR WORD TO THEM, AS A TACTIC. DO YOU HAVE NEW TACTICS NOW? IS YOUR TALKING TO US THIS EVENING -- IS THIS PART OF A NEW TACTIC TO REACH PEOPLE?

A:* Everything I do is a certain device. Talking to you, too. I am involved in some great alchemical work of transforming people from their sleep into enlightened souls, and I have to try every kind of device possible.
This, too, is part of it. Everything that I say or do is part -- organic part -- of my whole work. And my work is to bring to people awakening on as big a scale as possible, as it has never happened before.

Q:* YOU USED THE FIGURE EARLIER, IF I UNDERSTOOD CORRECTLY, OF A MILLION SANNYASINS AROUND THE WORLD. WOULD THAT BE YOUR ESTIMATE?

A:* Yes.

Q:* I HAVE READ -- I HAVE NOT PERSONALLY ASCERTAINED THE ACCURACY OF THIS -- THAT A NUMBER OF YOUR MEDITATION CENTERS BOTH IN THE UNITED STATES AND IN EUROPE HAVE CLOSED, AND THE CONCLUSION THAT SOME PEOPLE HAVE DRAWN FROM THAT IS THAT THE NUMBER OF SANNYASINS IS SHRINKING.

A:* Their conclusion is wrong. We have closed a few centers because those centers were too small, and the sannyasins were finding it difficult to live amongst the hostility around them. So we have consolidated a few centers into a big commune. So those centers have disappeared, but a new commune has come into existence.
The number has not decreased, the number has increased because many who were afraid before to become sannyasins are no more afraid because they have five hundred sannyasins with them. Now their enemies are afraid.
I am consolidating all over the world, and the number is increasing every day. From a half-million it has reached to one million, and these are above-ground sannyasins. The underground sannyasins are not included in it.
In communist countries, in China, in Russia, in other small communist countries I have my sannyasins, and they are spreading fast there, too. In fact, they are more excited than sannyasins anywhere else. Naturally, human psychology is such that in Moscow they have to meet in a basement of a friend's house -- silently, afraid even the walls in Russia are detectives and belong to the KGB.

There is great excitement in meditation, in reading my books, listening to my tapes. For sixty years in Russia, religion had almost disappeared except in a few places which the Russian government has been keeping up for tourist purposes. Only a few churches are there which are maintained for foreigners to visit and see that religion has not been disturbed. Everybody is free -- and you can see.

But in fact all the churches have become either hospitals or schools, and the whole country has become atheistic. After sixty years, these people were born after the revolution. They have been brought up in an atheist atmosphere. They have been conditioned that there is nothing in you -- you are only a component of physics, chemistry, biology, but there is no spirit in you.

And for the first time they are becoming aware through me that they are consciousness. All these things are just their house, and they are not just a composite whole of all these things; they have an individuality, a consciousness. And the only way to discover it is meditation, and people are meditating.

And the government is already starting to persecute them, trying to find out where they meet, what they do, where they go. They have started taking my books from them. My books are banned. These are good signs -- this means the youth will get more excited. It has become a revolution, and that's what the young blood always needs -- some rebellion.

I have one million people, and they will be growing every day for the simple reason that there is no other alternative. The old world is already dead -- or almost dead, which is worse!

And for the new world there is no other movement except this movement. It is not a political movement. It does not belong to any nation. It does not belong to any race. It does not belong to the past. It is absolutely fresh -- just born, young.

And you are asking: Can your followers do the same as happened with Jesus? In the first place, the followers have not destroyed Jesus, Jesus had everything ready. He had sown the seeds, the followers have only been reaping the crop. Jesus is responsible.

I am not giving any theology to my disciples. I am not giving them any catechism. I am not giving them any belief system. And my statements are so contradictory, that there is no possibility for anybody to figure out what kind of man this was. Nobody can bring any deformation, because I am not giving anything to the disciples -- no discipline, no dogma, no creed. What can they do?

I am giving them freedom to do whatsoever they want to do. I am giving their responsibility to themselves. I am not taking their responsibility on me. I am not their savior or prophet or messiah, no.

Q:* YOU ARE THEIR MASTER.

A:* I am master of myself!

Q:* ARE YOU THEIR MASTER, AS WELL?

A:* No. I am trying to help them to be masters of themselves. I am just a catalytic agent. I am master of myself, so I know how one becomes a master of oneself. I am simply sharing my experience with these people. They are not my followers, they are my fellow travelers. And they are absolutely free to do anything they want. No restrictions, no inhibitions, no repressions.

What can they do? The moment I am gone, they will also go on their way separately, because their connection with me is direct. They are not interconnected like Christians or Hindus or Mohammedans. They are connected to me directly. Each sannyasin has a direct communication line with me. The moment I am gone, his last barrier is also finished. Other barriers I had finished before -- now the last barrier, the love towards me, is also finished.

He is now totally free. Utterly free -- to be himself. So there is no problem. The followers of Buddha or Confucius they all destroyed their Master's things because the Master himself has given all the poison that was needed to destroy it. For example, Buddhas has given 33,000 rules of conduct. Even to remember them is impossible, the question of following them does not arise. And any man trying to follow 33,000 rules of conduct will soon be in an insane asylum. He will be in the same position as happened in Aesop's fable of the centipede.

A centipede is just going for his morning walk. One hundred legs -- a small rabbit could not believe his eyes, how he managed to walk. One hundred legs? Which one first, which one second, which one third? He stopped the centipede and said, "Uncle, I have a question if you don't mind. How do you manage to walk with one hundred legs? He said, "My God, I never thought about it! Now I will watch how I walk and then I will tell you. Up to now I have been simply walking without thinking."

And he could not walk even a single step. He fell down, because he was trying to figure out which leg first and which leg second -- and the number was one hundred. Even a great mathematician like Albert Einstein would have fallen with one hundred legs. That poor centipede -- knowing no arithmetic.

But the centipede was very angry and told the rabbit, "It's okay that you asked the question to me, but here is a big commune of other centipedes. Don't ask such a stupid question to anybody. Perhaps you have crippled me for my whole life! I will never be able to walk again, because I don't know how I used to walk. It was simply natural."

33,000 rules of conduct? Are you trying to drive humanity insane? And if they don't follow, they feel guilty. If they follow, they look mad. And if you look at those rules, you will be absolutely aware. For example, one sannyasin, Buddha's disciple, was going to spread his message. Buddha said to him, "Never look at a woman. You are going far away."

The man said, "It is a little bit difficult, because half the people are women. Everywhere is full of women, and you are giving me a message not to look at a

woman? But how am I supposed to know before looking that a woman is coming? And by the time I know that she is a woman, I have already looked."
The man raised the question that it would be almost impossible for him to follow it, Buddha gave him the advice, "No, it is possible. I will give you the clue. You walk looking just four feet ahead of you, so if you see a woman's feet, you know. Don't look up, always keep your eyes glued four feet away." In India, women use ornaments on the feet, on the toes, and just by looking at the feet you will know it is a woman.
The man was a little of a philosopher. He said, "That's okay. Anything else?"
Buddha said, "Never touch a woman." The man said, "But there can be a situation.... For example, a woman is drowning and I am standing on the bank. What do you want me to do, jump in the river and save the woman, or just go on my way without looking at her? A woman may have fallen on the street sick or old or blind and she needs the help of someone to take her at least to the nearest town, and I am passing by. What do you suggest?"
Buddha said, "Okay, you can touch a woman, but remain absolutely alert. Keep yourself as a witness, don't get in any way involved. Do it as if she is only a corpse, and you are fulfilling your duty."
Now this kind of discipline will soon create disturbances. People are going to disobey such things and find loopholes and destroy the whole thing.
I have not given them anything in which they can find loopholes -- I have given them only loopholes. Now what can they destroy? It is said a fishing net consists of holes. I have given them only holes,no fishing net. Now they can do whatsoever they want to do with holes. I give them absolute freedom to be themselves.... No guilt, no promise, just enjoy the moment to the fullest, and you are not responsible to anybody.
No God to be responsible towards, no hell to be afraid of, no heaven to be greedy for. All that is present this very moment, enjoy it intensely, totally, because no one knows -- the next moment may come, may not come.
You want to do something?

Q:* BHAGWAN, HOW DO YOU THINK WHAT WE'VE DISCUSSED EARLIER THAT IT'S KIND OF HARD TO CATEGORIZE YOU, BUT WHAT CONCLUSIONS DO YOU THINK HISTORY WILL REACH ABOUT YOUR EXPERIMENT HERE?

A:* I don't know

Q:* AND FURTHERMORE, YOU DON'T CARE!

A:* I don't care. Who cares when you are dead; you are not going to come back to read what others are writing about you, whether your name is in the history books or not. What is the point?

Alexander the Great did so much, tried to conquer the whole known world, almost succeeded. But what is the point? He died when he was thirty-three, and after that he has not been seen around -- reading history and enjoying that his name is everywhere, and he is one of the greatest heroes in history. What does it matter? I don't know, and I don't care, either.
I am perfectly happy right now, so blessed that I can bless the whole world. Still my blissfulness will not be exhausted.

Q:* WHY SHARE IT WITH THE WORLD? YOU MENTIONED EARLIER YOUR HAPPINESS IN YOUR OWN PERSON.... WHY NOT KEEP IT WITHIN YOURSELF?

A:* Because it goes on increasing if you share. It is profit-making.

Q:* THERE ARE A FEW GIGGLES THERE. DEFINE WHAT YOU MEAN BY PROFIT-MAKING.

A:* The more you share your bliss, your joy, the more it increases. It is a totally different kind of economics from that which you are aware of. In the ordinary economics the rule is if you go on sharing your money, it will decrease.
In the higher economics, which is my business, the more you share, the more existence goes on pouring into you. It is just like a well: you go on drawing water from the well and new water goes on flowing from everywhere. If you stop drawing water from the well, the water will become stale, dead, even poisonous.
Bliss has to be shared. It is not out of compassion. That is why I said it is profit-making. It is not out of compassion that I share my bliss. it is just out of simple profit motive. It increases the more I share. It is like the rain cloud full of rain. It has to shower somewhere, otherwise it will become heavy, burdened.
Yes, I say, if you don't share your bliss it will go stale. It will start stinking very soon. It will die. You have to share it to keep it alive, flowing, increasing, expanding. I am an imperialist. I don't believe in any limits on anything.
I can understanding why you are scratching your beard. You don't have a beard and you are scratching it. You take a few grapes -- that will help you. That scratching is nervous. You just take some grapes! Those grapes are there just to avoid doing anything else that shows nervousness.
But it is something new. All journalists feel nervous, because they have never met such a crazy man before. Who will not feel nervous? You take a few grapes.

Q:* I DON'T THINK THEY ALLOW ME A MEAL BREAK UNTIL I'M OFF WORK.

A:* Okay.

Q:* WHY IS IT IMPORTANT, OR WHY IS IT NECESSARY TO SELL BLISS, WHY CAN'T YOU GIVE IT AWAY?

A:* No. Because anything that is just given away is never taken by anybody. The higher the cost, the better people will keep it, save it in their treasuries. Give it free, and it has no value, because people don't understand value unless it has a price. They understand price, they don't understand value.

Q:* IN THAT CASE, HOW MUCH ARE YOU GOING TO CHARGE ME FOR THE GRAPES?

A:* Nothing.

Q:* SO, NO VALUE?

A:* I know that if you eat those grapes your program is going to be for me. Just taste something sweet, so you are not bitter on television. It is all profit-making business! I am a very simple man, and truthful. If you are shy about eating right now, when I go, please....

[the cameraman has problems]

Q:* I WOULD LIKE TO ASK YOU TO REPEAT SOME OF THE WORDS YOU JUST SAID... WHY BLISS HAS TO BE SOLD.... WHY YOU SELL BLISS.
COULD YOU GRANT US THREE MORE MINUTES?

A:* I can, but I cannot repeat what I have said; I will say something else.
I don't believe in repetition.
Everything in this world has to be achieved. You have to pay a price for it, and the bigger the price you pay for it, the higher is your estimate of it. If bliss, ecstasy, joy, were all available, like water, free -- nobody will be able to appreciate their value.
You don't know the real value of water unless you have been thirsty in a desert. While he was in India, Alexander was asked by a great Master, "If you are in a desert and thirsty and I have a full bottle of water, how much will you be ready to pay for it?" Alexander said, "I will pay half my empire in such a situation." But the Master said, "I will not sell until you pay me the full empire. Why should I sell? If you are willing to pay half, that is indication enough that if I just wait a little more, the customer is going to feel more thirsty and is going to pay the full empire."
And Alexander agreed that perhaps he would give the whole empire. And the Master laughed. He said, "Then what are you doing? Wasting your whole life for a bottle of water? Are you stupid or something?"

The world understands things in its own way. Otherwise, my bliss is freely available to anybody who can appreciate it, who is vulnerable to it, who is open to receive it. There is no price tag on it. But those who cannot understand anything unless they pay for it -- for those poor people, we have to put a price on everything. It is out of compassion.
That's why I said my answer will not be the same.

Q:* BHAGWAN, THANK YOU VERY MUCH.

A:* I enjoyed it.

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #22
Chapter title: none
8 August 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This is a typed tape transcript and has not been edited or published, as of August 1992. It is for reference use only. The interviewer's remarks have been omitted where not relevant to Osho's words]
INTERVIEW WITH THE RAJNEESH TIMES, TOKYO

QUESTION:* BELOVED BHAGWAN, BUDDHA THE JAPANESE SEEMS QUITE CONCEIVABLE, YET, ZORBA THE JAPANESE QUITE INCONCEIVABLE. WOULD YOU COMMENT?

ANSWER:* It is one of the most significant questions to ask. Buddha is not only conceivable in Japan, a Buddhist country, Buddha will be conceivable anywhere, even though the countries are not Buddhist. Perhaps Buddha is the only human being in the whole history who is loved, respected by ALL, not only by Buddhists.
On the other hand, Zorba is inconceivable in every old culture, civilization, religion, because they all have condemned materialism and they all have raised spiritualism to its ultimate height. They have created a duality between matter and spirit, between the mundane and the sacred.
Zorba represents all that has been condemned for centuries upon centuries by all the religions. Buddha is loved certainly by Buddhists, but respected by non-Buddhists, too. He represents something of the purity of the highest conceivable spirituality. That's why I say the question is significant.
My whole effort is to bring Zorba and Buddha closer and closer -- so close that both can exist in one human being without any contradiction, as complementaries, helping each other, not fighting with each other.
Separately, both are missing much. Buddha is absolutely bloodless, just a skeleton, because he has denied everything that life is. Life is love, life is laughter. Buddha has denied everything. He is just a skeleton. Zorba is full of life, love, laughter. Eat, drink, and be merry is his whole religion. He does not know anything beyond eat, drink, and be merry. He does not know ... he has no question or curiosity about something that is higher -- higher than the alcohol, higher than the woman or man, higher than this world, the visible world, the tangible world.
Zorba has no quest; he is perfectly happy drinking, dancing, enjoying. Buddha is missing the blood, the life, the love, the joy, the celebration. Buddha cannot dance. It will be simply inconceivable, Buddha dancing. Zorba cannot sit silently

and meditate. That, too, is as inconceivable as Buddha dancing. Zorba is dancing, singing, drinking. He is making love to any woman, who by chance meets him.
Zorba represents the materialist in its best form. Buddha represents the spiritualist in its best form. but you are both, spirit and body. Existence is both, matter and consciousness.
Therefore I say that spiritualists have been denying the very base of the temple. They accept the temple but they deny the foundation of the temple, and without the foundation, no temple can stand. That's why religions have failed.
Gautam the Buddha has failed, for the simple reason that he was trying to make a temple without any foundations going down into the earth. He was trying to grow roses, but he was not ready to accept the roots under the ground which life in darkness and, of course, are not as beautiful as the roses. But neither the roses can exist without the roots, nor the roots can afford to exist without the flowers.
The roots without the flowers will be barren, and the flowers without the roots can only be of plastic. so all the religions of the past have created a plastic humanity. Denying Zorba, they have denied all that is solid in you. And the materialists, communists, Marxists and other brands of materialism -- Epicurus in Greece, Charvaka in India -- they are eating, drinking, womanizing, but at the very end they find nothing but frustration.
Something is missing. They may have all the money, all the power, everything that a man can ask for, but still inside they are empty, hollow. They may be dancing, but their dance has nothing of divinity in it. Their dance is just an exercise of the body. There is no soul to it.
These are the two ways humanity has lived up to now -- divided, split, schizophrenic, both have to repress something. Buddha has to repress Zorba. Zorba has to repress Buddha. As far as I'm concerned, both are sick because both are half of one whole, which can be healthy only if both the parts meet together and fill the gaps. Zorba can become the foundation, Buddha can become the temple.
I don't see that there is any conflict between the rose and the roots. On the contrary, the roots are continuously sending food, water, nourishment, color, fragrance to the rose. the rose is on the receiving end. All that the rose gives to you comes from the roots. Cut the roots away, and the rose dies, disappears. All fragrance, all life, all dance in the wind ... the joy in the sun ... simply withers away. Take the roses away, and what meaning is left for the roots?
That's why materialism is bound to come to a point where it feels meaningless, everything meaningless. It is the Zorba in the West which has come to its climax in the so-called philosophy of existentialism. Existentialism is the ultimate logical conclusion of Zorba. There is no meaning in life according to European existentialism. There is only anxiety, anguish, despair. Zorba had started with love, laughter, life, and it is strange that in the end the conclusion is that there is only one way to get rid of it all, this whole mess and madness, and that is suicide.

The whole Western intelligence is in a great insane space, because they have accepted only the roots and now they are asking, "Where are the flowers?" They never allowed the flowers to grow. On the contrary, they went on cutting the branches, the leaves, the trunk of the tree, and now they are asking the roots, "What is the meaning of you? For what do you exist?"

And in the East, just the opposite has happened: only the spiritual is true, and the material is illusory. All the spiritual masters in the East have been emphasizing only one thing: that the world in which you live is only a dream. It does not matter whether you are rich or poor -- what does it matter if it is only a dream? Whether you are hungry, sick, old, healthy, it is only a dream. It is not the reality.

The natural consequence was, that in saving their spirit and their spirituality they have lost their roots. That's why the East is poor. Gautam Buddha is responsible for it. If you deny materialism, then how can science develop? If matter is illusory,then the whole scientific endeavor is illusory -- Hiroshima and Nagasaki have never happened, it was just the Japanese dreaming about it. If matter is illusory, then how can the atom be real, which is the constituent of matter? And if life is illusory,then why make so much fuss about life disappearing from the earth in a third world war.

Because Gautam Buddha and the people like him in other religions emphasized only the other world, this world was neglected, ignored. No science was developed, although it could have been developed long before it started to develop in the West. The Western development of science is only of the last three hundred years. Mathematics was discovered in India ten thousand years ago, but what happened? Guns and dynamite were discovered in China five thousand years ago, but then what went wrong? In three hundred years the West has developed nuclear weapons, and they have managed to reach to the moon. What has the East been doing for ten thousand years?

You will be surprised to know that when Marco Polo came back from China, he brought from the Chinese emperor many presents for the pope. He was laughed at about everything that he brought, and he thought he was bringing something of immense value. For example, up to that time, the West had no idea of printing machines, and he had brought printed books from china. The West had no idea of currency notes, but in China currency notes had been in use for three thousand years.

What went wrong? People who invented mathematics, people who invented printing presses, people who invented guns and gunpowder...? The whole responsibility goes to Gautam Buddha and his type of people. They emphasized that all this is illusory -- don't waste time. The small time that you have got has not to be wasted in the desert of materialism. You should devote your whole life to the search for truth, for that which is far above what you see. Seek the invisible, the intangible. Seek the eternal, the immortal. Seek the immaterial.

Emphasis from people like Buddha who had charismatic personalities influenced the whole of civilization, and for centuries all progress stopped. India knew everything about mathematics, but could not produce an Albert Einstein. If things had moved rightly, India would have reached to faraway stars by this time, not just to the moon. The moon is very close. If Western science can reach to the moon in three hundred years, India cold have reached to the farthest star in ten thousand years. All the basic principles of mathematics were known, but they were never applied. They remained theoretical. They remained undeveloped because the genius of the country was attracted by Gautam Buddha, Mahavira, Shankara, who were emphasizing that matter is illusory,that this life is just a dream, and the only use you can make of this life is to find that which remains forever.

Naturally, the East has remained poor. Nobody else is responsible for it. it was bound to happen. If I had been there at Buddha's time, I would have predicted that what he was teaching would result in poverty, sickness and death to the same people who were influenced by him. And remember, when people are poor, hungry, dying, do you think they can meditate? With a hungry stomach, can you go on sitting silently and let the grass grow by itself?

Basho's stomach was full when he wrote those lines. He must have begged and eaten well. Then, sitting under a tree by the side of a pond, he could write beautiful poetry of tremendous significance. But we should not forget that Basho was not hungry. If he had been hungry, then there was no possibility of these beautiful lines coming out of him.

"The ancient pond, the frog jumps in. The sound." Or, the silence. It is difficult to translate exactly the Japanese word, because Japanese has no alphabet. In India, we have a word,which is pronounced "chapak," -- the sound of the frog. When a frog jumps into the pond, there is something like chapak.

But these beautiful statements are not out of a hungry stomach. The East went on becoming poorer and poorer, because without technology and science you cannot be rich. And if Ethiopia is dying today -- almost one thousand people per day are dying, and in the last four years, millions have died in Ethiopia -- who is responsible for these people dying there? Why have they not been able to develop enough technology and science to create and produce wealth? Because wealth was condemned by their religious leaders and the people listened to their religious leaders. Wealth was condemned. Children were declared to be gifts of God, so they went on producing only one thing: children. Now, no child brings with him a piece of land, seeds for the new crop, water to nourish the plants. God goes on sending children without any equipment to be here, and the religious leaders go on saying they are gifts of God, but they have proved to be the very curses against humanity.

The East was bound to remain poor because of Gautam Buddha. It was bound to remain unprogressive, backward, because of Gautam Buddha. And I love the man; you can understand my anguish that I have to say that Gautam Buddha is

responsible for this whole misery. For twenty-five centuries, millions of people have suffered, have gone mad, have become perverted -- and the man who is responsible for it, I love him.

I love Zorba, too, but I know it is because of the materialists we have suffered two world wars and now the third is impending to destroy the whole humanity at any moment. Because of Zorbas, the West has remained superficial. Yes, its stomach is full, perhaps much too full, but its being is empty. The house is really beautiful, a palace, but nobody lives there. It is empty. Yes, there are precious paintings on the walls and great sculptures in the garden. Everything is immensely valuable, but nobody lives there; nobody IS there, because the materialist forgot completely to come back home. He went out, and out, and out, and went on searching farther and farther away from his home base. Now he has completely forgotten who he is, where he comes from. Now he is asking, what is the meaning of my life, what I am searching, what I am going here, what the hell am I doing here? He is angry, angry at life itself.

In one of Dostoevsky's novels, THE BROTHERS KARAMOZOV there are three brothers. One brother is an atheist, one brother is a very pious religious innocent person, and the third brother simply does not care about either. The atheist says: If I meet your God, Ivan -- Ivan is the religious one -- if I meet that fellow anywhere, the first thing I am to do is to return the ticket, and ask the gentleman, "Is it right to send me into a world without asking my permission? Who are you? What authority have you got to force me to live a life which is meaningless? And everything that is joyful, you and your representatives condemn it. You have done a great job of creating. You create us without asking us. That is the first crime you have committed. Then you give us instincts which we have not asked for and send your prophets and messiahs who condemn those instincts saying that sex is sin, that attachment is sin, that possessions are sin. So what kind of game is going on? Are you some kind of a sadist? Have you created us to suffer? Are you enjoying our suffering and misery?"

That brother is speaking for the whole West. Everything is available, but what is the point? You will go on making love to this woman, to that man, but what is the point? After a few experiences, you simply look silly. What are you doing? You may eat in this restaurant,in that restaurant -- Japanese food, Chinese food, Italian spaghetti -- but sooner or later you are bound to recognize what is going on. What is the point of it all? Why should I go on living tomorrow, because again tomorrow, spaghetti?

It is enough for any intelligent man -- and the more intelligent a man is, the sooner he gets bored. Retarded people can go on living with a woman or with a man their whole life. But intelligent people, the greater their intelligence, the greater is their capacity to see that there are thousand of beautiful women. Why remain with one? There are thousands of beautiful men, so why cling to one? There is no natural law that you have to remain clinging to one. Why create a bondage?

But even if a man goes on moving from one woman to another, soon he gets tired and founds out that he is in a vicious circle. Finally he finds to his great surprise that all women are exactly the same. What you call making love -- whether you make love to Cleopatra or Mother Teresa -- it is the same, the same stupid thing.
So the whole West has created the foundation of the temple, but a foundation is meaningless without a temple. They go on making foundations, and then they are stuck: "What are we doing? For what are we making this foundation?" They don't have any idea that a temple has to be created. They have denied that temple for centuries: there is no consciousness.
Karl Marx says, "Consciousness is only a by-product of matter." See the point: Shankara, Buddha and Mahavira say that matter is illusory, that consciousness is immortal reality. Charvaka, Epicurus, and Karl Marx say just the opposite, that matter is the ONLY reality and consciousness is only a by-product.
It is just like a clock on the wall that goes on clicking, giving you time. If you bring an aboriginal into the room and show the clock moving, he will look all around and say, "Where is the spirit of the clock?" Because if it moves, there must be a mover hidden inside. But there is no mover, the movement is a by product of a certain mechanism. You can take apart all the parts. Do you think the soul of the clock goes upwards to meet God? If it was a good clock, giving the right time all the time, it will go to God; if it was a bad clock, giving the wrong time all the time, it will go down into hell to suffer. But you know there is nobody who is going anywhere. You can put those parts together again, and the clock starts clicking. that clicking of the clock is just a by-product.
The West denied consciousness; the result is a tremendous feeling of despair. The East denied matter; the result is Ethiopia, India. Half a million people are going to die out of poverty this year. Two million people will be barely able to survive. You cannot tell them that being barely able to survive will be life.
And who knows about the next year? Right now the world population is four billion. In every decade we are producing one billion people, so by the time this century ends, we will be nearabout six billion people. Our resources are being exhausted, and this increase of population will be happening in the poor countries,not in the rich countries. The poor countries will become poorer, much porer, and it will be impossible for richer countries to give any help. And why should they give? The poor don't give their meditation to the rich. They don't give their experiences of ecstasy, blissfulness to the rich. Why should the rich give the fruits of their technology to the poor? They are going to be in difficulty themselves, because they are piling up nuclear weapons.
This is where Zorba has brought them. Sooner or later nuclear weapons are going to destroy the world. Yes, they will die with their stomachs full. In fact, half a million people only in America suffer from obesity, fatness. They go on growing like monsters. They don't have anything else to do except eat. Eat more.
A small child, an American, was puzzled why the Ethiopians go on dying. He told his father that it seems so stupid that one thousand people are dying every

day, starving. Why don't they open their fridges? If there is nothing else available, they can eat cakes, biscuits.
Now, the American child cannot conceive a home without a fridge. What a distance we have created amongst human beings! The Ethiopian has never seen a fridge and perhaps will never see one. There seems to be no way for Ethiopia to survive.
Zorba has brought half of the world to where they have everything. Only the man is missing, the spirit is missing -- and with the spirit, all meaning, all ecstasy, all joy, everything has gone down the drain. In the East, they are poor, dying, sick, suffering in every possible way, and that is the consequence of what Buddha has been teaching to these people.
I want East and West to disappear into each other. I want Zorba and buddha to disappear into each other. Only then will we have a whole man, and the whole man is the need of the day. It is because of this that I am going to be condemned from both sides. The religious people will condemn me as a materialist; and the materialists, the communists are condemning me for diverting peoples' minds towards meditation. That means the young generation is being diverted away from the revolution, that I am serving in some way the interests of capitalism.
I am the greatest danger to them, because I am attracting so many young people. If they had not come to me, they would be communists. But now the situation has come to such a point that red no longer represents the communists, it represents me.
They both are angry: Zorba is angry, Buddha is angry. But I am not to be stopped by either. I am going to put both of them into a mixture and put the electricity on, so that when the juice comes out, you cannot find which is Buddha and which is Zorba. That is my sannyasins: one who will live with intensity and totality like Zorba. But that is not the end, that is only the beginning. He will go on searching, seeking for something higher to live, something better to live. He will be in favor of science and technology. He will not deny this world. He will not call it a dream. It is true -- as true as anything can be. Who can say roots are untrue? Just to prove that roses are true, have you to prove roots to be illusory? I don't see the point. Roots are roots, and as roots they are real. Roses are roses; as roses, they are real. The problem is that they are joined together and they depend on each other.
I have told you that juices are flowing continuously from the roots towards the flower; but it is not a one way affair. the flower is taking the sun rays deep down to the roots. Because those roots are underground, they also need the life that sun rays give. Without those sun rays, those roots wil die. The flower does not open for you to make a garland, it opens for the roots which are hidden. In fact, it is an extension, a hand of the roots to catch hold of life and energy from the sun, the wind, the rain,and send it back to the roots which are hidden deep down. It is a two way traffic.

And this is how it should be between Zorba and Buddha. If Buddha has eyes -- and certainly he has eyes -- but he doesn't have legs, what is he going to do with his eyes? The house is on fire.He can see it. He can see the way out, but he doesn't have legs, he is crippled. And somebody is sitting by his side who is blind, but has strong legs.

I am suggesting a simple thing: get introduced to each other! Tell each other what you have got and what you have not got. It is a simple thing to come to an understanding that the crippled man, who can see, sits on the shoulders of the strong man, who is blind but who can walk. Now they are together, functioning as one unit. One sees and shows the way, and the other follows -- that's the only way to get out of the house which is on fire.

And we ARE in the house which is on fire. It is exactly the right moment when Zorba and Buddha should drop all their antagonism and become one.

Yes, Zorba is blind, but he is a strong person. Buddha has eyes, but he is fragile. He can sit under the bodhi tree, but if the jungle takes fire, perhaps he will not be able to escape.

It had happened in Buddha's life.... I have been to that place near Bodhgaya, where Buddha became enlightened. There is a small river, Niranjana. Buddha was so weak because of fasting, meditating. He had devoted everything to meditation. He had forgotten his body, he had forgotten everything else. He went to take a bath in Niranjana. It is a small river. When I went there, I could not believe -- perhaps at that time it may have been a little bigger river -- but the story is that he was so weak that the current of the river started carrying him away and he could not manage to stand against that small river's current. He tried hard somehow to get out, and had to hang onto the root of a tree on the side of the river. He had to rest for a time to gather energy enough to get out of the river.

This situation, this story, is the story of the whole East. Yes, Buddha has got eyes. He can see as far as existence is. His vision is limitless but he has done one thing wrong: he has gone against the body, against nature. His achievement is partial. So is the achievement of Zorba partial.

Remember one thing: truth can only be the whole. It is just like a circle. You cannot draw half a circle. That is not possible. Just the word circle means FULL-CIRCLE. You cannot draw half a circle. That will be only an arc, not a circle. A circle has to be whole. And that's the situation about truth: truth has to be whole. Half a truth is worse than a lie.

Buddha is half of the truth, and Zorba is half of the truth. It is going to be difficult to explain to Buddhist that I am making an effort to create a synthesis between Zorba and Buddha. They may feel offended, but that does not matter. Truth is on my side, and I am ready for an open discussion with both Buddha and Zorba. And my vision is so clear that both are half and both have disturbed the whole humanity.

Now it is time for Zorba the Buddha to appear. Perhaps I am the first Zorba the Buddha. I take the responsibility of bringing this new kind of animal into the world. And my sannyasins have to be Zorba the Buddha. Nothing has to be sacrificed, and everything has to be experienced. From body to soul, from earth to sky, all is ours.

Q:* THE PROBLEMS OF SOUTH AFRICA ARE BASICALLY REFLECTED IN THE GOVERNMENT'S ATTITUDE TOWARDS JAPANESE. WE ARE ACCEPTABLE IN BUSINESS, BUT CULTURALLY WE ARE CONSIDERED COLORED AND HAVE SEMI-HUMAN STATUS. IS THERE ANY SOLUTION POSSIBLE IN SOUTH AFRICA?

A:* South Africa is not a big problem. Like all problems it is very simple, but the vested interests make everything complex. In South Africa only fifteen percent of the population is white, and these fifteen percent white are invaders. Eighty-five percent of the people, the natives of the land, have been living in slavery for centuries. They are simply slaves, servants, working in the coal mines, gold mines, diamond mines. Those mines belong to them, but they get only a little bit of money to survive. And the fifteen percent white people exploit their rich country, and have been doing so for three hundred years.

Now it has come to the point where something has to be done, but the problem is that these fifteen percent whites came three hundred years ago, and now they don't have anywhere to go. There are Dutch people, English people, Italians. There are others, but the majority is Dutch. Their own countries are not ready to accept them back, because no country wants its population to grow suddenly. Somehow they are keeping things in balance. Neither do these people really want to go back, because in their own countries they will be ordinary second-rate citizens. Maybe clerks, waiters, porters, while in South Africa, they are kings. All their investment is in South Africa. All the technology that they have brought, all the mechanism is in the mines of South Africa, and they know how much more is still there to be exploited. They have only scratched the surface. This is their greed and their fear of going back to their own countries where they will be almost foreigners.

They have started calling themselves Afrikaaner, they don't call themselves Dutch, English, French, Portuguese, Spanish. No, they have become a new race: Afrikaaner, and they call their language Afrikaans. They don't want to leave and I can understand the human greed. I can also understand their problem of who is going to accept them. Nobody is willing to accept them, but that does not mean they have to continue to exploit eighty-five percent of the people, their country, their land; nor that they have to go on being the ruling ones.

It is strange that in the twentieth century only the fifteen percent, the white people, have the voting right in South Africa. The eighty-five percent majority

has no voting right, so the question of their coming into power does not arise. They have nothing to do with power. They can't even vote. It is inhuman.
I can see the difficulty of the white people; I can see the exploitation of the black people, but it cannot continue the way it has up to now. It has come to a point of explosion. Now there is emergency rule. The whole country is under military rule, and South Africa has one of the biggest armies in the world. No journalist is allowed in, so nobody knows how many people are being killed and burned every day.
My suggestion is simple: fifteen percent of the land should become a new country -- Afrikaaner. Fifteen percent of the wealth should go to the new country, Afrikaaner. Fifteen percent of the army should go to the new country, Afrikaaner. Everything according to the percentage, with South Africa divided into two countries, Afrikaaner and South Africa.
It is so simple, if people really want to solve the problem. The white people should remain there. They have been there for three hundred years, and their old countries are not going to accept them back. It is enough time. But they should get according to their percentage. if they don't want to divide the country, then the eighty-five percent majority should be given the voting right. Naturally then the government will be of native South Africans.
These are two clear alternatives. And I think the white people will prefer the first. They would have at least fifteen percent of the country -- fifteen percent of its wealth, diamond mines, gold mines, and fifteen percent of the army -- and they would be their own rulers. And the native eighty-five percent of the people would have eighty-five percent of the army, eighty-five percent of the wealth, eighty-five percent of the land, and would be their own kings. I don't see a problem at all. They just have to sit with each other and find out the way to divide.
If the ruling minority insist that they don't want division, then they must give the eighty-five percent majority their voting rights. But then they will not have even the fifteen percent that was possible in the first place, because the native majority will throw them out of the government. Then they will be at the natives' service. Those natives who have served you for three hundred years -- now you serve them. they have worked in your mines and died -- now you work and die.
The whole world should insist that either of these two alternatives has to be accepted; otherwise, the South African government simply will be rejected by all the governments of the world. They should be thrown out of UNO. They have no right to represent a country where eighty-five percent of the people are against them. They should not be given any support. All businesses from other countries should be completely stopped. The present government should be forced either to accept the first conclusion, or accept the second alternative.
And I think the first is perfectly beautiful. They don't lose; they get as much as they deserve, fifteen percent. The native South Africans don't lose anything, they get as much as they deserve. One just needs the clarity to see. But this is the

problem: even when things are very simple, millions of people have to die, innocent people have to suffer. The idiotic politicians and power-hungry people go on massacring poor innocent children, women, old people.
In South Africa the army now is given the power to shoot anybody they suspect. No inquiry is needed; no arrest warrant is needed; no court has to decide. The military itself has all the powers to shoot ANYBODY, and suspicion is not something that you can later prove wrong or right. Whether it was wrong or right, it makes no difference -- it was not a certainty, it was only a suspicion. So now they are killing anybody they want to kill. It is the responsibility of the whole world to reject South Africa as a member of civilized humanity, because what they are doing is barbarous.
But even countries like America that are supposed to be the most advanced, progressive, democratic countries do things which are inconceivable. In the Second World War, when Japanese armies attached Pearl Harbor, one and one-half million Japanese -- who were living in America, who were American citizens, who had been living here for generations, and most of whom were born in America -- were given fifteen days notice to sell their properties, land, everything, and move to a special place that the American government was providing for them.
And the whole of America was kept in darkness. Even today that part is not mentioned in books of history about the Second World War.
In fact, all around the world, nobody knows what actually happened to those one and one-half million Japanese-Americans. Fifteen days was such a short notice -- how could you sell your businesses, your houses, your lands? -- and who is going to purchase them when the local buyers knew that within fifteen days you will have to go, that the lands, the buildings, your car, your shop, your business, everything will be left in their hands, free? Why purchase?
These one and one-half million Japanese-Americans who had earned all this with their own labor with their own intelligence, were really rich people. The Japanese have the knack of becoming rich; they know how to create wealth.
They had to leave, and they were not supposed to ask why or where they were going. Just one thing was told to them -- that the American government suspected that when America and Japan were at war they might favor Japan. And in a democratic country, the government had not a single proof that a single Japanese in America supported Japan. Out of one and one-half million people, they could not find a single proof that anyone was really or willing to support Japan.
They were ready to support and fight for America because they considered America their country; but they were taken into isolation in the desert where they were told that they would be taken care of on a reservation, just like the Red Indians. But it was not a reservation. Now facts have become available: it was the same kind of concentration camp that Adolf Hitler had created in Germany for Jews.

After the Second World War, the people who had been running those concentration camps in Germany were punished, but America was not punished even though they had behaved in the same way with absolutely innocent Japanese-Americans who were not in favor of Japan. They were tortured, no medical facilities were given, their food was not up to standard, and they were crushed like sub-human beings.

When they were brought back after the war, their properties were not returned, and have not been returned even yet. And this is a democracy! During the whole period of wartime, America was not able to find any proof to support their actions. When the Japanese-Americans were released, their businesses were in American hands, their cars were in American hands, Americans had taken over everything without giving a single paise in compensation.

Now forty years have passed and those Japanese-Americans are still asking the American government: "Give us some compensation. It was your duty.You forced us and we had not committed any crime, and you don't have a single case against us." And it is not a small thing -- one and a half million people and their properties -- and the American government is silent.

That's why I say that civilization has yet to come. It has not yet happened. There are only pretenders, hypocrites, but not truly democratic people anywhere. America is different from the Soviet Union only in hypocrisy. The Soviet Union is straightforward, a dictatorship. America IS a dictatorship proclaiming itself as a democracy, and now we can say it from our own experience.

For four years, Rajneeshees have been harassed by the American government -- the state government, the federal government -- without any legal reason on their part to support their acts against us. All their laws are in our favor and their constitution is in our favor, because from the very beginning I have made it clear to my people not to do anything knowingly or unknowingly against the American constitution; that it is the only constitution which at least accepts democracy, accepts freedom of speech, accepts respect for the individual -- so don't do anything.

We have not done anything against the constitution, but still we are being harassed in every possible way. They are taking advantage of all kinds of laws, which have never been applied to anyone in the whole history of America. Suddenly those laws have become applicable to us, and those laws go against the American constitution. So now my new stand is that we will fight the American government in Oregon, and if needed, then the federal government, to save the American constitution. We are for the American constitution and its values, and even if we have to fight with the Americans themselves, we will fight to the very end -- because that constitution is the only hope for humanity some day to become democratic, some day to become really civilized and human. Okay, Nartan?

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #23
Chapter title: None
9 August 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This is a typed tape transcript and has not been edited or published, as of August 1992. It is for reference use only. The interviewer's remarks have been omitted where not relevant to Osho's words]
INTERVIEW WITH NATHAN WOOD, THE ROGERS CABLE SYSTEM, PORTLAND, OREGON

QUESTION:* YOU LOOK VERY NICE IN BLUE. IS THAT ONE OF YOUR FAVORITE COLORS?

ANSWER:* All colors are my favorites, except red.

Q:* DO YOU SEE A LOT OF RED AROUND HERE?

A:* Your tie!. That is a lot.

Q:* WHY DO THESE PEOPLE LIKE YOU SO MUCH? WHY ARE YOU SO APPEALING?

A:* I am also wondering.

Q:* IS IT THE BEARD OR THE MONEY OR THE PRESTIGE?

A:* I don't have any money. I don't have any prestige. I am notorious all over the world. What prestige can I have? To be with me needs courage. To be with a notorious man... you will lose your prestige if you are with me.

Q:* WHY IS THAT?

A:* Because I am notorious. You need not do anything; you just be with me and you will lose your prestige, your respectability, your service. Everything will be gone.
They love me because I love them, and they cannot love me more than I love them. The love of all my sannyasins around the world is put on one side of a scale and my love for them on the other side, I'm going to be weightier.

Q:* WHEN OR IF YOU DO PASS AWAY, OR IF YOU DIED, IF SOMETHING HAPPENED, WHO WOULD TAKE OVER? WOULD THERE BE SOMEONE TO TAKE OVER? WHAT WOULD HAPPEN TO RAJNEESHPURAM IF SOMETHING HAPPENED TO YOU?

A:* Let me start from some point.... I have been waiting my whole life for somebody to ask it, but nobody asks me what will happen to me when I die. Nobody is worried about that.
I will be dying and you will be living here. The whole trouble and the journey into the unknown is for me. Nobody seems to be concerned about that; everybody is concerned about those who will be left behind, living. What kind of minds have human beings got? Very egocentric. I am dying and even at my last breath you will be asking, "What will happen to all these people who will be living?" Nobody will ask, "Bhagwan, forget all about us. We will be living and you are going on an unknown pilgrimage. What can we do for you?"

Q:* WHAT KIND OF A PILGRIMAGE WOULD YOU BE GOING ON WHEN YOU DIE?

A:* Whatever kind of pilgrimage, when one is dying at least he is out of this world, out of this life, out of all that is known. He is moving into the dark and the unknown and the unfathomable. If you really love the person you will be concerned about him. But the trouble is that everybody is concerned about himself, although you will be living and I will be dying.

Q:* WHAT COULD WE DO THEN? WHAT COULD WE THE LIVING DO TO HELP?

A:* At least you could ask the question. But for my whole life I have been waiting and nobody has asked it. I am simply pointing at the fact of how egocentric man is. Now your question....
My whole teaching is centered on the present moment, this moment. I do not care for any tomorrows. In the first place, the tomorrow never comes; whatever comes is always the now. You are never there, you are always here. Existence knows only two words, now and here.
I have heard about an atheist who was very much against God. To remind himself and his clients, his children, his wife, his friends, he had written in his sitting room in big bold letter, "God is nowhere."
Then a child is born the the atheist, a small child. He starts growing and learning. Learning the alphabet, he reads the sentence, "God is nowhere." But nowhere is such a big word for him that he splits the word in two. He reads, "God is now here." That mistake transformed the whole mind of his father. For the first time he could see that nowhere consists of now and here.

Existence is now and here. I have never bothered about the future. When I leave the body these people will celebrate, as we celebrate everything. And I have no responsibility for them, so the question of anybody succeeding me does not arise. The successor is needed only when I am having any responsibility. I have no responsibility. My approach is that everybody is responsible for his own life.
In this commune they are not here to dump their responsibility on me; they are here to learn how to stop dumping responsibility on others, how to take the whole responsibility of life on one's own shoulders. That's what gives a man dignity, integrity, self. For the first time he feels he is. And the responsibility makes him free of all kinds of slaveries, enslavements.
So, I'm not going to say what they have to do when I am gone. That is manipulating people even when you are dead. Moses is still manipulating the Jews. He was not satisfied while alive. While alive he tortured his people for forty years in the Middle East desert in search of some holy land.

Q:* SO WOULD YOU SAY THAT THE BIBLE IS ACCURATE IN SPEAKING OF MOSES, OR IS THAT A MYTH?

A:* The BIBLE is just fiction.

Q:* YOU MENTIONED GOD JUST A FEW MINUTES AGO AND I WAS WONDERING WHAT YOU CONCEPT OF GOD IS. I KNOW YOU'VE BEEN ASKED THAT SO MANY TIMES, BUT....

A:* My concept is exactly whole because I can read nowhere; I don't have to cut words in two. God is nowhere.

Q:* GOD IS NOWHERE. I WAS WONDERING THAT, BECAUSE WHEN...

A:* No, wait, don't wonder, let me finish. Moses tortured Jews for forty years. Almost seventy-five percent of his followers died in that stupid search for a holy land. And finally, not because they had found the holy land, but just to save face, he declared Israel to be the holy land. Now there is nothing holy in Israel! And Moses gave commandments to them to be followed after he is gone. The same was done by Mohammed, by Buddha. They were too much concerned about what their people are going to do when they are gone.
It is something of tremendous importance that they were so much concerned. The reason is that in their presence they have persuaded the disciples to repress every natural instinct. Sex has to be repressed and they have to be celibate. Under their influence and charismatic personality people have accepted something absolutely unnatural. Only an impotent man can be celibate; and no impotent man has been known to become enlightened, not yet. He has no energy in him. Enlightenment will need a tremendous explosion of energy. He cannot

even create a child; how can he create himself in a totally luminous way? So no impotent man has ever become enlightened.
And all the people who became enlightened were really over-sexual. In fact their over-sexuality was one of the causes for their enlightenment. They had so much energy that the woman was not enough. Many women were also not enough. They had such a great energy that they wanted to make love to the whole existence itself, and that's what enlightenment is, and orgiastic experience with existence itself.

Q:* ARE YOU ENLIGHTENED?

A:* Yes.

Q:* HOW ENLIGHTENED. ARE YOU VERY ENLIGHTENED?

A:* There are no quantities in enlightenment; either you are enlightened or you are not enlightened.

Q:* I WANTED TO ASK YOU A QUESTION AS FAR AS OTHER RELIGIONS....

A:* No, I have not answered your first question. You asked me what I am thinking about these people after I am gone. I am not even thinking now, when I am here.
I am giving them total freedom. I have not enforced anything on them that will make me afraid that once I am gone these celibates are going to create trouble. I have not repressed anything. If they want to smoke, I tell them to smoke the best cigar possible -- don't go for anything second rate. If you want to love, find out the best man, the best woman, and go into it as totally as possible. I am in support of expression and all the so-called religions were in support of repression. When you repress people you are certainly afraid that when you are gone there is going to be chaos.
That problem does not exist for me. When I am gone there is going to be no chaos because chaos was all that I have been training my people for. My commune is a chaos and yet a very organic chaos, a very creative chaos, a chaos out of which stars are born. That's why that kind of question becomes very difficult for me to answer. I am not giving them any discipline, any rules of conduct. I am simply teaching them to be aware, alert, to be independent. Take your responsibility and do whatsoever you want to do. Don't bother about Moses, or Jesus, or Buddha, or me.
Jesus lived his way; he never bothered about others. If he had bothered about others; the Jews would never have crucified him. Buddha never bothered about anybody. I don't accept anybody as my master or my leader. I am nobody's

shadow, nobody's carbon copy, and that's what I am teaching to my people: Don't be anybody's carbon copy, including me.
So, alive, dance with me, rejoice with me. When I am gone continue to dance and rejoice in remembrance of a man who gave you freedom, who gave you individuality. What else is there to bother about the future? Wherever I am -- somewhere I must be -- I will go on showering my love on my people and I know they will find ways to respond. But that is something very private; I cannot reveal it to a non-sannyasin.

Q:* YOU HAVE MADE A LOT OF DIFFERENT REMARKS ABOUT RELIGIONS, AND -- I BELIEVE THIS IS YOUR MOST RECENT ONE; YOU'LL CORRECT ME, I'M SURE YOU WILL -- THAT THIS IS THE TRUE RELIGION, THIS IS THE TRUE CHURCH. CORRECT?

A:* Right.

Q:* YOU ALSO SAID THAT YOU WERE BUILDING AN ORCHESTRA OUT OF ALL THESE OTHER RELIGIONS. HOW DO YOU PROPOSE TO DO THAT?

A:* I have done it already. There is no question of proposition. You can see my commune, Jews, Mohammedans, Christians, Hindus, Buddhists, Jainas.

Q:* SO YOU WEREN'T SPEAKING OF THE WHOLE WORLD, THEN, YOU WERE JUST SPEAKING OF IN THE COMMUNE?

A:* I am just speaking of my world. Hell to the whole world!

Q:* YOU MADE A COMMENT A FEW YEARS BACK, I BELIEVE, THAT TWO THIRDS OF THE WORLD POPULATION WOULD DIE OF AIDS. NOW RECENTLY ALL THE THINGS THAT WE'VE SEEN IN THE NEWS, THAT THE FIGURES ARE JUST ASTRONOMICAL, DO YOU FEEL THAT YOUR PREDICTION IS STARTING TO COME TRUE?

A:* No need because they are going to die; there is no way to save them.

Q:* HOW SOON DO YOU THINK?

A:* Within the last twenty years before the twenty-first century, they are going to die either by nuclear weapons or by AIDS. The nuclear weapons are the culmination of our whole past politics. AIDS is the culmination of our whole religious past.
AIDS is the logical conclusion of all sexual perversions; and religions have caused all kinds of perversions in man. Homosexuality is a very religious

discipline. Monks were forced to live together in monasteries where no woman was allowed to enter. There is a Catholic monastery in Athos, one thousand years old. In these one thousand years not even a six-month-old baby girl has entered the monastery. Even that is not allowed. I sometimes wonder -- a six-month-old baby girl -- what is the fear and what kind of monks are living inside? Are they monks or monsters? And in Athos the rule is that once you enter the monastery only your dead body comes out. You will never come out alive to have any contact with other human beings. There are nunneries where only women can live; no men can enter. Now what do you want? You are creating the situation for homosexuality, lesbianism, masturbation and all kinds of things. These monks, these nuns are the original sources of AIDS.

So your politics have brought you to the third world war, which is looming on the horizon, and your religions have brought you to AIDS. Your political and religious leaders have done great service to humanity and to this planet.

I am certainly concerned about my people. They have been given all the information about AIDS. Meanwhile, the governments are trying to repress exact information for the simple reason that if they accept that AIDS is spreading, if may create anarchy, chaos, turmoil. Rich people can afford private doctors, private physicians, and they can keep their mouths shut with their dollars. There are many people who have AIDS; they are confirmed by the medical profession but the public does not know about them.

Just think of the situation. A person who has AIDS can live at the most two years, at the most, which is almost impossible. If he remains secluded, avoids all kinds of infections, does not come in contact with anybody, perhaps he may survive two years; otherwise, six months is going to be the average. Just think, you are given six months to live. You would not like to be condemned by people that you have AIDS. You bribe the doctor. And you have only six months to live, naturally you will make as many sexual contacts as possible. Life is fleeing out of your hands. You would like to do everything that you always wanted to do but you had time to postpone. Now there is no time to postpone, so these people who are not made known to the public are going around spreading AIDS like wildfire.

Q:* SO YOU DON'T THINK THE FEDERAL GOVERNMENT IS DOING ENOUGH TO CONTROL AIDS, THEN?

A:* Not at all. They are doing nothing. Their senators have AIDS and they have not yet imprisoned those senators. Their senators are homosexuals; they should be immediately arrested. There is no other way: put them into imprisonment.

Q:* WOULD YOU DO THAT WITH A SANNYASIN IF HE OR SHE HAD AIDS?

A:* There is no need because my sannyasins are living in a totally different world. I have one million sannyasins around the world and I am trying for them all to come and live in communes, not to live in the outside world. So I am segregating them into different places, into different countries, in communes. We do not condemn anything; every sannyasin goes through the medical test and if he finds that he has AIDS the whole commune is full of compassion for the person.

Q:* ARE YOU TESTING FOR AIDS, THEN?

A:* Yes, we have our own medical center, all kinds of expertise: doctors, nurses, a hospital. And we have a special place far away in the mountains where we remove those people who have AIDS. We take care of them. We give them everything they need, books to read, films to see, games to play. They are respected in the commune, and everybody is responsible that they are no longer to make any sexual contact. Not even kissing, because AIDS is caught through kissing.

So I'm telling my sannyasins to change their patterns and drop the idea of kissing which is certainly unhygienic even without AIDS. Two persons mixing their saliva which contains all kinds of germs. And there are idiots who are doing French kissing. I have suggested that my sannyasins change that pattern: start rubbing noses with each other. Hygienic, clean, and if sometimes somebody has a cold, at the most you can catch cold. And this is not a big problem. Nobody considers a cold a disease. If you don't take medicine it goes in seven days; if you take medicine it goes in one week. And this is not something new; Eskimos have been doing it for their whole history. They don't kiss, they rub their noses and they enjoy rubbing their noses. As much as you want, you can rub. There is no problem and I think Eskimos are far more progressive, at lest about kissing. There are other aboriginal tribes also, in India, where noses are rubbed and kissing is simply laughed at.

When Christian missionaries reached those aboriginal tribes to spread Christianity, the aboriginals have not stopped laughing yet about two things. One they call the missionary posture, man on top of the woman, which looked very ugly to the aboriginal. The woman is fragile, delicate, she should be on top. And this huge animal is putting all his weight and doing push-ups on the poor woman. In India this posture is called missionary posture because they came to know about it for the first time through Christian missionaries. Otherwise in India there are known eighty-four different postures and in those eighty-four different postures the Christian missionary posture is not included. And second thing that they could not believe is that these people kiss. And these people are trying to open hospitals, medicine -- can't they understand what they are doing, that this is very unhygienic?

The aboriginals who are five thousand years behind the civilization have never agreed for kissing. Even though they had become Christians -- they were poor and Christians could provide them with food, clothes, education -- they have not started kissing. They still rub noses.
So, as far as my sannyasins are concerned, perhaps they will be the only ones who can escape the calamity of AIDS. We don't condemn anybody; if he has AIDS, so what? Take precautions. He is not humiliated and disrespected for that; on the other hand, he becomes the center of the love of the whole commune. Now we have two sannyasins who have confirmed AIDS. We are taking care of them and we have given them the most beautiful part of our land, the best beautiful view.

Q:* ARE THEY HERE IN THIS COMMUNE?

A:* Yes, they are here in this commune, but we have one hundred twenty-six square miles, so they are miles away, beyond the lake, living in a beautiful place and doing whatsoever they can do. They can do proof-reading, they can do editing or whatever they want. They can simply make a beautiful garden there. And if both those two sannyasins want to make love to each other there is no problem. Nothing more can happen to them; what has to happen has happened. Perhaps two persons having AIDS making love may come to discover this is the only way to get rid of the disease -- nobody knows. So we may be able to find out: if they survive more than two years that means we have found what medical science has failed to find. But we will be taking care of these people. They are victims of religions, but what they can do?
If the politicians and the religious leaders -- that means nuclear weapons and AIDS -- are in a race to destroy humanity, I don't think politicians have guts enough to go for a third world war, because both sides, America and the Soviet Union, have enough nuclear weapons to destroy this planet seven hundred times. I don't think any politician in America or any politician in Russia has guts enough -- and what is the point?
The whole point in a war is to be victorious, but in this war nobody is going to be left alive. The question of who was victorious and who was defeated will remain unsettled and there will be no one to write the history, either. Just because of the totality of war, war is an impossibility. There is no need for pacifists, unnecessary to scream and take protest march. Just forget all about it; nuclear weapons have already done. They have finished the idea of war. Politicians can go on talking about war because that keeps them in power, but there is going to be no war.

Q:* WHAT WOULD HAPPEN IN YOUR OPINION IF A THIRD WORLD COUNTRY GOT HOLD OF A BOMB AND DETONATED IT AND STARTED ANOTHER WAR?

A:* NOBODY can start it because everybody knows that starting it is finishing the whole humanity. And those poor countries who are dying.... Do you think Ethiopia is going to have nuclear weapons? Do you think India is going to have nuclear weapons? They are trying, but half of their population is on the verge of becoming another Ethiopia. They are selling their wheat. The people who have produced the wheat are dying because they are hungry, and their wheat -- their production, their labor -- is being exported so that India can manage to have a nuclear plant. Sheer stupidity. But even if they can get, nobody can conceive India becoming a nuclear power comparable to the Soviet Union or America.

Q:* INDIA MAY NOT HAVE IT NOW AND IT MAY NOT BE A THREAT, BUT WHAT ABOUT CUBA OR LIBYA OR KHADAFI?

A:* NOBODY. Even if they can afford, even if they can make, nobody has guts to start seeing the whole perspective. The whole thing is clear that if you start, that is not the end; soon you will be retaliated with nuclear missiles and you will be destroyed. And your starting it will mean the end of the world. So I don't think there is any possibility of third world war. It is simply canceled. It is strange how things happen in history -- war goes on becoming bigger and bigger and bigger and a point comes when it is to big, and you cannot manage to have it. War itself commits suicide, that's what the third world war is.

Once Albert Einstein was asked, "Can you say something to us about the third world war?" He said, "I have no idea. If you want to know about the fourth world war I can say something." The inquirer was simply at a loss. He could not believe what Einstein was saying. "About the third world war you cannot say anything? What can you say about the fourth world war?" And Einstein said, "It will never happen; that much can be said about it. But about the third world war there is no way to say anything."

So the war is certainly canceled -- nuclear war. Any other kinds of war can go on. They are just football games, so I'm not concerned about that. But AIDS is certainly my concern because it is spreading, individual to individual.

No government control is possible. Even your president, your prime ministers may be having it. Nobody knows unless everybody is checked. You should begin with President Ronald Reagan -- that is the place to start with -- the White House should be completely checked because this White House is just like white lies. What is going on inside it is all black. In Oregon catch hold of Governor Atiyeh and start checking from there. First all your assembly members, your senators; first do it on the highest level because these are the people who can keep it to themselves and go on spreading. And then by and by come lower and lower, and find out people, then these people have to be segregated someplace.

It is such an urgency it cannot be delayed. And the whole humanity has to be made aware of all the facts relating to AIDS, all precautions that are possible. And around the world create the atmosphere that if anybody has AIDS he is

simply a victim of centuries of stupid religious ideas. Don't be hard on him. Help him so at least in these last days of his life, he can relax. There is no need for him to be employed, no need for him to think of other responsibilities. Free him from all responsibilities. Let him enjoy music, movies, literature. Be compassionate to him.
I don't think your world is going to do it, but my communes are doing it already.

Q:* NOW YOU'VE MADE A POINT IN THE PAST THAT YOU HAVE A VERY OPEN SEXUAL COMMUNE HERE. HOW DOES THAT EFFECT THE CHILDREN IN REGARDS TO CHILDREN ON THE OUTSIDE? ARE THEY BEING EXPOSED TO SEX AT AN EARLIER AGE? HAVE YOU NOTICED ANY DIFFERENCES?

A:* There is no problem at all. Children are told everything about sex not in any roundabout way of explaining, but direct and exact. And once their curiosity is satisfied they don't bother about it; they will bother only when they are sexually mature. In the outside society they become interested before their sexual maturity because they see in the movies, they see in the streets, they see in their parents, and they wonder what is going on.
A child is very curious to know about everything that he comes access, and you create all kinds of curiosities. He knows his father is reading magazines like PLAYBOY, and he also looks into the magazines when the father is in the bathroom. He knows his mother is frittering with somebody else. Children are very conscious, very alert, silent, but watching everything that is going on around them. Naturally he becomes curious -- something is being kept secret from him. -- and this curiosity is dangerous; he may try to do something that others are doing. It must be really great because everybody is doing it, every movie, every family. All the children are talking about it, so there must be something really experienceable.
But in my commune it is totally different. We tell our children everything. We tell them they are allowed to ask all the question, that there is nothing to hide, there is no secret. And we tell them that soon they will become mature, soon they will be having sexual experiences, so it is better to be acquainted with all the facts about sexuality as well as all the fictions which are all untrue but have been told to children down the ages. So we are making them aware of the facts and the fictions. Then, when they are sexually mature, we do no not prevent them from having sexual affairs. We simply introduce them to precautions; that is their responsibility. If a girl becomes pregnant she becomes a burden on the boy she loves and she becomes burdened by her own act, so we provide to them all birth control methods. In every bathroom we have free birth control methods available. They can go to the medical center and get the pill. We help them in every way.

We don't want them to remain celibate because celibacy is cause of AIDS. We want them to know as many girls, as many boys as possible. The richer their experience the better for choosing a life partner later. If a boy has known hundreds of girls he is more experienced and more capable of finding the right girl with whom he can manage to live. There will be less nagging, less fighting, less jealousy because the girl has also experienced hundreds of boys before she decided for this boy. The boy had experienced hundreds of girls before he decided for this girl. They both know.

And in my commune it is absolutely allowed even after marriage that if the girl wants to go with someone for a day or two, or the husband wants to go with someone, it should be respected. It is their freedom. Once in a while a little change is good, and it is not destructive of marriage. On the contrary, it helps the people to remain together. Their love becomes more and more a friendship. In the ordinary world people are together but their love becomes more and more an intimate enmity. Here, their togetherness becomes more and more a friendship, and any day they want to change their partners that is their freedom, their choice. So nobody is crying and weeping and screaming. If you hear anybody screaming, crying, you should know that he is doing Dynamic Meditation; it is not the ordinary screaming that goes on in every other household. And we give them one hour every morning to scream as much as they can, so for twenty-three hours there is no need. We are absolutely simple and natural.

In the four years we have been here not a single child has been born. People understand their responsibility. We are the only people in the whole world who understand responsibility. Right now the world population is four billion and it is increasing at the rate of one billion per decade. By the end of this century there is not going to be elbow room -- on both sides you will find somebody standing. What are your governments doing and what are your churches doing? Four sannyasins have certainly died in our commune but not a new child has been born. And we are not going to give birth to children till the world population is reduced to one fourth.

Q:* ONE FOURTH OF WHAT IT IS TODAY?

A:* What it is today. Without coming to one fourth there will be Ethiopias, there will be Indias, there will be small-scale wars. These are just methods of nature to bring balance. Nuclear war is out of the question; there will be diseases, AIDS and everything, just to cut the population.

But my commune is perfectly responsible, happy, rejoicing. It is not that anybody is controlling them; we only inform them that these are the facts -- now they are intelligent enough to draw the conclusions. And my communes certainly are intelligent enough. Almost everybody is a graduate. Most of the people have masters degrees, a few have Ph.D.'s, a few are D.Litt.'s. And they come from all professions: psychiatrists, professors, doctors, engineers, electronic experts,

computer experts. We are absolutely self-sufficient. And that's what we are doing around the world. We are trying to make every commune self-sufficient.
If the outside world dies of AIDS or anything we can still survive and we can manage humanity's heritage. The planet need not die with the popes and with the presidents and the prime ministers. It can live, go on living with dancing and celebrating sannyasins. But we are not serious about anything. This, too, is not a serious affair. We do everything playfully.

Q:* I JUST HAVE ONE FINAL QUESTION TO ASK YOU. WHAT IS A TYPICAL DAY FOR YOU? WHAT DO YOU DO FIRST IN THE MORNING? HOW DO YOU START YOUR DAYS?

A:* First, I'm an absolutely lazy man. I call myself the lazy man's guide to enlightenment, so I am a non-doer. In the morning I have to be awakened otherwise I'm not going to wake up. At six o'clock they wake my up, and then I take one and a half hours in my bathroom relaxing in my bath. I love my bathroom the best; it is my temple. They have made for me really beautiful, gorgeous bathrooms. And not only one because I'm always for two of everything, not less than that, because if something goes wrong in one bathroom I'm not going to miss my bath. A second bathroom has to be constantly alert and ready. So for one and a half hours I enjoy in my bathroom. I have the best bubble baths. I'm allergic to perfumes, so I can take only herbal bubble baths. If you come to my bathroom you will be surprised to see what a treasure I have got there: the world's best shampoos, hair conditioners, liquid soaps without perfume, all kinds. It is really difficult every day for me to choose.... It takes my almost five minutes to figure out what this combination will do.
After my one and a half hours I take one glass of juice; that is my whole breakfast. And then I go for my morning talk, two and a half hours gossiping with my sannyasins. I don't have any gospel I have only gossips, and I laugh with them, enjoy with them. By eleven I'm back. Eleven is my time for my lunch. and has been for my whole life. I have never missed my lunch at eleven. At eleven-thirty I go to sleep. That, too, I have never missed.
I have always slept from eleven till two for the simple reason that if you sleep in the day for one or two hours, you have two mornings instead of one. And why miss the other? And sleeping is just a beautiful activity. Patanjali, the founder of yoga, has described the ultimate state of consciousness as very similar to deep sleep. The only difference is that in the ultimate state of consciousness -- what he calls samadhi -- one is aware; in deep sleep one is not aware. For me now there is no difference: my sleep is my samadhi. I am aware, so I am enjoying my sleep in a double way. Patanjali, Buddha, Mahavira, all those great Indian founders of religion missed something that I am enjoying -- they missed the afternoon nap.
They could not sleep because all these so-called great prophets and messiahs were fulfilling the expectations of mediocre people who were their followers.

Now it doesn't look right for a Buddha to sleep in the day -- it looks lazy, it looks luxurious. And Buddha had not guts enough to say to those followers, that "If you cannot accept me as having an afternoon nap, then just get lost. Just to fulfill your expectations, I am not going to change myself."

Many times many people have told me that a religious man, particularly in India, should wake up at three o'clock in the morning. That is the traditional Indian spirituality, three o'clock in the morning. I said, "I am ready to lose my enlightenment, my religiousness and everything, but forget completely that I am going to wake up at three o'clock in the morning. That is the best time to sleep; the most precious time is between three and five -- those two hours are the deepest. It is a scientific fact, but I have known it according to my own experience that those two hours are the most important because you go deeper. And I am fully conscious, so I can see when I go deep. Now science has come to support it. They have found a way -- your temperature falls down when you go deeper into sleep. Between three and five, your temperature comes. down; otherwise for twenty-two hours it remains the same, normal. For two hours, it suddenly falls down. So I enjoy my afternoon sleep.

Then at two o'clock I have to be awakened again. I go for a drive that I have always loved, and my sannyasins have made a beautiful road just for me. Perhaps I am the poorest and the richest man in the world: I don't possess anything, but everything that anybody can possess, I use it. I don't think even the Queen of England has a private road going into the forest in the hills by the side of a lake. It is used only for one hour, and there is no traffic, so there is no question of following any stupid laws of being on the right or being on the left. Mostly I follow being in the middle, which is not allowed anywhere else in the world. That's why I enjoy it.

Back at three o'clock, I rest just sitting in my chair. I have a beautiful haiku from a Japanese poet which says: Sitting silently, doing nothing, and the grass grows by itself. That's all -- haikus are very small statements, but of tremendous meaning. So for one and a half hours, I am just sitting silently, doing nothing, and let the grass grow itself. And it is growing. My grass is not green, it is red. And it is growing all around the world while I am simply sitting in my room, doing nothing. Even Basho was not aware -- he was thinking only of the grass by his side in the Zen garden where he was silently sitting. My grass is growing all over the world and I am not doing anything for it. But one and a half hours I enjoy sitting; then again for one and a half hours, I am back in my bathroom for my evening shower. Then I have my supper, and from the supper I come directly here for the interviews. By nine, nine-fifteen, I will be back. Then my personal secretary has one or two hours -- whatsoever she needs -- for any advice for the commune around the world, any letters to be answered. Mostly, they do them themselves, unless they find something that needs my advice; then they bring it to me. At eleven in the night, all my life I have eaten a certain kind of Indian sweet that I eat and go to bed. Without eating my sweet, I cannot sleep.

Q:* WHAT KIND OF A SWEET IS IT?

A:* It is a Bengali sweet which is not known in the West, but is the best. It is made of milk but the butter is taken out. You heat the milk and just pour lemon juice into the boiling milk. It separates, and what is left is called *** (name of sweet).

It is something that the West has not used. It is the lightest sweet. In Bengal it is given to patients or to those who are recovering from a long sickness. It is very helpful and tremendously delicious. From eleven to six, I am again knocked out. And it existence wants me again tomorrow, I will be awakened; otherwise I am gone -- gone with the wind.

My life is very simple -- the same. For thirty-five years it has been the same. I never got bored by it for the simple reason that I never compare two days. If you go on giving me the same food for a whole year, I will not complain because I don't compare. Yesterday is gone, finished. I again enjoy the same food with the same freshness, with the same excitement, with the same enlightenment as I have always done. My people go on doing everything for me. You see this beautiful robe? You were impressed by the colors -- my people make my robes, my people make my shoes, my people make my watches. Everything that I have on is made by my people. That's why I say everything that I am wearing is priceless because it is made of love. If somebody is going to give me a billion dollars for this watch, I am not going to sell it. There is no price which can purchase this watch because it has been made by my sannyasins with so much love and so much care. And these are not diamonds -- and that's why I loved it even more -- these are real stones, defeating diamonds.

I have always enjoyed whenever a stone defeats a diamond, whenever a genius comes out from the lower classes and defeats all the super-rich. And it has been always so -- all the geniuses have come from lower classes. The super-rich have been absolutely impotent; they have not contributed to civilization in any way. They have not given birth to a single Picasso, a single Dostoevski, a single Turgenev, Gorky, Marx, Albert Einstein... they are just futile, getting fat.

In America there are half a million people suffering from over eating, obesity; and this year exactly half a million people in the third world are going to die of hunger. It is a strange world we have created in which half a million people are dying because they have no food, and the other half-million are dying because they are eating too much. Their fridges are so full.

I have heard a story of a man whose wife was becoming bigger and bigger, fatter and fatter and was looking so ugly that to go with her in the society was just a shame. So he brought a beautiful picture of a nude girl, well-proportioned, and put that picture inside the fridge, where his wife was continuously going to give an idea what a woman should be like. But the trouble changed: the man started going to the fridge to look at the girl! The wife stopped; she hated to see that girl.

She would have killed that girl. She stopped going to the fridge and she started getting slimmer. But the husband started going to look at the girl and while looking at the girl, he would get interested in the ice cream and this and that. Soon the situation changed -- the wife was slim and the husband was ashamed to go with her in the outside society.

But this is what is happening around the world. A few people are dying because they have too much; a few people are dying because they have nothing. Just a little understanding, and we can create a beautiful humanity and a beautiful world where nobody needs to die, where nobody needs to suffer from AIDS. All that you have to do is to change stupid ideas and make man a natural human being, and allow his humanity and nature total freedom.

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #24
Chapter title: None
10 August 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This is a typed tape transcript and has not been edited or published, as of August 1992. It is for reference use only. The interviewer's remarks have been omitted where not relevant to Osho's words]
INTERVIEW WITH MARCEL BRUYNS TROS NATIONAL TV, THE NETHERLANDS

Q:* BHAGWAN, ABOUT YOUR HEALTH. HOW ARE YOU DOING?

A:* Just great.

Q:* YOUR DISCIPLES LAUGHING IN THE BACKGROUND, WHY DO YOU THINK THEY LAUGH?

A:* Just my presence is enough for them to laugh, rejoice, sing, dance. I am here.

Q:* HOW DOES IT FEEL TO BE THE MASTER OF HALF A MILLION PEOPLE AROUND THE WORLD?

A:* Groovy.

Q:* BHAGWAN, YOU HAVE BEEN SILENT FOR THREE AND A HALF YEARS. WHAT MADE YOU DECIDE TO SPEAK UP AGAIN?

A:* Because the world is at a very great crisis. The politicians have brought the world to the ultimate destruction of this beautiful planet. It has to be stopped.

Q:* HOW CAN YOU DO THAT?

A:* Just by spreading my red people around the earth; creating more and more silence, peace, meditativeness; destroying people's old programs of being American, Russian, Indian, Dutch, German; destroying their old ideas of being Mohammedan, Christian, Jew, Hindu. Because this whole earth is ours, all the boundary lines of nations should disappear. Only then there is a guarantee there is not going to be a war in the future. I am for one world, one government. if nations are there, then war is inevitable.

Q:* BHAGWAN, RECENTLY YOU MADE AN ATTACK ON THE CHURCHES AND ON MOTHER TERESA CALLING HER A CRIMINAL AND BLAMING HER FOR THE POVERTY AND THE ANGUISH IN THE THIRD WORLD. DO YOU NOT BELIEVE THAT LIFE IS GOD-GIVEN?

A:* There is no God.

Q: WHAT DO ALL THE PEOPLE IN THE WORLD BELIEVE IN, THEN?

A:* Their beliefs are blind; the very word belief means blind. If you know, you know; you do not believe. You don't believe in the sun, in the moon. You don't believe in the roses, in the trees. You believe in God. You believe in heaven. You believe in hell. Those are all fictions.

Q:* ARE YOU A GOD?

A:* No.

Q:* ... OR A MAN? YOU ARE A MAN?

A:* I am just an ordinary man.

Q:* BUT YOU ARE ENLIGHTENED.

A:* That is not much of a difference. It is just a difference between closed eyes and open eyes.

Q:* YOU BELIEVE IN POLYGAMY, BUT YOU ARE AFRAID OF OVER-POPULATION. YOU BELIEVE IN FREE SEX, AND YOU ARE AFRAID OF AIDS. HOW CAN YOU PROPAGATE POLYGAMY AND FREE SEX WITHOUT PROTECTING YOUR FOLLOWERS FROM AIDS?

A:* I am protecting them already; there is no question of how. First, I am not in favor of polygamy as against monogamy. I am in favor of dissolving the very institution of marriage. That is the ugliest institution that has happened to man. Marriage dissolved, there is no question of monogamy or polygamy. People are free: if they want to be together, they are together; if they don't want to be together, that is their decision. And children should be taken care of by the commune. Children should not belong to families, but to the commune. And I am taking perfect care of my people. In four years not a single child has been born in this commune.

Q:* WE KNOW BHAGWAN, THAT YOU ARE LIVING A RATHER RICH LIFE. BUT DO YOU THINK THAT LIFE IS WORTH LIVING FOR THE POOR?

A:* Those who are poor are themselves responsible for their poverty. They have believed in idiotic religious ideologies which have made them remain poor.

Q:* AND YOU DON'T WANT TO HELP THEM?

A:* They have to suffer whatsoever they have done. And if they have to punish someone, they should punish the Pope, Mother Teresa, Shankaracharya, Ayatollah Khomeini. Hang all of them: these are the people who are against birth control, against the pill, against abortion. These are the people who are increasing the population. The Pope increases the population and I am responsible for it? And those poor people listen to the Pope, not to me, so what I have to do with them?

Q:* IT DOESN'T MATTER TO YOU THAT YOU ARE INSULTING MAYBE HALF THE WORLD BY SAYING THIS?

A:* I want the world population to be reduced to one fourth. Only then can this world be comfortable, luxurious; can people live, enjoy, rejoice, create. Life can be a blessing. With this population it is a nightmare, and the responsibility goes to your religious leaders. I am not going to suffer for their crime. Neither me nor my people. We are living in comfort, in luxury. And I believe in comfort and luxury. Man has the intelligence to create more comfort than nature is capable of giving, more luxury than nature has ever intended to offer. And man should use the opportunity. These poor people who are dying in Ethiopia, in India, or anywhere, have listened to the wrong people. Now they should take revenge. They should burn the Vatican; they should take over all the churches. I am not responsible for their poverty. For thirty years I have been teaching birth control methods, abortion. And the poor people whom I have been teaching these things have been throwing stones at me, have been throwing shoes at me, have made attempts on my life. Strange reward -- I am trying to show them how to prevent becoming more and more poor, and they want to kill me. I am simply finished with all that nonsense. They should go to their Pope, to their Khomeini, to Shankaracharya and settle their things. i am concerned only with my red people and with nobody else.

Q:* DO YOU REALLY HAVE TO BE A LITTLE BIT OUT OF YOUR MIND TO BECOME A SANNYASINS? YOU ONCE SAID THAT.

A:* Certainly. There are two ways of being out of the mind. One is falling below it; then you go into an insane asylum. The other is going above it; then you

become enlightened. But both are out of mind. Hence there is a certain similarity between the madman and the Buddha. A certain similarity.

Q:* AREN'T YOU FREEZING?

A:* No.

Q:* IT IS COLD IN HERE.

A:* I love freezing.

Q:* BUT YOU HAVE BEAUTIFUL CLOTHES ON.

A:* They are not thicker than yours.

Q:* BHAGWAN, RECENTLY THE POPE OF ROME PAID A VISIT TO THE NETHERLANDS. DON'T YOU THINK THAT YOU HAVE TO COME THERE TO SEE HOW YOUR FIVE THOUSAND DUTCH FRIENDS ARE DOING?

A:* No. I don't have any need to go anywhere.

Q:* YOU LET THEM COME TO YOU.

A:* They come here. Always the thirsty have to come to the well.

Q:* BUT YOU ONCE CALLED HOLLAND YOUR MOST ORANGE COUNTRY, SO I WONDER WHAT YOU ARE DOING IN OREGON?

A:* In Oregon I am doing something else. In Holland, even without me, the country is going to turn red; but in America my presence is needed.

Q:* BHAGWAN, YOU HAVE BEEN MAKING ATTACKS ON RONALD REAGAN SEVERAL TIMES. I NEVER HEARD YOU ABOUT THE RUSSIAN LEADERS.

A:* I simply don't know anything about the Russian leaders -- except that I am against communism.

Q:* BUT YOU DO KNOW ABOUT AFGHANISTAN AND THE RUSSIANS BEING THERE.

A:* Yes, I have heard about it. But I don't read any books, any newspapers. I have dropped all rubbish. For five years I am just without any contact with the outside world.

Q:* HOW DO YOU KNOW WHAT YOU KNOW THEN?

A:* Just my secretary.

Q:* SHE TELLS YOU?

A:* If she feels something has to be informed to me, she informs.

Q:* AND SHE DIDN'T INFORM YOU ABOUT THE RUSSIAN LEADERS DOING ALMOST THE SAME BUT THEM IN ANOTHER ANGLE AS THE WESTERN LEADERS?

A:* She has never informed me about the Russian leaders. One thing I know is that they are not hypocrites; they are openly dictatorial. They believe in the dictatorship of the proletariat so whatsoever they do, they do it without hiding themselves behind beautiful words. America talks about democracy, but that is only talk.

Q:* WHAT WILL HAPPEN WHEN YOU LEAVE THIS PLANET, BHAGWAN? WILL THERE BE ANOTHER BHAGWAN?

A:* I don't know, and neither do I care. When I was not here the world was not missing me.

Q:* BUT NOW THAT YOU ARE HERE, YOUR SANNYASINS WILL MISS YOU WHEN YOU ARE GONE.

A:* Only my sannyasins will miss me.

Q:* SO WILL THERE BE ANOTHER MASTER?

A:* No. Nobody can replace me; nobody can be my successor. I am making it absolutely clear that we are not to create another Christianity, another popedom, another Vatican. No. My sannyasins are related to me: Drink as much as you can from my well, and when my life disappears you are free to live the way you want. There is nobody going to dominate you, order you, discipline you. I am against all discipline, against all commandments. My whole emphasis is on the respect of the individual and his freedom. Even if he wants to go to hell, nobody

should interfere. So when I am gone, you see only from one side: when I die, you all have died to me.

Q:* WE HEARD THIS STORY OF THE REVEREND JIM JONES WHO ORDERED HIS FOLLOWERS TO COMMIT SUICIDE. YOU ONCE SAID THAT WHEN YOU WILL GO, MANY WILL FOLLOW. DO YOU MEAN THIS AS A MASS SUICIDE?

A:* I am not a Christian. I am not a Reverend Jim Jones.

Q:* YOU DON'T WANT YOUR DISCIPLES TO FOLLOW YOU WHEN YOU ARE DEAD?

A:* No, never. I want them to live and live abundantly. And when I am gone, I want them to celebrate my death because we celebrate everything: defeat or victory, life or death. Celebrate, dance, enjoy.

Q:* IS THERE A LIFE AFTER LIFE? AFTER DEATH? A LIFE AFTER DEATH?

A:* Yes, there is. But unless you experience it, my answer will be only a belief to you. I know it, but I don't want anybody to believe in my knowledge. I can help my people to come to the point from where they also can know. And that is one of my basic tenets: unless you know, don't believe: doubt to the very end till you come to know. And when you know, there is no need to believe. I don't believe in life after death -- I know.

Q:* DO YOU MIND WHEN THERE ARE PEOPLE THAT DO BELIEVE?

A:* I mind because their belief will prevent them from knowing. They have moved in a wrong direction.

Q:* YOU DON'T WANT TO TAKE AWAY HOPE FROM THE PEOPLE, DO YOU?

A:* I want to take away all hope from people. Every hope. Because hope is the opium that all the religions have been supplying to the people.

Q:* WHAT IS IT, THEN, THAT PEOPLE SHOULD HAVE WHEN THEY MAY NOT HAVE HOPE?

A:* This moment is enough. Hope is for those who are unable to live this moment, those who are suffering and are in misery. They need hope; they only think of tomorrow. My people live today. And tomorrow never comes, it always

comes as today. They know the secret of how to live today, so they will be knowing the secret anywhere, anytime.
Ethiopia needs hope. India needs hope. Poor countries need hope. Retarded people need hope. Miserable couples need hope that in heaven everything will be perfectly good: your wife will not be nagging you there. Your children will not become hippies there. They will not start taking drugs and dropping out of the university there. You need hope. I am giving to my people the reality; hope is only a fantasy. The sick man needs hope for health. But why should the healthy man need hope for health? He is already healthy.

Q:* IS THE MESSAGE YOU ARE BRINGING ONLY FOR SANNYASINS, ONLY FOR 500,000 OF YOUR DISCIPLES? OR DO YOU WANT TO BRING THIS MESSAGE TO MORE PEOPLE IN THE WORLD?

A:* I don't want anything. My people are there. I have not searched for them, they have come to me. Those who are in need, they should seek me. If they are not in need -- get lost -- it is none of my concern.

Q:* HOW DO YOU LIKE MY TIE? THIS WAS THE ONLY RED THING THAT I COULD FIND?

A:* That is the only color I hate. I never use red.

Q:* YOU MUST LOVE SHEELA.

A:* Sheela I love, but not the red color.

Q:* SHE IS RED AND ALL YOUR DISCIPLES ARE RED.

A:* That is why I have given red colors to them -- because that is the only color I will never use.

Q:* SO NONE OF YOUR CARS IS RED, EITHER?

A:* There are a few cars which are red, but I am sitting inside and I don't see them.

Q:* YOU ARE A VERY WISE MAN.

A:* Of course. The wisest who has walked on this earth.

Q:* IS THIS CLIMATE FINE FOR YOU, BHAGWAN? MUCH BETTER THAN IN INDIA?

A:* Much better in every way. The water is clean, pure. In India it is difficult to find water which is not polluted. Just the other day I was informed that in India half the crops are eaten by rats and other animals. And the people, fifty percent of India's people, are almost starving. Whatsoever they eat, half of it is eaten by bugs in their stomach. So almost three fourths of their production goes to the animals or to the bugs. All rivers are polluted. Here, we have the purest water possible, the cleanest air possible. And we have enough land, space, 126 square miles. It is three times larger than New York City.

Q:* ARE YOU CREATING A WONDER HERE IN THE DESERT, BHAGWAN?

A:* Certainly. An oasis I am creating. And we have already succeeded much. When we came four years ago, there was only one house -- that was all. Now we have houses for five thousand people, fully equipped with everything modern. All the houses are centrally air-conditioned. The air is dry; that is what has helped me most. Because I suffer from asthma, humidity is a trouble for me. And I suffer from all kinds of allergies which are not curable. No allergy is curable; you have just to protect yourself against it. So here we have managed everything. My people have done everything so that for four years I had not suffered from any allergy. My back was bad in India, and in India they could not manage to do anything. Experts from England were called, the best expert. He also could not figure it out. But strangely -- I have used all kinds of cars available in the whole world -- just one car Silver Spur by Rolls Royce, fits to my back.

Q:* IS THIS A COMMERCIAL, BHAGWAN?

A:* I am absolutely a business man.

Q:* BUT YOU HAVE ALREADY NINETY. WHY WOULD YOU HAVE MORE?

A:* Three hundred sixty-five soon.

Q:* EVERY DAY ANOTHER ONE?

A:* Yes.

Q:* AND YOU DON'T WANT TO GIVE THEM AWAY TO THE POOR PEOPLE, I UNDERSTOOD.

A:* No. Never.
Q:* I KNOW, BUT CAN YOU GIVE THE POOR PEOPLE THEN MAYBE A BIT OF UNDERSTANDING, A BIT OF LOVE?

A:* I have given them for thirty years and in return they have given me poison, they have thrown knives at me. I am finished with all that nonsense. These Rolls Royces will go to my sannyasins, not to anybody else.

Q:* WHAT YOU ARE ADVOCATING IS LOVE. WHY DON'T YOU GIVE LOVE TO PEOPLE THAT NEED IT?

A:* My people are enough. I have one million sannyasins. What do you want of me? I am loving one million people. Do you want to kill me?

Q:* YOU WOULDN'T MIND....

A:* Is it not enough? One million people? I am loving and loving as much as nobody else can love.

Q:* ARE YOU A BETTER SHOWMAN THAN RONALD REAGAN IS?

A:* I am certainly better in everything. I believe in the best. And if I start loving all those people, then what Ayatollah Khomeini is going to do? Then Pope the Pollack will be out of employment. And what Mother Teresa the Terrible is going to do? I take care of these people also. I leave business for them also. I don't want them to die without business. I have my business going fast like a wildfire; their businesses are shrinking, so I leave the whole world to them: serve the poor because your religion teaches that through service to the poor you will reach to paradise. I don't believe in any paradise. I say: Live richly herenow. This is paradise.

Q:* YOU ARE THE GURU OF THE RICH, YOU SAY, AND THAT MEANS THAT YOU WILL NEVER HAVE VERY MANY DISCIPLES OR FOLLOWERS, BECAUSE THE MAJORITY OF THE WORLD IS POOR.

A:* I don't want them. I have more than enough.

Q:* YOU DON'T WANT TO CONVERT ME, FOR EXAMPLE?

A:* No.

Q:* WHY NOT?

A:* I don't believe in conversion. To me conversion is interfering in somebody's freedom. You can become a sannyasin; I will not convert you. You will have to

ask. You will have to beg on your knees to be accepted. And then too perhaps I may not accept.

Q:* MAYBE I WON'T, BHAGWAN, HEARING ABOUT YOUR IDEAS. DO YOU RESPECT THAT?

A:* That's great. I respect everybody and I respect everybody's decision, individuality. Even if he is wrong, it is his right to be wrong. But I will never try to convert anybody. In my whole life I have never tried to convert anybody. The people who have come to me have come on their own; if they stay with me, they stay on their own. If they want to go, they receive a good farewell. They can go. It is all freedom: no conversion, no enforcement, no conditioning. So I will not convert you, but if you want to become a sannyasin....

Q:* YOU WON'T LIKE MY COLOR IN RED...

A:* I will put you all in red.

Q:* YOU WERE TALKING YESTERDAY ABOUT HOW SOMEBODY CAN LOVE JESUS CHRIST. I THINK HUNDREDS OF MILLIONS OF CATHOLICS CAN. AND WHAT IS WRONG WITH THAT?

A:* How many contemporaries of Jesus loved him?

Q:* TWELVE, AT LEAST.

A:* Twelve. And how many were present when he was crucified? One, at least, and the eleven had escaped -- and these are great apostles of Jesus. And the one who has remained has refused that he knows Jesus.
You take few grapes.

Q:* I DON'T KNOW WHERE TO BE WITH THE LITTLE THINGS.

A:* You just take a few grapes.

Q:* INSTEAD OF SMOKING, BHAGWAN.

A:* Yes, they are very helpful.

Q:* I MUST BE A LITTLE BIT IN LOVE WITH YOU, BECAUSE I DIDN'T SMOKE ALL DAY. I DIDN'T DRINK. I HAD ALL MY CLOTHES DRY-CLEANED. AND I HAVE COLD FEET. JUST TO SEE YOU AND TO HEAR YOU SAYING WHAT YOU WANT TO SAY.

A:* I know you must be in love with me. And you can see in my eyes and see my love for you. That's why I am saying take a few grapes.

Q:* SO YOU DON'T WANT TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD, BHAGWAN?

A:* No. I am going to take over the whole universe.

Q:* YOU THINK THAT THERE IS LIFE ON OTHER PLANETS?

A:* At least fifty thousand planets have life.

Q:* AND DOES THAT COME ONCE TOGETHER? ARE WE VISITING THEM? ARE THEY VISITING US?

A:* Yes. Life moves from one planet to another planet -- not bodies, but spirits.

Q:* DO YOU BELIEVE IN UFO'S? UNIDENTIFIED FLYING OBJECTS, YOU KNOW.

A:* No. That's all nonsense.

Q:* PEOPLE FROM OTHER PLANETS VISITING US?

A:* No.

Q:* INVADING MAYBE? IT COULD BE A TEACHER OF THEIRS, A MASTER OF THE PLANETS.

A:* Nobody is interested in invading this madhouse.

Q:* WHAT IS YOUR SEX APPEAL, BHAGWAN? YOU HAVE SO MANY GORGEOUS WOMEN AROUND YOU AND IN YOUR NEIGHBORHOOD.

A:* I love women, and women love me.

Q:* ARE YOU A CELIBATE?

A:* No. Why should I be? This is a strange question. Nobody asks: Do you breath? Do you eat?

Q:* HOW DO YOU SPEND YOUR DAY SINCE YOU DON'T READ?

A:* With so many gorgeous women, you are asking me: How do you spend your day? Read the book Arabian Nights and you will be reading my autobiography.

Q:* WHY DO YOU SPEAK UP NOW AFTER YOU HAVE BEEN SILENT FOR THREE AND A HALF YEARS? IS THIS BECAUSE THE FRUIT ON THE TREE IS RIPE?

A:* Yes, that is one of the reasons. But even deeper than that, I had gone into silence to let a few people drop out from sannyas. These were the people who were enchanted with my words, my philosophy, my approach towards the fundamental problems of life. I have been insisting that what I say is not important: the important cannot be said; the truth is inexpressible. You can know it in silence, but you cannot put it into words. So I wanted to get rid of those people who cannot understand my silence. The only way was to be silent. In three years I sorted out all the wrong kinds of people. In three years those who remained as happy with me as before -- these were my people. After sorting out the wrong kind, now is the time for me to say what I really wanted to say. The right opportunity was not there; now I have enough people who are ready to listen to me without any prejudice. And I have not to fulfill any of their expectations -- they don't have any expectations about me. So just to sort out the wrong people was one of the most fundamental reasons. Secondly, it is true -- in these three years of silence, the people who were living with me have come to a state of maturity, centering, grounding -- the fruit is ripe. The flowers have blossomed and now I would like to spread the fragrance unaddressed. Whoever wants it can have it; the fruits are here, just be the side on the table.

Q:* IT IS THERE, RIGHT, BUT NOT FOR A NEW GENERATION, BHAGWAN, BECAUSE YOU ADVOCATE COMPLETE BIRTH CONTROL.

A:* I don't care. Nobody cared about me. All of you are just accidental products. Who cared for you? Do you think your father and mother were thinking about you?

Q:* YES.

A:* NO. You are just accidental.

Q:* THEY WANTED ME.

A:* No. Because they never knew who you are. They may have wanted a child, but not you.

Q:* I HAVE THEIR CHARACTER, A COMBINATION OF THE TWO.

A:* There were millions of possibilities -- not only you. When your father was making love to your mother, he released millions of germs and one of them -- that is you -- reached to your mother's cell. All your millions of brothers could not reach and died. And their life is only two hours. If they don't reach the mother's egg within two hours, they will die. And the problem is that only one can reach, and the moment one reaches, the egg closes. It is rare that two male cells reach together so there are twins. Once a cell has reached, all others have to die. In every love affair millions of beings are being killed. And nobody knows who is going to win the race. I don't think your mother or father knew anything about who was going to win the race. It was fortunate that you won it, but nobody cares.

Q:* THANK YOU.

A:* Come back again and again. I will be waiting here.

Q:* THANK YOU VERY MUCH. I HOPE YOU ARE NOT ANGRY WITH ME THAT THIS INTERVIEW MIGHT NOT BE THE KIND YOU ARE ACCUSTOMED TO.

A:* No. I am never angry about anything. I am always ready to adjust to anything, any situation. There is no problem in it.

Q:* BHAGWAN, IF YOU WOULD BE SO KIND TO TALK VIA ME TO YOUR DISCIPLES, THEN THE CAMERAMAN CAN MAKE SOME CUTAWAYS IN THE MEANTIME.

A:* Okay. I would like to say to you that you are a potential sannyasin -- be careful.

Q:* YOU HAVE SO MUCH LOVE FOR ME?

A:* I can see it. I can feel it. I will be following you and I will coming in your dreams. I am a little bit dangerous.

Q:* I AM NOT GOING TO WORK SEVEN DAYS A WEEK, BHAGWAN.

A:* No, that I can manage. If you want to come here and you want not to work seven days, you can work six days.

Q:* THEN FIRST YOU MUST HAVE A GOLF COURSE HERE, BECAUSE I LOVE PLAYING GOLF.

A:* We are going to have it. Whatsoever you love, we will manage to have it. Just come.

Q:* I CAN BE YOUR GREEN KEEPER.

A:* Perhaps our golf course is waiting for you to come here. I want my sannyasins to have everything that the world can provide.

Q:* THAT IS BEAUTIFUL.

A:* And they are having everything they need. Nobody has asked about a golf course yet.

Q:* BUT THEY ALSO ARE THINKING OF PLAYING TENNIS, BHAGWAN.

A:* Yes. They have tennis grounds ready. They have grounds ready for football. And soon we will be having a golf course. We can have the best golf course in the world.

Q:* I SAW THAT YOUR GRASS IS GREENER THAN ANYWHERE ELSE.

A:* It is going to be. It is my grass -- real authentic grass -- which every government is afraid. Okay? Good.

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #25
Chapter title: None
11 August 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This is a typed tape transcript and has not been edited or published, as of August 1992. It is for reference use only. The interviewer's remarks have been omitted where not relevant to Osho's words]
INTERVIEWS WITH HELMUT WERB, PHOTOJOURNALIST WITH: ROCK STAR, ITALY; MUSIC EXPRESS, GERMANY, HOLLAND; O'KEG, SWEDEN; MUSIC MAN, AUSTRIA; FI, ENGLAND; CONCRETE, MEXICO

Q: I'M WORKING FOR TWELVE DIFFERENT MAGAZINES IN EUROPE AND AUSTRALIA. I ASKED EVERY SINGLE MAGAZINE TO SUBMIT ONE QUESTION, WHICH I THEN RELAY TO YOU. SO SOME OF THE QUESTIONS WILL BE DIRECTLY FROM THE MAGAZINES; ROUGHLY ONE-THIRD ARE MY OWN QUESTIONS. SOME OF THE QUESTIONS ARE VERY SIMPLE, SOME OF THEM WILL BE CONTROVERSIAL...

A: I will make the simple ones also controversial.

Q: SEVERAL NEWSPAPERS IN NEW YORK, UNITED STATES, REPORTED THAT THE NUMBER OF RAJNEESHEES WORLDWIDE ARE DECLINING, AND THAT YOU'RE SLOWLY RUNNING OUT OF RESOURCES. NOW AFTER SEVERAL YEARS OF SILENCE YOU HAVE STARTED TALKING AGAIN, YOU STARTED GIVING INTERVIEWS, YOU STARTED TO TALK WITH THE DISCIPLES. IS THIS PART OF A MEMBERSHIP DRIVE, OR IS IT JUST YOUR WISH TO COMMUNICATE?

A: In the first place, sannyasins are increasing all over the world, so there is no question of their decrease. Secondly, I don't believe in converting anybody. I believe that the very effort to convert somebody is trespassing his freedom, his being.
I can say what I want to say, but there is no effort to convert anybody to sannyas. In my whole life, I have never converted a single person to sannyas. Although there are one million sannyasins around the world, they have all come to me on their own accord. And I am against all kinds of missionary work, conversion, making people Christians, or Hindus or Mohammedans. Every individual has the right to be himself.
I can say to the person -- not as an authority, that I am the only begotten son of God, so you have to believe me, and until you believe me, you are lost. If you

believe in me, you are saved. These strategies are simply cunning, political, playing on man's fear and greed. Exploiting man, taking advantage of his innocence, ignorance.
I am against the whole company of messiahs, prophets, founders of religions. A single man has declared war against all the religions of the world. I am fighting with every argument that they have proposed for thirty-five years continuously, and they have not been able to support any of their dogma, and they have not been able to answer any of my questions.
So the people who have come to me have come out of their own freedom, intelligence. They could understand me, what I am saying, and they could see the fallacy that I was showing them. But unless somebody comes to me, asks for sannyas, I am in no way going to interfere into his fundamental right of being himself. Right or wrong -- that does not matter -- who am I to decide what is right for him, what is wrong for him?
I can say how I have found my bliss, my joy. That's all. If your heart starts feeling with me, if your heart starts beating with me, and a desire for adventure arises in you for new spaces, new ecstasies, I am available. Not as a leader, but only as a friend.
This is for the first time that one million people have gathered around a man who claims no miracles, who claims no authority, who claims no speciality -- who only claims that he is a friend. And if you enjoy my friendship, you are welcome. The moment you feel that our paths now separate, I give you my heartfelt blessings, the same way as I had given to you when you had come to me.
Nobody is prevented from going. Nobody is pushed, manipulated to come in. I have started speaking for my own reasons. I do everything according to my own reasons. I never bother about the world around me, and I don't care at all. For three years I was silent because I wanted few people who were wrongly hanging around me because they were intellectually convinced -- and that is not really to be with me -- I wanted to get rid of those people. But I am not rude to anybody. I have never said to anybody come in, I have never said to anybody to go out. But I have my own devices.
Three and a half years of silence was enough for them, they could not stand it. They were interested in words, they were interested in my theories, they were interested in my arguments -- their approach was intellectual. They dropped out.
The moment I saw that the wrong people had dropped, I have started speaking again. Now I am speaking to those people who do not expect me even to speak. In three and a half year silence they were with me with the same joy. If I was going to remain silent forever, they were going to be with me with the same joy. Now it is a question deeper than intellect. It is more close to a love affair. You don't think about it -- suddenly you know you are in love, suddenly your whole being starts feeling a dance, suddenly you start whistling, you want to sing.

If something like this happens to anybody around me, then only he is with me, my fellow traveler. So I have sorted out the people politely, given them the opportunity to leave on their own accord so I need not have to tell them to go away because they are with me for wrong reasons.
Logic is a game. If two persons discuss something and one person wins the discussion, that does not mean that what he is saying is truth. All that it means is that he has more logical argumentative calibre than the other one. The other one may be the truth. The defeated one may have the truth, but is not articulate enough. So truth cannot be decided by logic, argumentation. Its decision is something deeper -- it is of the heart in the beginning, and in the end it is of the being itself.
So now I am speaking to my own people, and now I can open my whole heart to them without even bothering to argue what I am saying. Without giving any evidence, any proofs. They know me, that until it is something that is going to help them, I am not going to say it. It is not a question of right and wrong. It is a question of helping them on the path.
So now I have my people around the world. They are increasing every day, because I am the only alternative in the whole world against all the religions and against all the politicians. Against all nations and against all races -- I am the only alternative. I stand for the simple human being -- I don't want him to be German, I don't want him to be African, I don't want him to be American or Russian, I don't want him to be Catholic, Protestant, Hindu, Buddhist, Mohammedan. All these are meaningless.
History is full of all this nonsense, and because of this, man has stopped growing thousands of years before. I want man to be completely clean of the past, so he can become available totally to the present and to the future.
The numbers of sannyasins will be increasing every day faster and faster. For two reasons: The politicians are creating the situations -- I am not converting anybody. The politicians are creating the situation in which, if they succeed, this whole beautiful life on the earth will be destroyed. And the politicians can disappear only if nations disappear. War can disappear only if nations disappear. My people belong to no nation. They claim the right of the whole earth.
The religious leaders, on the other hand, have led people to a very dangerous disease: AIDS. Politicians have come to the nuclear weapons, that is their logical end: and religious leaders have come to AIDS.
AIDS is a by-product of monasteries, nunneries and the preachers who have been telling people to remain celibate. If you put people, man in one place confined, women in another place confined, you are preparing the ground for homosexuality. Nobody can be celibate, it is against nature. It is against your physiology, against your biology, against your chemistry. So just taking a vow of celibacy is not going to change the whole program of your biochemistry. Then your biology will find some roundabout way -- that's what perversion is.

And that homosexuality has ultimately culminated into this disease AIDS which is going to take over the whole world like wildfire. Only my communes will be the refuge, because only my communes, I am trying to destroy all kinds of perversions and bringing people back to nature, to their natural being, respecting their bodies, loving their bodies. And trying to understand that sex is natural only with the opposite pole.
A man and woman can only create authentic orgasm. All other ways of orgasm are just phoney, and in the name of orgasm, nothing is achieved, cannot be achieved.
Against nuclear weapons, I am the alternative because I am creating meditative people, silent people, peaceful people who do not want to destroy this earth. And against AIDS I am creating communes all over the world like oases where people will be back into the garden of Eden from where that idiot God pushed them out.

Q: IN ONE OF THE INTERVIEWS, YOU MENTIONED THAT YOU WANT TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD. I THINK IT WAS A TV STATION HERE IN THE UNITED STATES.

A: I am taking over it. I am already on the way, but my ways of taking over the world are not that (those) of Adolf Hitler or Alexander the Great. Those idiots have failed so badly that no intelligent person can try to take over the world in their way. I have my own way.
My way is to create more and more loving, peaceful, silent people around the world. That's my; empire, but in my empire, everybody is an emperor. Nobody is a slave.
I am taking over the world. There is no other way for humanity to survive. Soon the people who are hostile to me will be begging that they should be allowed in the commune, because in the outside society if it is found they have AIDS, they are going to be condemned the way lepers were condemned in the past. Lepers were not allowed to live in the cities, they had to live outside. They could not move in the daylight, they had to move in the night. They could not take water from the well of the town -- they had a separate well outside the city. And leprosy is not such a dangerous thing.
There has never been anything more dangerous than AIDS. So anybody who has a little intelligence, then the politicians and the religious leaders are pushing him to become a sannyasin. I don't need to go for conversion. They are pushing people toward me.

Q: THAT WILL BE IN THE END THE ONLY WAY TO SURVIVE?

A: This is the only way -- not in the end -- right now, in the beginning, because in the end.... It is all finished.

Q: YOU IDENTIFY YOURSELF, HOWEVER, AS A RELIGIOUS LEADER....

A: No.

Q: WHAT ARE YOU, THEN?

A: Just a simple human being, just like you -- with a little difference that your eyes are closed and my eyes are open. But you can open your eyes any moment and the difference disappears. Or, I may close my eyes.... Just that much difference, nothing much.
First I will try to open your eyes but if I feel that everybody wants to sleep, then why I should bother? I should go to sleep myself! I don't take anything seriously.
Leaders are serious people, taking the responsibility of the flock. And that's why I call them names, because I cannot find worse condemnations for these people. Jesus I call crackpot, a mental case, a man with a wish to die. And his whole life is a life of a schizophrenic. The behavior is enough proof -- he curses a fig tree -- can you thing of why a man sane should curse a fig tree because there are no figs on it? And it was not the season for figs! The poor fig tree, what can she do? But he was angry because he had come from a village where people had refused to give food to him and to his twelve fools that he used to call apostles. And they were all hungry and tired, and then they came to the fig tree and there were no fruits.
And this man talks about: Love your enemy. Even love your neighbor, which is even more difficult than loving your enemy. I can love the enemy very easily because there is so much distance between the enemy and me, but to love the neighbor is just like loving your wife. .
This man is talking about love, this man is talking about compassion, kindness and he is not compassionate to the poor fig tree. And anybody cursing a tree, what do you think about him? If I call him a crackpot, nothing is wrong in it. he was absolutely insane.
He interfered with people's ways of life. For example, in the temple of Jerusalem where money changers have been doing that kind of business for centuries, since the time of Moses when the temple was built. And in fact those money changers were of tremendous help to the land and to the people, because with all the donations that came to the temple, those money changers were giving loans to poor people on a very nominal interest. And Jesus goes and throws their tables and pushes them with a whip out of the temple, and he says that this is my father's house and I will not allow anybody to pollute it with money.
Now this man has no proof that he is the son of God. There are many mad people around the world who think they are son of God, they are prophet, they are messiahs, and they are all in mental asylums. They also don't have any proof. What proof Jesus has? Any certificate from God, any, message stamped by God,

signed by God? What proof he has got -- just a poor carpenter's son. That too is not certain whether his father was his father.

Q: BUT YOU ARE BHAGWAN, YOU ARE THE ENLIGHTENED ONE. ARE YOU PERFECT?

A: No. The Enlightened One simply means one who has come to know himself. That's all.
The prophet dominates. He predicts. He gives you doctrines, theologies. You have to believe in him -- he himself cannot prove anything about hell or heaven or God, all are fictions -- but if all are fictions, his being a prophet flops because then without those fictions, how he can be the prophet? If there is no God, then how Jesus can claim that I am the only begotten son of God?
So these prophets are trying to keep all the fictions, all the lies, because amongst those lies they can declare themselves to be a prophet. And the people who can believe in a God no one has ever seen, the people who can believe in hell and heaven no one has come back to give us a little detail about these places, are gullible. Any cunning person, a little articulate can declare himself a prophet and these people will believe him because believing is all that they know. And if he is the type of Jesus, so angry that he throws single-handedly all the money changers out of the temple and declares that it is my father's house and I am going to clean it of all impurities, naturally the gullible will see and believe in him.
I am not a prophet because I don't have any consolation for anybody, and I don't have any hope for anybody. I don't sell opium to people, and that is the basic function of a prophet -- he is a dope dealer.
The messiahs are trying to save the whole humanity. They have not been able to save themselves. Now Jesus must have been a fanatic idiot. Even on the cross he still believes that he is going to be saved by God, but when he sees that time is passing, blood is oozing, he is thirsty, he shouts at the sky.
The sky is empty, no answer comes. Never any answer has come from the sky. Millions of people have been praying -- no prayer has been answered. Jesus shouts, almost angry, frustrated, that: Have you forsaken me? He is talking to God. He was still believing that God will come sitting on a white cloud with angels playing on their harps singing alleluja. Nobody came, nothing happened. People simply laughed at the stupidity of the man -- even on the cross, he has not come back to sanity.
And upon his crucifixion the whole Christianity is based. That's why cross has become its symbol: I call it "crossianity." I don't call it Christianity, it has nothing to do with Christ. Its whole thing is the cross, and the cross is a symbol of death.
So I don't say that Reverend Jim Jones did anything which goes against Jesus. he simply followed him to the very logical end. Jesus was saying to people: soon I will go and prepare ground for you and soon you will all be coming, and you

will be with me and with God the Father in paradise. Reverend Jones, of course, was an American and believed in speed and he knew that 2,000 years have passed and the "soon" is not finished yet. It seems a different time scale exists in paradise, so he did not want to take any chance -- he took all his followers with him. Why bother coming back and then take them.
Reverend Jones is just part of the whole Christian attitude, but strange it is that Christians started condemning that man.

Q: A LOT OF EX-SANNYASINS LEFT YOU DISAPPOINTED -- MAYBE IN THAT PROCESS WHEN YOU DECIDED NOT TO TALK ANY MORE -- AND SOME FELT AND VOICED THEIR CONCERN PUBLICLY THAT YOU EXPLOIT YOUR FOLLOWERS TO SUSTAIN AN EXTRAVAGANT LIFESTYLE. YOUR FORMER ITALIAN COOK, DEEKSHA, CALLED YOU A LIAR IN THE OREGONIAN; YOUR FORMER BODY GUARD SHIVAMURTI SAID YOU ARE DISHONEST -- I THINK IT WAS IN THE OREGONIAN, AS WELL. HOW DO YOU FEEL ABOUT THESE PEOPLE PERSONALLY? WHAT WOULD YOU SAY TO THEM?

A: I love them still, the same as I have always loved them; and what they are saying is not wrong. I have never said that I never lie. If a lie is helpful, I am the first person to lie immediately.
Truth is not a value to me. Helping those people who have come to me in every possible way -- and they are all asleep, they cannot understand the language of the one who is awake.
So every enlightened person has lied and, of course, they did not have the guts to say so. I don't have any problem in accepting the truth that I lie. The whole question is: What helps to wake you up? For example, if you are not waking up, I can lie and shout in your ears that your house is on fire. It is not on fire, but what to do? Hearing that your house is on fire you jump out of the bed and you wake up, and then I can say I am sorry that I had to lie, but there was no other way to wake you up.

Q: HOW FAR WOULD YOU GO TO WAKE SOMEBODY UP?

A: To the very end. I don't believe in half-hearted things. Anything I can do will be total, so if Deeksha says that I lie, she is perfectly right. There is nothing wrong in it. She is not condemning me.

Q: WELL, SHE TOLD THE OREGONIAN REPORTERS THAT SHE HAS TO HIDE FROM YOUR FOLLOWERS NOW.

A: That is up to her, and you have to ask her what she said, and why she said. How can I answer for her? I can answer for myself. About anything she has said

about me, I am ready to answer; but about anything else that she says, she is answerable, I am not.
If Shiva says that I am dishonest, he is right. To me everything can be used as a device to wake people who are fast asleep, unconscious. To me it is just a game. If honesty helps, good; if it does not help, dishonesty will do.
And I love those people who have left. The reason must be in themselves. If they say they left disappointed, that means they have some appointment with me? Certainly, unconsciously they must be hoping that some expectations will be fulfilled by me, and I don't fulfill anybody's expectations.
Those who can remain with me without any expectations, only they are capable to understand me and capable to understand the work that I am doing. These people, if they feel disappointed (it) simply means they had come with a certain idea, hope, desire -- and I fulfill nobody's desire. I teach desirelessness. I don't fulfill anybody's hope.
You must have seen the Christians have put a board outside my commune that those who enter here, drop all your hopes forever. That's perfectly true. They are doing my work.

Q: DO THEY KNOW THAT?

A: They don't know -- this is the difficulty. That's why I call these people idiots!
So anybody who leaves me, leaves on his own responsibility. Anybody who joins with me joins on his own responsibility. So if you see these people, tell them that since I don't take anybody's responsibility and I don't promise you any hope, then the whole frustration is your own making. I am not a party to it.
I have never claimed that I am an honest person. I have never claimed that I always speak the truth. Even under oath, you cannot manipulate me to say anything that I don't want to say. I will say only the thing that I want to say.
So all these allegations they think are allegations -- I don't think so. By saying such things against me they are simply showing that for its ten years or eleven years they were with me, they could not understand a single word of mine. They are simply saying that they are retarded, their minds are not more than thirteen years of age. Their physical age may be anywhere, but their minds are stuck at the thirteen. If they don't believe me they should go to a psychoanalist and let themselves be examined that how much is their mental age.
With me only people who have tremendous intelligence can stay. I am not Jesus. With Jesus all those twelve uneducated, illiterate fishermen, farmers, woodcutters, carpenters -- those were his disciples, not a single learned rabbi was convinced. That is very strange because he was a Jew. he was fulfilling, long awaited prophecies of the Jews for a messiah. In fact, they should have rejoiced that our days of waiting are over and he has come.
But not a single educated person was converted by Jesus. He could manage only with fishermen and woodcutter, uneducated, illiterate people. It was a kind of

bribery and exploitation because he promised them: If you believe in me I am going to take you to paradise. Naturally those fishermen, woodcutters have never thought that they would ever be able to make -- rabbis, great scholars, saints, prophets, they will enter into paradise -- and this guy is saying that if we just believe in him, we will be the first to enter. So what is the problem, we are not losing anything. he says simply believe in me, so we will believe.
But no intelligent person can do that. In my people you will find just the opposite. My commune must be the only place in the whole world with so much education -- almost everybody is a graduate from some university. Most of them have masters degrees, few have PhD degrees, few are D.Litts. They come from all professions -- they are not fishermen and farmers.
They people who have left me -- for example, Deeksha; she is illiterate, she would have fitted with Jesus perfectly well, but not with me. She could not understand me. She was a good cook, but being a good cook you don't become enlightened. Shiva -- what intelligence he has got? If it took him ten years sitting by my side -- he was always sitting by my side -- if it took him ten years to discover that I am a dishonest man... then do you think I have to answer anything?

Q: LET ME GO INTO THE NEXT QUESTION, IF I MAY.

A: Go anywhere!

Q: THE IMMIGRATION SERVICE OF THE UNITED STATES TRIES DESPERATELY TO DEPORT YOU. WHAT WOULD HAPPEN TO YOU AND WHAT WOULD HAPPEN TO RAJNEESHPURAM IF YOU WOULD HAVE TO GO?

A: No, I never think of tomorrow. I am here right now, and we are enjoying! And for four years they have been trying desperately top deport me. If in four years they could not find a single reason to deport me, I don't think in forty years they are going to find it.
Four years is (are) enough against a single individual; and a whole department is continuously working. Their people are going around the world to find something so I can be deported. They will find that this is the most difficult case that has come to them.
I am going to fight up to the Supreme Court.

Q: BUT YOU HAVE SAID DURING THE PRESS CONFERENCE SEVERAL WEEKS AGO THAT YOU WOULD GO TO AUSTRALIA.

A: That was just to visit. And if I love it there, then the same problem will be in Australia. Wherever I am the problem is going to be the same, so I don't care

about it whether the INS in America is trying to deport me, or INS in Australia trying to deport me. What difference does it make to me?

Q: BUT IT WOULD MAKE DIFFERENCE TO RAJNEESHPURAM, WOULDN'T IT?

A: Nobody can destroy Rajneeshpuram. If they succeed -- in the first place they cannot succeed, because I have applied on five grounds. They have only six ground. I can do the sixth, too. They have six grounds for application. For five grounds I am capable. They cannot deny on any grounds. Sixth is marriage -- I can do that, too. With as many women as they want!
So it is just out of (the) question. They cannot deport me, they simply will get crazy and cracks and retired, and I am going to be here.
And if -- just for the argument's sake -- if I decide to go, they cannot deport me, but if I decide to go, they cannot stop me, either. Let them know it. They are absolutely impotent either way. If I decide to go, they cannot prevent me. And If I go, that does not mean that the commune will be in any way harmed or wounded.
I have prepared my people that without me they can exist as beautifully as they are existing with me. Because I have not taken any responsibility. You should see the point: I have not taken any responsibility. I am not responsible for anything in the commune. I am just a guest. I am not even a member of the commune, I am not a sannyasin. I don't have any responsibility that they will miss me.
I don't do anything; in fact, they have to do everything for me. If I am gone, they should really rejoice, and my being here is a constant trouble for them. Once I am gone from here, nobody is going to bother them.
And I have my communes all around the world -- without me they are running exactly the same way, so there is no problem at all. INS or American government, or any government cannot create any problem for me. I can create thousand and one problems for them.
The moment I decide to create problems, they will be at a loss to find how to tackle with me. Up to now, I have not created any problem.

Q: WHAT PROBLEMS WOULD YOU CREATE, FOR EXAMPLE?

A: I can create any problem. For example, I can go to the Supreme Court that the whole American government is functioning against (the) American constitution. And I stand for (the) American constitution, and the whole American government is against it. And I have grounds to fight how they are exploiting and deceiving people.
The state government of Oregon is doing the same. They accepted this city, incorporated it, everything was done according to the constitution. For two years the city was legal. We were getting the support of the state, the federal

government support to the city -- and after two years, suddenly the city became illegal.
Then who is responsible? All those people who make this city legal should be immediately arrested and imprisoned. The governor is part in it. The attorney general is part in it. What these idiots were doing for two years? They were giving state support, money, everything to the city. What the federal government was doing? They were giving money to the city.
And idiots can go in such a berserk way about everything, that I don't think they have given much. (To Sheela, off mike:) How many dollars from the federal government have we received?

SHEELA: ABOUT $32,000 LAST YEAR FROM FEDERAL GOVERNMENT, I THINK IT'S ABOUT THAT MUCH.

Bhagwan: That is nothing. I cannot even purchase one-third of a Rolls Royce.
And these idiots are now asking the money back! In the first place they did wrong. They gave that money to a city which was not legal. They are responsible for it. In the second place, they have guts to ask the money back. From whom? The city does not exist. You gave money to a non-existent city, so go and ask the holy ghost if he knows anything about it!

Q: THE PRINCE OF HANOVER WAS ONE OF YOUR FAVORITE SANNYASINS. HE WAS VERY ILL, AND THERE IS A RUMOR THAT YOU ASKED TO CUT THE OXYGEN TO SHORTEN HIS SUFFERING. HOW DO YOU FEEL ABOUT HELPING PEOPLE TO DIE IN INDIVIDUAL CASES?

A: That rumor is absolutely wrong. Do you think if the rumor had any evidence then the royal family of Germany would have remained silent? And the father of the Prince, the mother of the Prince were present at the funeral in India. The brother of the Prince was there, the wife of the Prince was there, the daughter of the Prince was there.
If the rumor has any validity, then the Prince of Hanover, his sannyas name was Vimalkirti. He was related to almost all the royalties of Europe. Prince of Wales is his cousin-brother. His mother is Princess of Greece. First she had married the Prince of Denmark, and then she divorced him and married Vimalkirti's father. His mother's sister is a queen -- perhaps in Spain or somewhere.
All these royalties against a poor man like me? Could not do anything if the rumor had any evidence in it? Just their being silent is enough proof that all this is nonsense. So as far as Vimalkirti's death is concerned, the rumor is simply a rumor.
So please don't get confused about my idea, my approach about the death of an individual. My way of life accepts that every individual has the birthright to et

out of life if he wants. Death is not something that should be in the control of government, law. It is an individual freedom.

If I don't want to live in this body anymore, nobody can prevent me. And in fact, even though all the governments and all the legal systems are against it, suicide goes on happening every day. And it is such a amusing phenomenon, that if a person is caught redhanded committing suicide, then he is sentenced to death. Because he was trying to commit suicide! What kind if lawmakers we have? He was trying to commit suicide, now you are making arrangements for his death. He should have come in the first place to you -- that I am going to commit suicide, please kill me. Why I should unnecessarily take the risk of falling from a tree, getting broken legs, hanging myself from the ceiling, feeling suffocated, but not dying, jumping into a river -- but because I know swimming, getting out of it? Why should I, or anybody should take all these difficulties.

So as far as philosophical opinion is concerned, I am for individual's total freedom -- death included. And it is the duty of the community to provide him beautiful facilities for death. Why one should wait for old age and the troubles of old age, the degradation of old age, the rejection of the young people, the old person feeling constantly an unnecessary thing in the house, a burden to everybody? He is not capable to do anything for them, and they have to do everything for them. All his companions are dead, his friends are dead. He goes to the same park where he used to go and sit with his friends -- now he sits alone on the bench, nobody comes near him. Mostly he is sick in the bed. And if that person wants then it is simply ludicrous just to wait for death to come.

And this death is going to be terrible, because he will be old, sick and he will die by and by, inch by inch, and we have now every scientific way to send him joyously into deep sleep forever.

If you and your society cannot give a man a beautiful life, at least you can arrange for him a beautiful death. And if he wants, it is his birthright. And anyway, anyone who wants to go out of life will find the way, so why unnecessarily create a legal system against? He will find a way. The people who fail in committing suicide are really people who are hesitant -- 50/50. In fact, they have a split mind. One part says it is good to get out of life, another part shrinks back and feels afraid. This inner conflict is the cause of their failure. Otherwise, I don't see that there is any way to prevent me from dying. There are so many million possibilities all around.

So you cannot prevent, and you think the penalty has to be an electric chair? Why you could not provide that beautiful electric chair before? The man would have said goodbye to his friends, enjoyed the best meal that he always wanted to, but because of sickness and old age and diabetes, he was not allowed. He can have beautiful ice cream, now there is no problem. He is going to the electric chair, he can have champagne. One day of absolute freedom because there is no tomorrow anymore. So he need not worry about his blood sugar going high, his blood pressure going high, or he is getting drunk and doing something stupid.

Who cares now? At least one day give him total freedom and let him die. Help.... Your medical hospitals, all the hospitals in the world should have a beautiful place for those who want to die.
He can be taught even on the last day how to be silent, how to relax, so when you are given the injection which will take you deep and deep into sleep, you don't fight it. Otherwise, you will be in suffering. This can be simply explained. He can practice beforehand, do a little rehearsal. And I am ready to provide to every hospital one of my sannyasins to teach meditation. And his room for death should be a temple, beautiful, with flowers and with everything. He should go from this earth like a king. Just resting, relaxing and going forever into deep sleep.
When we can manage it, I don't think we should prevent it. And, anyway, it is going to help world population problem immensely because 1,000 people are dying every day in Ethiopia.
Out of hunger when one dies, it is real torture. Out of thirst one dies, it is a torture of days together. Why not they should be given injections which is simple, so they can relax and die and be reborn in America? Because they all want, all over the world, the poor people think America is the paradise on the earth. So if they died with the idea of being born in America, great; let them die with the idea, and let them be born there.
I am perfectly in favor of freedom, and death is only one part of my whole idea of freedom.

Q: HOW DO YOU SPEND YOUR DAY?

A: Have I to spend it?

Q: HOW DO YOU SPEND IT?

A: No, I am asking you -- have I to spend it? I live it! Spending is not a right word. Life is not money, you don't spend it. Otherwise, one day you may go bankrupt. No, I live it and I live it intensely.
Each moment of my life is a blessing. Whatever I am doing, I do it to the very climax. I don't believe in Gautam Buddha and his middle path. Gautam Buddha was teaching the middle path, I teach the extreme. If you are enjoying, what will be the middle path? 50/50? 50 percent enjoying, 50 percent in despair. When I am taking my bath, I enjoy it as much as I have enjoyed my enlightenment, not in any way different.
And one and half hour in the morning, one and half hour in the evening -- three hours I am in the bathroom. And it is tremendously meditative, silent, beautiful just to lie down in the hot water and play with bubbles. I don't play with anything else.

Q: HOW IMPORTANT IS SEX FOR YOU?

A: Not at all. Just fun.

Q: YOU SAY THAT RAJNEESHEE IS THE ONLY RELIGION WHO CAN REALLY FREE THE PEOPLE. INDIAN OFFICIALS SAID TWO YEARS AGO ACCORDING TO SEVERAL NEWSPAPERS HERE THAT YOUR ORGANIZATION DOES NOT RESEMBLE A RELIGION. DOES THIS HURT YOU PERSONALLY, OR DO YOU FEEL ANY REMORSE ABOUT THIS?

A: No. There is no problem. In fact, that is what I am saying -- that my people don't resemble any people who have ever lived on the earth. They don't resemble any old religion. Neither do we want to be categorized with those insane theologies. It is a totally new phenomenon.

Q: YOU SAID ONCE THAT YOUR RELIGION WILL DIE WITH YOU. WILL YOU NOT ASK ANYBODY TO CONTINUE FOR YOU -- PERHAPS SHEELA, PERHAPS ANOTHER PERSON, LAXMI, OR AN ORGANIZATION FOR YOU?

A: Nobody. It is up to them whatever they want to do when I am gone. Do you see the politics in the whole idea of successors? That even when I am gone I will control through Sheela the commune. Because I have trained Sheela I can trust her, and she will remain in control. Then she prepares somebody else. And in a subtle way, though I am dead, I am controlling the living people. No, I cannot be so inhuman. While I am here, rejoice with me. When I am gone, you are intelligent enough, whatever you want to do, do. I am not going to declare anybody as my successor, and I am not going to say to my people what you have to do when I am gone.

Just look at it from the other side: People only see one side always they ask me "When you are gone," but you don't ask me when I am gone, you are gone as far as I am concerned. The world is dead. The moment I am dead, for me the whole world is dead. Now who bothers about a dead world? It is not one-sided death, that I am only dying. I am disappearing to you, you are disappearing to me. It is equal, equal death on both the sides. And I have no desire to control. I don't control even while I am living. But these people, for example, John the Baptist, baptizes Jesus, initiates him as his successor. This is a subtle strategy. Then Jesus appoints these twelve apostles as his messengers. And out of all that, by and by, the popes come in and for 2000 years, these people have been torturing.

The whole responsibility goes on Jesus, or even on John the Baptist. There is no need. I was not in the world one day, and the world has been here for millennia. Nobody asks me: "Bhagwan, what have You done when You were not here for the world?" Nobody asks that question. It is as relevant as the other question. One is about the past, when I was not here; one is about the future when I will

not be here. But both are absolutely meaningless. I am here -- that is the only place; and I am now, that is the only time. And I don't care anything. I am not going to write a will that somebody should be my successor.
There is no need. I give freedom, I don't give bondage like a Catholic church. In Spain just a few days before, the government has legalized abortion. Had to legalize because the population is destroying the whole economy of the country. Reluctantly, they legalized abortion, and now the church is fighting against it. And Spain is a fanatic country. They are protesting and they are saying that anybody who goes for abortion will be expelled from to Catholic religion.
These people can't see that who are you to dominate the whole world and its troubles and miseries and sufferings? On the one hand you go on saying we are here for your salvation, and whatever you do is just to create more misery for people. I do not belong to this mafia gang of popes, shankaracharyas, ayatollah Khomeini. I do not belong to these people.
My approach is very simple: while I am here, I will sing my song, I will have my dance, and when I am gone, I am gone.

Q: IN AN INTERVIEW WITH AN AMERICAN NEWSPAPER, YOUR FORMER RANCH MANAGER BOB HARVEY, SAID THAT HE RESTORED SEVERAL MINES ON YOUR REQUEST ON THE GROUNDS OF THE RANCH -- THE OUINNS* MINE, FOR EXAMPLE. WHAT IS IN THESE MINES? AND IS IT CORRECT WHAT SANNYASIN DHYAN JOHN SAID THAT YOU; HAVE BUILT A KALI TEMPLE?

A: That is absolutely wrong. Because in those three and half years while this man Bob Harvey was here, I was silent. I spoke only to Sheela. I never instructed him. That's absolutely wrong; I was not speaking. And it is true that there is a possibility of mines on the land, it is 126 square miles of land. It comes in the range which directly comes from Canada and moves through this property. Every possibility -- it may have oil, it may have gold, it may have silver, it may have copper; but we are not going to open those mines for the simple reason that we love our people so much that we don't want any hazard for our life. If you start working on a gold mine, you have to use chemicals which finally pollute all your water -- poisonous. In fact, one ranch just ahead of us has also gold mines. They were going to open them and we had to go to the court because their water moves into our ranch. We will not allow our water to be polluted, and we have stopped them.
So there is no question of our people digging up all the metals or oil or whatsoever is available in the land. And legally ten feet of the earth is ours, and unless we allow anybody to penetrate those ten feet, nobody -- not even the American government -- can dig the gold underneath. And we know how to be rich, how to be wealthy. Who cares about the gold? Let it lie down.

And this man is absolutely lying that I had instructed. I have never talked with him. He had no business with me; he was a servant. He used to take care of this land before we came here. The past owners had put him as a servant here, and we accepted him for a time being, so that we can become acquainted with the whole territory. But that man cheated the commune. he was getting one thousand dollars per month from his owners. Our sannyasins are innocent people -- the accountant... he started going to the accountant every week to get $1000. Just a misunderstanding, the accountant thought perhaps he is salaried $1000 per week. Now, $4000 per month for a servant! Even a poor man like me cannot afford. And what qualifications he had for $4000? Even a vice-chancellor of a university does not get that much. The chief justice of the supreme court in Oregon does not get that much. He had no qualification, nothing -- just an ordinary servant. I had never given him any instructions. And because we are not interested at all in the mines, I don't think anybody else has given him instructions to find out. Because we are not interested at all. So many people have approached that they know there are mines here and they are researchers and they would like to research. We have refused them point blank. We don't want any research on our ground, because basically we don't want to create mines here.

Q: SWAMI PREM LEELADHAR WAS INTRODUCED IN THE RAJNEESH TIMES AS A PLASTIC SURGEON WHO SPECIALIZES IN SEX CHANGES. DO YOU PERFORM SEX CHANGES ON THE RANCH HERE?

A: If somebody wants, it is part of their freedom. If somebody wants to change his sex, I think there is nothing immoral in it. You have lived as a man: you know what being a man is, and naturally every man is curious about women. In fact, it is said that nobody has yet been able to find the mystery of the woman. This is a perfectly good way -- change your sex and be a woman, and find the mystery. There is no mystery. (Laughter.)
But if you can live in one life both the sides of the coin, why not? I don't see any problem in it. The sex change is such a simple thing. The difference between men and women is so mall, almost negligible. It is just like if you pull your pocket out it becomes man; you put the pocket back, it becomes woman. And Leeladhar is really a great plastic surgeon, one of the best. I only believe in the best. So if anybody wants...

Q: THERE ARE CONSISTENT RUMORS THAT THERE IS A HUGE ARMS CACHE IN RAJNEESHPURAM. I HAVEN'T REALLY SEEN SUCH A PEACEFUL PLACE BEFORE -- I MEAN PEOPLE HUGGING EACH OTHER ON THE STREET, SMILING AT EACH OTHER, WAVING AT EACH OTHER -- WHY WOULD YOU NEED SO MANY WEAPONS?

A: There are not so many weapons. We have a police force which is part of Oregon state. And for the police force, all the weapons and everything, the Oregon state is responsible, not we. We have a commune security force because I have been attacked many times, attempts on my life have been made, the last time in India when a knife was thrown at me, there were 10,000 sannyasins present. It was in a morning discourse. And because the police got some information ahead of time, 20 police officers had reached almost few minutes before the man threw the knife. So 20 police officers were eyewitnesses, 10,000 sannyasins were eye witnesses, and yet the court freed that man without any punishment. Because the politicians wanted him to be freed, because the religious leaders wanted him to be freed. There is so much hostility in Oregon, it is not a problem to me. In fact, I created it.

But my people are concerned about me, and if somebody comes to assassinate me, I will not hinder him. That is his freedom, I will not interfere with it, although he is interfering with my life, but even at the risk of my life, I will not interfere into his freedom. But my people -- why should I interfere in their freedom to protect me. So those few guards are here. And what a strange thing that in a world which has gone nuclear -- just those toy guns -- do you think we are going to attack America or Soviet Union?

Q: YOU DECLARED DEATH AS THE BIGGEST ORGASM OF ALL TIMES ONCE. DO YOU WANT TO LEAD YOUR DISCIPLES INTO THIS SUPER ORGASM, OR DO YOU FEAR ANOTHER JONESTOWN AMONG THEM?

A: No. This is the only place where Jonestown cannot happen. it can happen in the Vatican, it can happen in any Christian context. You should be aware of few things:

Both the world wars happened in a Christian context. Christianity for centuries has killed millions of people -- burned people alive -- it is a death-oriented religion, in the service of death.

Poor Reverend Jones was simply doing the best he could. This is the only place where Jonestown cannot happen, because there is nobody who is a "reverend" here. As far as my idea about death is concerned, if a man can go meditatively into death, then death is the greatest orgasm you can feel. Because death is the separation of body and soul; it is just like when the physicist breaks the atom, there is such a great explosion. Just a single atom, which is not visible to the eyes, can destroy Hiroshima, Nagasaki.

When man's body and his soul separate, if the man is alert and aware in that moment, he will see a tremendous explosion of joy, light, eternity, truth -- whatever you want to call it. But most people die unconsciously. Before death, they become unconscious, so they never come to know it. My people are learning meditation. There is no need for them to be especially prepared for death. I am

preparing them for life, and in that very preparation, they are getting ready for death. Any time they will have to die.

Q: IF I MIGHT INTERRUPT YOU, IF I UNDERSTAND YOU CORRECTLY THAT IF SEPARATION BETWEEN BODY AND SOUL IS SUCH A TREMENDOUS EXPERIENCE, WOULDN'T IT BE DESIRABLE TO ACHIEVE THAT?

A: No. Because before that you have to learn how to be alert and meditative; otherwise, you won't get anything, no orgasmic experience. Because the experiencer will be in a coma. The whole life is a preparation for death, and you should be able to be so conscious in life that when you are making love, there are not only two persons, but four persons. Two persons making love, and two consciousnesses watching, witnessing. Or you are walking on the road, you have to walk with watchfulness, alertness, so that you can see your own body walking.

The whole life you have to prepare; then only in death you may be able to retain consciousness. So it is not just separating the body and soul; otherwise everybody who is given electric chair will enjoy an orgasm. Then Jesus being crucified would have enjoyed an orgasm. Then all those Jews -- one million -- whom Hitler put into gas chambers. He did really great religious work: gave one million people spiritual orgasmic experiences, and still these Jews are against him. No, just death won't do.

Between death and you there must be full consciousness. Then only it can become an orgasmic experience. The whole life you need to prepare, and then death is the climax of life. Then it is not the end of life, but the climax of life. The whole perspective changes.

Q: YOU SAID THAT EVERYBODY WHO WILL DIE IN A TWENTY-FOUR MILES RADIUS OF RAJNEESHPURAM WILL AUTOMATICALLY ENLIGHTENED. WHY IS THAT SO?

A: That is true. Not everybody. There you are wrong. Only a sannyasin. Not Oregonians.

Only a sannyasin dying within a twenty-five mile radius will become enlightened. And this is not something new. It has been known in the East for thousands of years. Gautam Buddha had said exactly the same. He said within twelve cosas radius, any bikkhu that is his sannyasin dying will become enlightened.

I was puzzled myself that how, what mechanism works? Twelve cosas are approximately twenty-five miles; but then I saw few sannyasins dying around me and becoming enlightened, their death was not death. I could see it.

When Vimalkirti died, we celebrated his death as it is celebrated for an enlightened man. You could have seen on his face the joy, the marks of that orgasmic experience through which he had gone. He was still radiant. The body was still somehow carrying the stamp of the experience. And then, many sannyasins in these fifteen years have died.

Then slowly, slowly I became aware why it happens. I am continuously in contact with my people. They love me so immensely that it is not a question of believing in me -- it is a simple unconditional love. So whenever a sannyasin will be dying, these twenty-five miles are something like an existential law, like the law of gravitation or the law of water evaporating at 100 degrees. Nobody asks why.

And the scientist has no answer, he can say only that that's how it is. Never at 99 degrees; never at 101 degrees. Exactly at 100 degrees the water evaporates. But why the water has chosen 100 degrees? It is simply a law.

These twenty-five miles, Buddha has recorded; these twenty-five miles, Mahavira has recorded, another founder of a great religion, Jainism, a contemporary of Buddha. And I have experienced it, and now I can feel that the energy of a commune if it is a single enlightened person, then the radius will be only five miles at the most. But if it is a commune of thousands of sannyasins, the radius becomes twenty-five miles. Why? Nothing can be said about it. That's how it happens.

And I don't know if the commune becomes bigger and still bigger, perhaps the radius will become greater. I hope one day here you will see 100,000 sannyasins, and then I want to see how big the radius can be. Can we cover the whole America? Our effort will be to cover the whole world. We have communes all over the world which will soon have the same effect. Just they need one enlightened person amongst them, and then all other sannyasins become kind of radiating, reflecting the energy field further and further away.

And when a sannyasin dies in this loving energy field, it is easier for him to be awake than otherwise. It is just like if you are sitting amongst a few people who are yawning and dozing, soon you will find yourself yawning and dozing. And you will be surprized -- why you are doing it? Those people are creating a certain vibe. If you sit with people who are bored to death, soon you will feel a certain boredom entering in you. You may have experienced sometimes to be with someone, you feel as if you are nourished. And with someone else, you find as if you have been sucked.

These are very simple experiences everybody knows that with a certain person you gain energy, with a certain person you lose energy. People avoid these people because they are parasites. The enlightened person has an energy field of five miles, alone; but if he has a commune around him, then at least twenty-five miles radius is ready to wake any sannyasin dying within it. Why it works, there is no way to say. It is just the same as other scientific laws -- it is also a scientific law.

Q: YOUR PERSONAL ASSISTANT AND SECRETARY, SHEELA, HAS MADE TREMENDOUS WAVES HERE AND IN AUSTRALIA RECENTLY ON TELEVISION AND PRESS INTERVIEWS AND IN THOSE WAVES CREATED, YOU'VE GOT SOME REALLY BAD PRESS -- THE ORGANIZATION, YOU DID. DID SHEELA ACT UNDER YOUR INSTRUCTIONS OR DO YOU FEEL SOMETIMES THAT SHE'S GONE MAYBE SOMETIMES TOO FAR?

A: No. She never goes as far as I want. She gets hit every time she comes back home, that this is not enough. You say I, my people, my commune got bad press. I want none of it. Because I know certain laws that if we can create bad news immediately existence balances it with good news.
In existence nothing can remain unbalanced -- soon the balance settles. Now, to create good news is very difficult, almost impossible. But to create bad news is very easy, very simple. And I know that the simplest should be followed. Create bad news and let existence balance it by good news. And you will see what I am saying; it has already starting.

Q: BUT THEN IT WOULD BE EASY THAT ALL YOU HAVE TO DO IS YOU HAVE TO SIT DOWN, HAVE A PRESS CONFERENCE, AND TELL EVERYBODY WHO WANTS TO HEAR THAT THERE ARE HUMAN SACRIFICES ON THE RANCH, THERE ARE, WHATEVER HORROR STORIES YOU CAN COOK UP.

A: We will do. We will do.

Q: I WOULD LIKE TO HAVE AN EXCLUSIVE ON THAT.

A: We will do. Everything. But we always wait for the right time to do it. There is a saying that no news is good news. It is not complete; it has waited for me to complete it. It says no news is good news. Its other part is good news is no news.
Bad news is the only news there is. Create as much bad news as possible. Don't be worried.

Q: DO YOU CREATE THEN THE BAD NEWS TO WAKE UP YOUR DISCIPLES, OR DO YOU CREATE THE BAD NEWS....?

A: I create the bad news to wake up my disciples and also to wake up those who are not my disciples, but will have to become my disciples sooner or later -- sooner the better.
Sheela is doing good, but she can do better.

Q: QUOTED AS SAYING "WHEN THIS WILL BE ALL OVER, I WILL BUY MYSELF A DARK SUIT, GO TO THE BAR, AND BUY A CIGAR." WILL YOU GO AND BUY YOURSELF A DARK SUIT?

A: Someday.

Q: SOON?

A: Soon -- just like Jesus said, "Soon."

Q: THANK YOU VERY MUCH.

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #26
Chapter title: None
12 August 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This is a typed tape transcript and has not been edited or published, as of August 1992. It is for reference use only. The interviewer's remarks have been omitted where not relevant to Osho's words]
INTERVIEW WITH KGO TV, SAN FRANCISCO, CALIFORNIA

QUESTION:* WHAT WOULD YOU HAVE A REPORTER LEARN HERE?

A:* One thing and only one thing: that this is the alternative to your world. Your world is on the verge of death. The politicians have brought the nuclear weapons to create the funeral of the whole humanity. And the religious leaders, insisting on celibacy, have brought humanity to the ultimate disease -- AIDS.
And the politicians and the priests both are bent upon to destroy the world. We are creating a totally new kind of man, with new values. And these communes are around the world now -- one million sannyasins, and we provide the alternative to your mad world.

Q:* HOW IS THAT ACCOMPLISHED?

A:* First the sannyasins only requirement is to be a meditator. And meditation means going into yourself, to the deepest core of your being, where absolute silence, serenity, peace, bliss are experienced. And once a person experiences those values then all ambitions about becoming a president of a country, or the prime minister, or becoming famous, a celebrity, all ambitions disappear. And if we can create millions of people who have no ambitions, that is the only way to prevent war. War is the culmination of ambitions.
And the peaceful man, the silent man who has touched his own source of being, is no more Christian, no more Hindu, no more Mohammedan, no more Buddhist, no more American, no more Russian, no more German, no more Italian, he is simply a human being, and the whole earth is his home.
If we can destroy those ugly lines on the map which divide humanity -- there is no reason for war: one thing.
Second, if we can create such serenity and joy in people's lives all their perversions; homosexuality, lesbianism, bisexuality, group sexuality, which all have culminated finally into AIDS, will disappear. Because we are creating such a contented man who needs no one to fulfill him. He is alone enough.

Q:* I SUSPECT THAT MANY OF THOSE WHOSE RELIGIONS YOU FEEL THE WAY YOU DO ABOUT, WOULD PROBABLY AGREE WITH THOSE TENANTS, AND THOSE GOALS. OR AT LEAST WOULD VOICE AN AGREEMENT WITH IT.

A:* They would not. There is no question of suspicion. I am certain they will not listen. They will fight back. They will be hostile towards me. They are.
But that makes no difference. I am not a serious man. If the world is going to go we will do whatever we can do, but our work is playfulness. We are not saviors and we are not here to save anybody. That is just by the way. Otherwise we are celebrants not saviors. We enjoy and we are enjoying, and who cares for tomorrow? Today is so tremendously beautiful.

Q:* I HEARD YOU BEGIN BY SAYING THAT THE WORLD IS ON THE VERGE OF SELF DESTRUCTION ESSENTIALLY. AND THAT THERE IS AN ANSWER, THAT SANNYASINS AROUND THE WORLD, CAN BRING THAT ABOUT. BUT NOW YOU TELL ME HOWEVER, FORGET IT. BUT I THINK THERE'S PURPOSE HERE. THERE'S NOTHING IN THIS PLACE SPEAKS OF ACCIDENT. EVERYTHING SPEAKS OF PURPOSE AND INTENTION.

A:* That's the beauty of being playful, and yet not becoming accidental. Being nonserious, laughing, enjoying, dancing and yet doing everything that is needs. There is no contradiction. That's why I say we are creating a new man in which this contradiction melts, becomes complimentary.
We are certain that those idiots are not going to hear. Still we will make our best effort playfully. Knowingly that it is a hopeless task, we will enjoy the challenge. There is no contradiction in it.

Q:* MUCH THAT YOU DO, OR YOU CONSIDER PLAYFUL IS RECEIVED OTHERWISE. AND THE CONFLICT WITH MANY AROUND YOU, WHICH I SUSPECT YOU RELISH, IS RECEIVED OTHERWISE. WHERE IS THE MESSAGE IN THERE FOR THE OUTSIDE WORLD?

A:* No message for anybody.

Q:* WELL, IF IT'S A PLAYFUL... IF IT'S A PLAYFUL ATTEMPT I MEAN....

A:* Not even attempt, that's what I am saying, that our language is different, that our way is different. We are not making any attempt, any effort. We are simply enjoying the game.
The world is on the brink of death. We are celebrating our life. By the way, if we can make those people also understand that there is an* answer and life can be saved on the planet, good. If they don't hear, if they are hostile that is their

problem. We are not concerned. We are living already and we don't bother about future.
Our whole concern is the present -- here-now.

Q:* THIS PRESENT YOU ENJOY IN THIS PLACE CAME THROUGH PLANNING FOR THE FUTURE THROUGH WHICH YOU ARRIVED AT THIS DAY, DID IT NOT? THAT'S WHAT I MEAN BY EVERYWHERE I SEE PLANNING, INTENTION, CONCERN WITH CREATING WHAT IT IS THAT YOU SEE TO CREATE.

A:* That is your way of seeing. For example, I am here. You think I am serious answering you?

Q:* NO, I DOUBT IT.

A:* But I will answer you, and anybody will be clear that there is a purpose in the answer, that I am answering out of concern. No, I am simply responding playfully -- just a game. You put the question, and I respond with the answer. I don't care whether the answer received anywhere any response or not. That is not my business. My business is finished with the answer I have given. And I enjoyed answering it. My basic purpose is to enjoy. I love talking.

Q:* IS THIS THE BEST GAME YOU'VE ...

A:* The best, because it needs the most intelligent people to play it.... It is not football; it is headball.... It is not football. Idiots can do that. It is head ball.

Q:* IT HAS BEEN REPORTED THAT YOU WERE A STUDENT IN YOUR EARLY YEARS, THAT YOU WERE A BRILLIANT STUDENT, THAT YOU READ EVERYTHING ON THE SUBJECT YOU STUDIED, AND THAT YOU HAD GREAT GRASP OF IT. WHAT DID YOU STUDY? WAS IT ANOTHER GAME? WHAT WAS IT THAT YOU USED FOR PREPARATION?

A:* No preparation I have done for anything, ever.
I have loved reading from my very childhood. My own personal library consisted of one hundred fifty thousand rare books of all the religions, philosophies, poetry, literature. And I have read all of them, but with no purpose; I enjoyed it. And the moment I felt that enough is enough.... I have enjoyed the best geniuses of the world, and now there is no more. I dropped. For five years I have not read a single book, not a single magazine, not a newspaper. No reading at all.

The students may have felt that I am prepared. In fact, I would like you to go with me a little more back. When I was a student, my professors felt that I am more prepared than them -- and I was. But I was not prepared.
They had stopped thirty years before when they left the university and became professors. And I have read everything that has happened in these thirty years. They were thirty years behind me. I was expelled from many colleges for the simple reason that many of the professors could not stand me. Understanding is out of the question, even they could not stand me.
Finally I was admitted in a college with a condition that I will never attend a class. But I ask the principal how I am going to enter into the examination. Class is no problem, that is great freedom, good, but how I am going to enter into the examination? The principle said, that "That is my problem. I will give you enough attendance to enter into examination. But it is a promise between you and me that you will not come into the college at all."
And for two years I never entered that college, and I got into the examination, and I got the gold medal, I topped the whole university and the principal was amazed. He said, "This is simply miraculous."
I said, "There is nothing. I have never read your textbooks. I have never listened to your lecturers, but I have such a love to read everything, and to go to the very depth of, to the very roots of everything.
In my reading there was no purpose, just joy. I relished it. For nine years I have been a lecturer in the university after that. That too, was a great joy. I relished, but the students were in a trouble. The university was in a trouble, because I will teach Aristotle, and I will also say that he is absolutely wrong. So first I will finish the course, and then I will destroy the whole that I have been teaching them. And they were in a great confusion then what is right.
I said, "Now, it is up to you. It is your intelligence to find out. I have presented Aristotle with absolute sincerity, but I cannot say that he is right. So I have to criticize him with the same sincerity. Now both are present to you; you can choose or you can remain confused."
I was reported to the vice-chancellor many times. And I told the vice-chancellor that, "Any day you want -- I have always carrying the resignation, but I will do only the way I want to do, because it is not a serious matter to me -- your service, your university, your textbooks, your examinations, that is nothing to me. To me, teaching is a joy. I am a born teacher."

Q:* YOU'VE WRITTEN THAT YOU WOULD TRICK A FOLLOWER OR A STUDENT. YOU DON'T REFER TO THE SANNYASINS AS FOLLOWERS, ALTHOUGH THEIR FEET SEEM TO BE FOLLOWING YOU.

A:* That is their problem.

Q:* BUT YOU SAID YOU WOULD TRICK A STUDENT TO TEACH A LESSON, AND THAT YOU HOPE THEY WOULD FORGIVE YOU THAT. IS THAT A TECHNIQUE THAT'S USEFUL TO YOU?

A:* I have been simply enjoying everything that I have been doing. And you can enjoy only anything if you are not serious about it. If you become serious about it, enjoyment disappears, it becomes work, hard work.
I have never worked, I'm a lazy man. I call myself a lazy man's guide to enlightenment. I don't do anything.

Q:* SO THE ANSWER THEN IS THAT TRICKERY WOULD BE WORK?

A:* Just enjoyment. Everything that I have done or am doing, to me is a joy. What it is to others, that is for them to decide. I have not missed a single moment of my life without enjoying it.

Q:* THE ROLLS ROYCES OBVIOUSLY RAISE A LOT OF SILLY QUESTIONS... BECAUSE THE WHOLE THING IS A LITTLE SILLY.

A:* It is not. It is not yet the whole thing.

Q:* THERE MUST BE SOMETHING ELSE BEHIND THAT.

A:* There is nothing else.

Q:* JUST TO PRICK THE HIDE OF THOSE OF USE ON THE OUTSIDE AND GET THEIR ATTENTION.

A:* No, because I am loved by my sannyasins. Whether I have ninety Rolls Royces or not, will not make any difference to their love and their trust. And I don't purchase those Rolls Royces. They are purchased by sannyasins, and they are intending to bring three hundred sixty-five Rolls Royces. So tell those people that the silliness is still not absolute. It will be absolute soon. As far as I am concerned I possess nothing. Everything that I have belongs to the commune. You will be happy to know that from the shoes to my cap, everything is made by my sannyasins themselves -- even my wrist watch.
They love me and they want to do something for me -- love always want to do something -- and I don't hinder them. Why I should hinder them? Those who hate me, they go on doing their things and I cannot hinder them. I have been poisoned. I have been in every way put in a dangerous situation. Stones have been thrown at me, shoes have been thrown at me, knives have been thrown at me. Attempts on my life have been made. I have not prevented anybody. And

why I should prevent my people who love me if they bring Rolls Royces, diamond watches?
It is simply a balance between the hostility and love, and in existence it is always balancing. I am just a witness, an outsider.

Q:* A FORTUNATE ONE.

A:* Certainly, the blessed one -- that is the meaning of Bhagwan. The word itself means the blessed one. And I am, and far more blessed than any other -- Jesus or Moses or Buddha, because nobody had such a worldwide family of friends and lovers and fellow travelers, none of them.

Q:* WHY DO YOU SO POINTEDLY AVOID THE TITLE 'LEADER'?

A:* Because it is ugly, it is exploiting.It is putting somebody down... suggesting that I know and you don't, so you follow me.

Q:* IT IS A FAIR ASSUMPTION THOUGH.

A:* That is their problem, you can ask them, you cannot ask me. As far as I am concerned, I am nobody's leader, nobody's... any responsibility I have taken on myself.

Q:* BUT IF A THING LOOKS LIKE AN ELEPHANT, WHY NOT CALL IT ONE?

A:* I cannot, because to me I have to insist my truth. If they are insistent in not listening to it, I am more insistent and will make them listen it. It is a competition between lovers. Nothing to be worried.

Q:* THE QUEST TO INFLUENCE THE HUMAN MIND MAY WELL BE THE CENTRAL ISSUE OF THE NEXT DECADE OR SO -- FROM ALL FRONTS. HOW DO YOU SEE THAT? IF YOU AGREE OR DISAGREE, HOW DO YOU SEE THAT KIND OF COMPETITION FOR BELIEFS?

A:* My approach is totally different. I want to destroy all belief systems -- Catholic or communist, it does not matter.

Q:* WHAT ABOUT THE BELIEF SYSTEM THAT DOESN'T BELIEVE IN BELIEF SYSTEMS?

A:* It is not a belief system. It cannot be a belief system. It simply deprograms people, but does not program them. It leaves them clean, tabula rasa, no writing on them, just the way they were born, innocent. My function here is to

deprogram the Jew, the Hindu, the Mohammedan, whoever comes here. I have to destroy his belief system. I am not trying to influence him in favor of another belief system. I have none.

Q:* IT IS SAID THAT NATURE DETESTS A VACUUM, THAT SOMETHING WILL FILL THE HUMAN MIND.

A:* No. That is not true, because for thirty-two years I have been absolutely nothing. So it may be objectively true as far as science is concerned, that nature abhors vacuum, but as far as spiritual interior world is concerned, it is just the opposite.
The deeper you go, the more you find yourself empty. Ultimately, you find yourself just a zero, and that is the point of enlightenment. Your ego has disappeared,your greed has far away disappeared. You have disappeared, there is only light, life, infinite, eternal, but you are not there as a person, but just a pure consciousness, and it is nothingness. Buddha has actually given it the name nothingness -- nirvana; that* means nothingness.
In the western world, no religion has reached to that point -- all the western religions -- the three: Christian, Judaic tradition and Mohammedanism, which are born out of India. The other three religions which are born in India: Hinduism, Jainism and Buddhism -- all three have reached to the point where you enter into an inner zero. And that is their ultimate goal: to be nothing, and it is never filled by anything.

Q:* YOU WON'T BE SURPRISED TO LEARN THAT I DON'T UNDERSTAND ANY OF THAT.

A:* You will not, and I am not surprised, because how can you understand something that you never have experienced. For example, if you have never tasted sugar, whatever I do, there is no way to explain you the taste of it. I will have to ask my sannyasins to hold you and force a spoonful of sugar into your mouth -- the only way. Looks a little hard, but what can be done? Unless you taste it you will not understand it. So if you really want to understand what I am saying about inner nothingness come here, be here for few days. Meditate with my people who have experienced it. Just being close with them, some kind of synchronicity happens.
If there are a dozen people who are deep in meditation, you simply sit in the middle of those people and try whatsoever they say, just sit down and watch your thoughts and do nothing. But those twelve people are radiating something towards you, and your effort together will give you the taste. If I have given the taste to thousands of people, you cannot be exceptional, nobody is. Everybody has the same spiritual potential.

Q:* I AGREE WITH YOU.

A:* Okay, and you will remember your questions, otherwise your questions will remain unanswered. Don't get involved with me, you just remember your questions.

Q:* WHAT DO YOU MEAN, DON'T LISTEN TO YOU?

A:* You just remember that you have brought questions. I have not brought any answer, so whatsoever you ask I will answer. It is going to be immediate, but to me it makes no difference what you ask.

Q:* I'M AWARE OF THAT.

A:* But it is my concern to remind you.

Q:* THERE ARE PATTERNS AND SIMILARITY BETWEEN WHAT IS TAUGHT HERE AND HOW, AND WHAT'S TAUGHT IN OTHER ORGANIZATIONS AND HOW. AND SPECIFICALLY IN THE MANNER WHICH INVOLVES RHETORIC AND PSYCHOLOGY. THAT'S WHY PEOPLE ASK YOU, "IS THIS PLACE ANOTHER JONESTOWN? IS THIS PLACE ANOTHER WHATEVER?" BUT THEY ARE CLEAR SIMILARITIES, AND THERE MUST HAVE BEEN SOMEWHERE SOME SHARED KNOWLEDGE.

A:* There are bound to be some similarities, because we are not the only human beings. Outside also there are human beings, so there are bound to be some similarities. I have two eyes, you have two eyes, but that does not mean that our basic attitude is the same. For example, you mentioned Reverend Jim Jonestown.

Q:* I DON'T MEAN TO SUGGEST THAT YOUR INTENTIONS ARE THE SAME. I'M OBSERVING THAT A LOT OF THE TECHNIQUES ARE.

A:* No. Neither our intentions are the same nor is there any possibility of such a thing to happen here. Reverend Jim Jones and his Jonestown can happen only in a Christian context.

Q:* HE WAS A MARXIST.

A:* Marxism is a Christian product.

Q:* HE FORSOOK RELIGION AS HE DEFINED IT, AND I REMEMBER A SERMON HE PREACHED ONE DAY WHERE HE THREW THE BIBLE ON THE FLOOR AND STOMPED UP AND DOWN ON IT AND SAID, "THAT'S ALL

BULLSHIT," AND WENT ON TO TELL HIS FOLLOWERS IF THEY FOLLOWED HIM TO GUYANA* THAT EVENTUALLY THEY COULD GO TO THE SOVIET UNION AND THAT RELIGION WAS TO BE FORSAKEN. PERHAPS PHILOSOPHICALLY YOU COULD CONNECT THE TWO, MARXISM AND CHRISTIANITY, BUT ON THE LEVEL THAT MOST PEOPLE DEAL AND WILL UNDERSTAND, THEY AREN'T RELATED.

A:* They are related.

Q:* BUT ISN'T IT MISLEADING TO REFER TO A MAN WHO DEFINES HIMSELF AS A MARXIST AS BEING A CHRISTIAN?

A:* Certainly, because he still remains the Reverend Jim Jones. Reverend is a Christian title... not a Marxist title. You don't refer Reverend Joseph Stalin. And as far as Marxism is concerned, it is simply a reaction to Christianity. Remember that Jesus and Marx both were Jews, never forget that. And both were trying to change the Jewish tradition -- Jesus in his own way, Marx in his own way. Because Jesus has failed on certain points: the only begotten son of God, the existence of God, heaven and hell, Marx simply denied. There is no God, there is no question of any begotten son of God, there is no heaven and hell. In fact, there is no consciousness in man, it is only a by-product of material things.

It was really Jesus in a new edition in which all those points have been deleted which brought Jesus to the crucifixion -- only those points are. Otherwise, just as Jesus is concerned with the poor and says, "Blessed are the poor for theirs is the kingdom of God," Marx is not different. He says, "Proletariat of the world unite, because you have nothing to lose and everything to gain." The only difference is that Jesus was talking about a fictitious kingdom far away in the heavens, and Marx was a more pragmatic and practical man -- he was talking that, "We can create that paradise here -- all that is needed is: destroy classes, make a classless society." But both were in favor of the poor, both were against the rich.

Jesus says, "A camel can pass through the eye of a needle, but not a rich man can pass through the gates of his god." Now this man seems to be the first communist! What do you expect of a communist? Even Marx has not such a strong statement against the rich. In fact he was living on the money provided by a rich man, Friedrich Engels; whole life he never earned anything. Friedrich Engels was an industrialist, a rich man, and he supplied all his needs, his whole life.

He could not say that Engels cannot enter into the kingdom of God; without Engels, Marx himself will not find a way into kingdom of God.

Jesus raises the poor to the highest level. He praises them and that's what Marx was doing in a more scientific way. Jesus was too young. He was crucified when he was thirty-three, uneducated, knowing nothing -- he was just a carpenter's son. Maybe he knew something about wood, but about God he knew nothing.

Karl Marx is just another Jew, against the Jewish tradition, the richness of the Jews, their immense intelligence to create wealth -- Marx was poor, just as Jesus was poor. And you must remember that Marx's father was a reverend, so he was brought up in the context of Christianity. His father was converted -- he was a Christian -- and he was teaching Christianity to his children too. And whole communism is just a reaction against the Jewish wealth, their capacity to create wealth.

This man, Reverent Jim Jones, is doing exactly what Jesus was doing. He was saying to people that, "You just follow me, believe in me, and you will enter into my kingdom of God." The only condition was, "Believe in me!" And that was the condition of Reverend Jones, "Believe in me, and I will lead you to the kingdom of God." His kingdom of God may have been Sovietland -- that does not matter -- but he was the leader and you were the led; he knew what and where they are going -- you need not bother about it, need not even question about it.

Secondly, Jesus said to his disciples, "I will come back. First I will prepare the ground for you in the kingdom of God and then I will come back to take you." Reverend Jim Jones were far more intelligent than Jesus: why go and prepare; why not take the whole lot with you?

This is the only place where Jonestown cannot happen. It can happen anywhere within Christian context; it cannot happen in India, you cannot conceive. In Hindu concept you cannot conceive.

Q:* OF WHAT? -- SUICIDE. THOUGH NOT ALL WHAT HAPPENS THERE WAS SUICIDE.

A:* Jonestown -- Jonestown you cannot conceive under Hindu or Buddhist or Jaina or Tao traditions -- impossible, for the simple reason that Krishna, who is the God of the Hindus is a lover of life. He has sixteen thousand wives. Do you think such a man will...?

Q:* COMMIT SUICIDE? YES, FRANKLY.

A:* No! Suicide is committed by people who have only one wife. Having sixteen thousand wives, one is already living in paradise! What more you can want?

Q:* I USED THE JONESTOWN THING JUST AS AN EXAMPLE OF, OF THE ISSUE OF THE SIMILARITIES TO WHICH I WOULD LIKE TO RETURN....

A:* There are no similarities.

Q:* I DON'T SEEK TO DRAW A CONCLUSION OF A SIMILAR END.... WHAT I'VE SEEN IS REMARKABLE SIMILARITY IN TECHNIQUE.

A:* Just tell me what.

Q:* IN THE TECHNIQUE OF ATTRACTING, WORKING WITH PEOPLE.

A:* What technique?

Q:* THE TECHNIQUES OF MEDITATION -- NOT PRECISELY THE SAME (TAPE INAUDIBLE)

A:* Reverend Jim Jones.... Or even Jesus, has never heard what meditation is. They knew only prayer and prayer is not meditation.
You are finding difficulty now to... show the similarities. Meditation you mentioned, which cannot exist in Jonestown.

Q:* THE CONTROL OF INFORMATION.

A:* No. There is no control.
There is no control about anything. People are absolutely free to be here or not to be here.

I DON'T SEEK A TRICK HERE AND I DON'T SEEK A FALSE COMPARISON, SO....

A:* No. I understand. I understand your intention. Just see one thing: in Jonestown, the major following was Black people, in this place the major following is White people. In Jonestown the people were all illiterate, uneducated... except for few. Here everybody is educated, most of them are graduates of universities, most of them has Masters' degrees, few have Ph.D.'s, few are D.Litt's. Not even few are uneducated. The uneducated, the illiterate, the poor, the Black -- these are the people who are very gullible, these are the people who are victims of all kinds of systems of belief.

Q:* A STREET BLACK WOULD TELL YOU THAT THAT'S NONSENSE, THAT HE'S HARD TO CON, SO WHAT WOULD YOUR REACTION BE?

A:* They were just here for three month, to share homes with us. They were not going to be part of the commune and we were not interested in transforming them. Just whenever we have surplus money, and our people are so productive all around the world, that whenever we have some surplus money, we would like to share it with different groups. That was just the our first experiment to share it with the street people and to give them the same dignity as any other human being needs: give them the same love, the same equality, the same

clothes, the same food, the same air-conditioned housing -- a taste of what they are missing on the streets.
Never again we are going to invite them, because we have other projects, far more dangerous. In the next month we are going to have another project which is going to shake the whole America.

Q:* I TAKE IT FROM THE FACT YOU DIDN'T VOLUNTEER TO TELL ME WHAT IS, THERE'S NO POINT IN ASKING.

A:* There is no point in asking, because I would like to keep people in curiosity, suspense.

Q:* A SANNYASIN ONCE TOLD ME DURING THE PERIOD OF YOUR SILENCE THAT YOU WOULD BEGIN TO SPEAK AGAIN WHEN AN ECONOMIC NEED AROSE.

A:* That's wrong. We have never faced any economic need, otherwise my Rolls Royces will not be go on growing. One has come just now, one is coming within the next week, and one I am informed, my people are specially making: an old model of Rolls Royce, Phantom.
It is going to cost four-hundred-thousand dollars. Ordinary Rolls Royce costs only one hundred thousand dollars; it will take one and half year to be made, but it will be the most unique Rolls Royce in the whole world. So we are not out of economy. There is no question, for me to speak because my commune was not going well.
My commune is going so well that nothing else in the whole world is going so well! Five thousand people are here. They all have the best standard of food, the best housing, the whole commune is centrally air-conditioned, they have hundreds of cars, hundreds of busses, they have five planes, and we are not expanding, because the legality of the city is under litigation, so they have prevented us to expand. Otherwise I was going to bring one hundred thousand sannyasins here and I will bring. The litigation we are going to win.
In a democratic country nobody can defeat me.

Q:* WHERE COULD A MAN LIKE YOU BE DEFEATED?

A:* Only in the Soviet Union, never, no other place. They are afraid in Soviet Union. Already my books are banned. I have sannyasins underground in Soviet Union, they are being persecuted, already, but because of the government persecution, there is great excitement to become sannyasins. For the first time, against communism, there is a new movement. And the new generation needs something new. Communism is already out of date. Marx's books, who reads? No communist, nobody bothers -- it is just old testament. So that is the only place

where I may be defeated, but not in America. If I am defeated in America then America is not different from Soviet Union; then it is a bogus democracy, hypocrite.

Q:* DO YOU SAY THAT IN CONFIDENCE OF YOUR BEING ABLE TO PLAY THE GAME OF DEMOCRACY BETTER THAN ANYONE ELSE...

A:* Certainly.

Q:*... SO THAT IF YOU CAN'T WIN THEN THE GAME IS WRONG?

A:* I know the constitution of America and I am going to stand for it against the Americans, because the American government, the state governments are all violating the basic rights given to human beings in the constitution.
I can play the game. I can play the game in Soviet Union also, if the need arises, because I don't think anybody has read communist literature more than I have read. I can play the game, but first I have to try America.

Q:* WHY ARE THERE SO MANY PEOPLE WHO STUDIED PSYCHOLOGY AND PSYCHIATRY HERE?

A:* This reason is clear: psychology is the latest development of intelligence, the latest science. And they can understand me more than anybody else. They are the most intelligent people.

Q:* CAN THEY TEACH BETTER THAN ANYONE ELSE?

A:* That is not certain. To be a psychologist is one thing; to be a teacher is totally different art.
We have so many psychologists here that many Ph.D.'s are farming, many Ph.D.'s are creating dams, many Ph.D.'s are looking after my peacocks.... Few perhaps are functioning as psychologists, psychiatrists, in the medical center. If somebody needs any help, if somebody is schizophrenic....

Q:* WHAT ABOUT IN THE MEDITATION COURSES AND IN THE UNIVERSITY?

A:* Meditation is beyond psychology. It is not psychology. It has nothing to do with brain, it has nothing to do with the mind either. It is a state of no-mind. Even Sigmund Freud and Carl Gustav Jung and Alfred Adler, had no idea of meditation, what it is. They all thought in terms of concentration. Concentration has nothing to do with meditation. Concentration is a method of the mind and meditation is a way how to transcend the mind, how to go above the mind -- so

you are on the top of the hills and all your thoughts are just in the valley -- and you can watch them and you can have a bird's eye view of what kind of mind you have.
These are three things: the state of no-mind which is your being, the mind which is what the society has conditioned you for, the third -- the brain -- which you have brought into the world with the body. The most bogus is the mind. The brain is a reality. The no-mind is a reality. The mind is only a program: Hindu mind, Mohammedan mind, communist mind -- the mind has to be labeled, because it is a program. And meditation is a deprogramming. It is going beyond the mind. Nobody can deprogram a meditation man -- impossible. There is no way. He has nothing.
I am available: I give the challenge to any psychiatrist in the whole world if he can deprogram me. Just he has to be alerted that by deprogramming me, he may get deprogrammed!

Q:* I SEE THIS BUSINESS OF COMPETITION FOR THE THOUGHTS OF MAN AND FOR THE INDOCTRINATION PROCEDURES THAT ARE GOING ON ALL OVER THE WORLD. IT HAPPENS IN ADVERTISING, IT HAPPENS IN THE MILITARY, IT HAPPENS IN CHURCHES, BUT IT SEEMS TO HAVE BECOME MORE SOPHISTICATED.... THERE SEEMS TO BE A LEVEL OF IT THAT'S ALMOST FRANCHISABLE.

A:* No. No indoctrination happens here -- sophisticated or unsophisticated -- because if you look at my books you will find thousands of contradictions in them. Talking to me is just a beautiful game, with words. I am not trying to preach a certain doctrine, otherwise I will be consistent. I will repeat the same thing.
I have never repeated anything. And I have contradicted myself every day and I tell to my people never bring yesterday what I said. You ask directly right now whatever is your question, but don't bring that, "Bhagwan, you said ten years before this and now you are saying this...." I have never read my books, and I don't remember ten years back. And why should I remember unnecessary luggage on my head?
I am available, more alert, more aware, than I was ten years before.

Q:* DO YOU THINK THAT'S GOING ON IN THE WORLD?

A:* No. That indoctrination is going on all over the place, except my communes.

Q:* WHERE DO YOU SEE THAT LEADING, YOUR COMMUNE QUITE ASIDE, JUST AS AN OBSERVATION?

A:* Everywhere. The pope is doing, Mother Teresa the terrible is doing.... That woman is terrible!

Q:* THIS RULED MY QUEST: TO MAKE FOLKS SEE THINGS HOW WHATEVER PARTICULAR LEADER SEES THEM. IT JUST SEEMS TO ME TO BE HEATING UP AND HEADING SOME PLACE THAT MAKES ME UNCOMFORTABLE IN THE WORLD AT LARGE.

A:* It is happening there and the politicians are leading the world to a nuclear war, because they go on piling up nuclear weapons inspite of all their speeches about peace, love, friendship, coexistence -- but they all are piling up nuclear weapons.

In fact it seems to be a little crazy: already they have so much nuclear weapons, they can destroy this planet for seven hundred times. Now there is no need. There is no way for life to escape; they have already seven hundred times more than it is needed. But they are heading out of fear of each other.

The religious leaders are continuously trying to convert, particularly Christianity which is the biggest religion in the world, is trying to convert the poor people very easily. Because those poor people need food, those people need medicine, they need houses, they need jobs, and Christianity can provide them few things. And their own religion cannot do anything else but prayer to a God who does not exist.

So Christianity is trying to convert people more and more into the church, because it is also a political game -- politics of numbers.

Politicians and priests have been in a certain conspiracy always. The conspiracy is that they both need wars, they both need poverty, they both need people in suffering, misery, orphans, widows, sick people -- they both need all these people. Without these people Adolf Hitler has a statement in his biography that, "Only in a wartime you can become a great hero," and that is true: all your heroes are wartime heroes. You don't know anything about, not a single peacetime hero.

Politicians, if they want to achieve their ambition -- and they are ambitious people, otherwise why they should be in politics? Their ambition can be fulfilled only in war. The trouble is that the third world war is going to destroy all, so both parties are waiting and trying to find out ways how to prevent nuclear weapons or sabotage them.

Once either America or Soviet Union finds a method, that can nullify nuclear weapons, the war will be immediately on. It will be postponed till that moment, and that moment cannot be very long -- both the sides are continuously working how to find something as an antidote for nuclear weapons. Right now they don't have any antidote. Till they don't have the antidote, you can remain assured there is not going to be war. But soon they may find. There is not much problem in it. If they can find nuclear weapons, they can find something which negates nuclear weapons.

And the religious leaders are trying to convert the poor countries, the poor people -- that is also the program of the capitalist countries. Against communism. America don't have a philosophy to argue. Against communism, America needs Christianity to argue. You cannot convert Indians into Americans, obviously. You cannot convert Japanese into Americans, obviously. But you can convert them into Christianity. So Christianity is serving the capitalist politicians and is spreading Christianity all over the world.
And these Christians, their leaders, are against abortion, because if there is abortion.... The religious leaders are against abortion.

Q:* NOT ALL OF THEM.

A:* All.

Q:* EVEN THE ONES WHO SAY THEY'RE NOT?

A:* Everyone is against abortion -- religious leaders. The Hindu religious leaders, the Buddhist religious leaders, the Christian, the Jews -- they are all against abortion, against birth control methods, against the pill for they all want more numbers. Number is their strength.

Q:* YOU PAINT SUCH AN UTTERLY DARK PICTURE.... YOU PAINT SUCH A PICTURE OF THE TOTALITY OF SELFISHNESS OF EVERYONE OUTSIDE HERE.

A:* It is true. It is true. I am neither....
I am not a pessimist, I am not an optimist either. I am just a realist. So if it is night I cannot say it is day. And I am not painting it dark; it is dark.... Absolutely dark.

Q:* THIS IS THE ARK?

A:* This is Noah's ark. This is where we are trying to pull the intelligent youth, so they can be saved from AIDS -- outside world will not be capable to save people from AIDS. They may be able to postpone the third world war, but who is going to postpone AIDS.
Q:* HOW WILL YOU ACCOMPLISH THAT HERE?

A:* Only we can do it.
We are already doing it. Every sannyasin is going through tests, and if somebody is found to have AIDS, he is not condemned; he is a victim of all old religions. We love him, we have made a beautiful place. Two persons we have found who have AIDS -- we have made a beautiful place, the most scenic for them, because their life is now short, and we are supplying them everything that they ever

wanted. And we are going to create that place bigger -- if more AIDS people come to the commune, we will put them there with all medical facilities -- but AIDS cannot be in any way cured. All that can be done is those people can be prevented from spreading it, and that you cannot do in the outside world -- it is impossible.

Q:* YOU'RE SAYING IT HAS TO BE A CONTROLLED ENVIRONMENT?

A:* Yes. It has to be a certain commune where people love each other, respect each other. Even the person who has AIDS does not feel condemned. In the outside world the people who have AIDS are trying to hide it, otherwise the whole society will be turning their backs on them.

Q:* I KEEP HAVING DIFFICULTY... IT'S THE TOTALITY WITH WHICH YOU CONDEMN US.... Q:* I'VE BEEN TO AIDS HOSPICES, I'VE SEEN THE TREMENDOUS CARE, THAT DECENT GIVING HUMAN BEINGS PRESENT TO MEN WHO WERE DYING. I'VE SEEN PEOPLE OF RELIGION WHO YOU CONDEMN BEING GENEROUS AND GOOD AND OPERATING FROM POINTS OF CONSCIENCE.

A:* It is just your prejudice that has given you all these ideas. For example, if you look at mother Teresa from your attitude.... I am just taking an example, because I know her and her work....
Anybody who sees her work will appreciate it -- she is doing a great service to humanity: saving the orphans. But the real purpose of saving the orphans is converting them to Catholicism. All those orphans are being adopted by Catholic families. One American Protestant family went there. They were not aware that they will be refused. They were asked, "Are you Christians?" They said, "Yes." So they were taken in and the receptionist informed that, "There are seven hundred orphans -- you can choose -- but first you fill the register to what religion you belong," and then they wrote, "Protestant." And the clerk said, "Wait. Let me first inquire," and out he comes back and says that, "We don't have any orphans right now." A minute before there were seven hundred orphans.
This man wrote a letter to all biggest Indian newspapers. I condemned on that letter mother Teresa. She wrote a letter to me. I had told her that this is absolutely ugly; you are trying to convert orphans into Catholicism, your concern is not the orphan. Your concern: one more Catholic.
Secondly, you are against abortion, you are against birth control, because if there is birth control and abortion, where you are going to get orphans -- the whole supply of orphans. So on the outside it is white house, inside it is all black. @D She wrote to me that, "I will be praying to God on your behalf, that he should forgive you." Nobody can say that something is wrong in it, but I know everything is wrong in that sentence. I wrote her back that there is no God, so

don't try to befool me. Secondly, who are you to pray on my behalf without my permission? You are interfering into my life, without my permission -- this is trespass.
So the sentence looks beautiful, but when you dissect it, what she is saying that I am wrong, so wrong that I will be punished by God, and she is right and she is praying for me -- what great generosity.

Q:* I CAN'T, I CAN'T SEE THINGS IN THAT BLACK AND WHITE. LIKE YOUR STORIES ABOUT MOTHER TERESA -- I KNOW NOTHING. BUT I DO KNOW THEY'RE DECENT PEOPLE OUT THERE.

A:* You have to look more deeply into these generous people. These are the people who have kept humanity poor.

Q:* YOU ARE TREATING TWO PEOPLE WHO HAVE AIDS; I HAVE SEEN THE PEOPLE WHO ARE TAKING CARE OF THEM...

A:* They are not serving, they are not servants of the people, they are not serving the poor. Service is not a respected word here.
They are simply sharing their love. And in sharing it is totally different. You give your love to those people who have very little time to live... and without any greed. All the religions in the world are serving the poor with a certain motivation that if they serve the poor they will reach to the kingdom of God.
My people have no greed, no motive; there is no God and no paradise.

Q:* HOW DO WE KNOW THAT THESE PEOPLE I SAW WORKING.... WON'T GET IT?

A:* They enjoying it, they are just enjoying it. I have made everything here a celebration, and that is my religion: celebration. And we don't bother about anything else. If those two people are sick, it is part of our celebration to share our energy with them and prevent the disease spreading to other people. And we can do it perfectly. In the outside world, I know there are Senators in your parliament who have AIDS. But these people can hide it -- they are powerful enough -- they can hide it. And the person who has AIDS knows that he is going to die within two years time: he will make as many sexual contacts as possible.

Q:* ARE YOU SUGGESTING THAT I WOULD GO OUT KNOWINGLY CONTAMINATE PEOPLE IF I KNEW I HAD AIDS

A:* No, no. It is not a question of knowingly contaminating. The question is a man who knows that he's going to die. His immediate reaction will be how much

he can live in these two years or six months time. He has to live with speed, with intensity, that he had never done before....
So this man is going to have as many sexual contacts as possible. Not that he is trying to contaminate anybody; he is just the flame which is going out.
In the outside world it is happening.
Soon you will see.

Q:* WELL, IT'S HARD TO BELIEVE.

A:* The question is: you can be contaminated even by kissing and you may not know, because it is not only sexual intercourse that you get, get the AIDS.
Q:* THERE IS A THEORY ABOUT THAT.

A:* Yes. You can be just kissed by a friend and you may get it. And without knowing it, you may contaminate other people. It is a wildfire. And now there are few experts who are saying that there is a possibility to contaminate even by breathing -- then it becomes absolutely impossible. But in my commune, we will try to prevent that too. Everybody, all the sannyasins can use the doctors' mask. You will not be able to do that in the outside world. That's what I am trying to make the difference; the difference is here we are living together, caring about each other, loving each other. Outside world, you have your family, a small circle friends, but the outside world is big, and it is beyond control.
All the states and all the governments are trying to repress the information about people who have AIDS. For the simple reason, because it is such a condemnation. And if you repress the information, you are a criminal. For example, in Oregon, they have made the test for AIDS so difficult that almost ninety percent people who are suffering from AIDS will not be caught into it. This is what my medical people have informed me, that the test they are doing is such that ninety percent will be cleared out.

Q:* I'D LIKE TO TALK WITH THEM ABOUT THAT.

A:* Yes, you should talk with them. And these ninety percent people who are given a clear certificate will not be contaminating anybody knowingly, but they will be contaminating all the same. Knowledge is not needed to contaminate anybody.
The outside world is crushed between nuclear weapons and AIDS. Perhaps nuclear weapons may be avoided, for the simple reason if we cannot find an antidote, the nuclear weapons cannot be used, but AIDS is unavoidable. Unless the world turns into small communes, and people start going on their own accord to be examined, and every commune manages for those people special places to live and supplies their demands -- I don't think the outside world is going to do that.

Thirty million people in America are almost in Ethiopia....
And America cannot do anything for thirty million poor people in America itself, but it goes on making more nuclear weapons. You have these mad people in power to be removed immediately. A great concern should be created in the outside world that these people are mad -- when your people are dying, even in India -- fifty percent people are on the line any moment they will be dying like Ethiopia: one thousand people per day. And the prime minister of India is selling wheat to outside countries, exporting wheat, because he wants nuclear plant and for that money is needed. Now these people should be behind bars.
Rajiv Gandhi is one of my friends... but still I say he should be imprisoned immediately, because what he is doing is criminal. People are dying and you are preparing for more death.... Strange. And you call that they are generous -- the pope is generous and goes on continuously telling, "No abortion, no birth control, no pill -- these are all immoral," and to go on creating more children is moral.

Q:* THANK YOU.

A:* Although your questions have remained -- I'm worried about your questions.

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #27
Chapter title: None
13 August 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This is a typed tape transcript and has not been edited or published, as of August 1992. It is for reference use only. The interviewer's remarks have been omitted where not relevant to Osho's words]
INTERVIEW WITH ILLUSTRATED WEEKLY OF INDIA BOMBAY, INDIA

Q:* FOR ABOUT THREE AND A HALF YEARS, YOU KEPT A MAUN. AND AFTER THAT , YOU GAVE IT UP. WHY DID YOU CHOOSE TO TAKE A MAUN? WHY DID YOU CHOOSE TO GIVE IT UP?

A:* There were many reasons. The most fundamental was concerning my sannyasins. I don't want them to be intellectually related to me, because that has nothing to do with the real experience of your being.
There were many people who were just hanging around me. They loved my words, they loved my way of thinking, and I am not a thinker, and I am not a preacher. I am not a prophet or messiah.
I want to share my experience and for that only those who are capable of living with me in silence are ready to understand me. So for three and a half years I was silent. The basic reasons was that those people who were hanging around my words, were interested intellectually in me, dropped out.
And the people who were in love with me -- not with my words or theories -- they remained. The moment I saw that all people whose concern was their head are gone, I have started speaking again. Now with these people, speaking is a totally different experience.
They can read me between the words, they can read me between the lines, and they are not addicted to my words. If I silent they are as happy as when I am speaking to them.

Q:* BUT WHAT IS THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN BEING ADDICTED TO YOUR WORDS AND BEING ADDICTED TO YOU?

A:* There is a great difference. Being addicted to my words is just being intellectual. Being in love with me is total. Being in love with me is not a conviction, it is an experience. Being in love with my words, somebody can destroy it very easily -- just a little better argument and the person is finished.
But a person who is in love with me -- nothing can disturb him. His trust is not based on any argument, it is not philosophical, it is existential.

Q:* ONE MAY DRAW SUSTENANCE FROM HIS LOVE FOR YOU; SOME MAY DRAW SUSTENANCE FROM THEIR LOVE FOR WHAT YOU ARE SAYING. WHY DO YOU THINK ONE KIND OF LOVER IS LESS IMPORTANT THAN THE OTHER AND NEEDS TO BE DROPPED OFF?

A:* He is not only less important, he is absolutely wrong. His approach toward me is wrong, and what he is doing with my words -- creating certain belief systems, creating some philosophy, some ideology which is going to prevent him from knowing himself.
My whole work is to help people to know themselves, and those who become addicted with the words are creating a hindrance for themselves. It does not matter whether they are Christian or Hindu or Mohammedan or addicted with my words. It is the same thing: They are hanging in their heads, and the reality is somewhere far deep where no word has ever entered, and no word is ever possible to enter.
It is in your uttermost silence, in your meditative peaceful serenity. So it is not a question only of difference or degrees, they are polar opposites. Those are the wrong people -- unnecessarily wasting their time here.

Q:* BUT DOES A MASTER CHOOSE HIS FLOCK?... HE LEADS HIS OWN LIFE AND BY HIS EXAMPLE, PEOPLE FOLLOW HIM. HOW DOES IT MATTER TO HIM WHO FOLLOWS HIM?

A:* I am not a leader. So nobody is allowed to follow me. They are my fellow travelers, they are my friends, and I am absolutely certain that who should be my friend.
Followers -- who cares? Flocks -- who cares? Crowds -- who cares? These are individuals. I care. And I don't want any wrong person for any wrong motive to waste his time. It is not harming me -- he is harming himself. It is out of compassion that I want him to be released.
And they went away. The device worked perfectly well: they went away and new people have come in their place. While I was silent they became sannyasins. Their approach is totally different; their search is different.
So remember, I am not a leader, I am not a prophet, I am not a messiah. I have no business to do with all that company. I am a simple man just like you and my people. If there is any difference the difference is very slight.
The difference is that you are asleep, and I am awake.

Q:* ONLY THIS MORNING IN YOUR DISCOURSE, YOU SAID THAT YOU ARE NOT A SIMPLE MAN, YOU ARE EXTRAORDINARY MAN.

A:* Only an extraordinary man can say it that he is a simple man.

A simple man cannot say that.

Q:* OKAY -- THESE ARE YOUR FRIENDS.

A:* These are my friends.

Q:* BUT YOU HARDLY INTERACT WITH THEM.

A:* Continuously I am interacting. I am dancing with them, I am talking with them. I am sitting in silence with them.

Q:* BUT IT IS HARDLY A ONE-TO-ONE COMMUNION WITH ANYONE.

A:* There is no need. I have created the field where just sitting by my side is enough. Otherwise, they will be gone if there is no communion. What they will be doing here? For what they will be here? I dance with them, and they feel my love. They know my love.
Love is something that need not be expressed in words, or expressed even in actions. They can see it in my eyes. You are seeing it in my eyes. Not only they are my friends, you are my friend.
That's why you are here. This is the beginning of a friendship and it is not going to end easily.

Q:* IN INDIA YOU WERE PERHAPS IN CLOSER TOUCH ON A DAY-TO-DAY LEVEL WITH PEOPLE.

A:* No. Not much. Just when I was initiating them into sannyas.

Q:* BUT YOU ARE SLOWLY WITHDRAWING YOURSELF?

A:* Yes, that's true. Because now I can have a contact even from distance. Now physical contact is not necessary, particularly with my people. Even though I never come out of my room, they know I am there. They know and they feel. In the beginning it was necessary to come into contact because that was the only language those people could have understood.
As love deepens, as meditation deepens, distance makes no difference. I have my communes all around the world. Those people who are in a commune in Germany, or in Holland or in Switzerland feel me as deeply as my people.

Q:* BUT YOU HAVE THIS GORGEOUS FEMININE MAFIA IN BETWEEN.

A:* That is true. Love always has a feminine mafia in between. It is really gorgeous!

You just be here and you see the whole ARABIAN NIGHT is actually lived here.

Q:* YOU SPEAK OF FREEDOM OF ALL KINDS: INTELLECTUAL, EMOTIONAL, SEXUAL. HOW CAN YOU YOURSELF LIVE SUCH A RIGID, BORING, DULL, DISCIPLINED LIFE?

A:* It is not disciplined for me. It is not dull for me. It is not rigid for me. To me, it is the most comfortable life. It is not that I have disciplined myself, it is that living in many ways I have found the most comfortable way, the most luxurious way to live.

Q:* BUT SURELY THE MOST COMFORTABLE AND THE MOST LUXURIOUS IS NOT NECESSARILY THE BEST WAY TO LIVE ONE'S LIFE.

A:* To me it is. To me it may not be. But whatsoever is the best to you is luxurious for you. And I don't say that all my sannyasins have to live in my discipline, the way I live, or the ritual of my living.
No. They are free to find out their ways. But I have found mine and I am perfectly contented with it. So it is not dull -- I am every moment enjoying it.

Q:* IT'S AN EXTREMELY STRUCTURED LIFE.

A:* It is not structured. It may look from the outside. It may look from the outside it is structured, it is not structured. I have....
For example, I have tried to wake up three o'clock in the morning, I have tried to wake up four o'clock in the morning, I have tried to wake up five o'clock in the morning. I have tried to wake up eight o'clock in the morning -- and finally I found that six suits me the best.
Now, for an outsider it may look a structured life that every day I wake up at six, but to me that has been the best moment. After that, the sleep becomes a headache. Before that, the whole day becomes dull, sleepy. But exactly at six I have found my time. And now scientists say that for two hours every night, you have the deepest sleep. If you wake up after these two hours exactly, you will have the most awakened day.
In those two hours, your temperature falls down, so it can be measured from outside, too. And I have tried that, that when my temperature falls down, it falls down between four and six.
And exactly at six -- and this is a later thing -- I had found my time long before. For thirty years I have been waking up at six. But this is just recently I found out that scientists say that these two hours -- wherever in the night they happen, and to different people they happen at different times. Somebody may find it at five o'clock, somebody may find three o'clock.

Vinoba Bhave used to wake up at three o'clock, and that became the discipline of his ashram. Everybody has to wake up three o'clock. Now that is nonsense, that is stupid. Vinoba it may be the right time, but all those people in Vinoba's ashram are unnecessarily suffering. Then in the whole day they feel dull, sleepy. Change your diet, your diet must be wrong. Change your other habits, something must be wrong. And the only thing wrong is that they are waking up at the wrong time.

So, to me, it is not structured. I have looked for it and found the right point, the balanced point. The same with my food. I have found what suits me, how much is needed, how much keeps me in a well-being, and I go with it.

I am a very luxurious, lazy, comfort-loving man. And I have found everything that is needed to make me comfortable. I possess nothing -- I am the poorest man in the world in that sense. Otherwise, I am the richest, because my people have made everything available to me. It does not belong to me, it belongs to the commune, but you will not find such a commune anywhere in the world -- now, or in the whole history of man.

No ashram with five thousand people has ever been there living in centrally air-conditioned. This is the only city which is completely air-conditioned in the whole world. And my people are eating the best food possible. Enjoying their life in different ways. It depends on them.

Q:* IT'S SAID YOU ARE THE GURU FOR THE RICH.

A:* Yes, I am.

Q:* BUT HOW DO YOU COMBINE YOUR OWN LEVELS OF COMFORT AT EVERY POINT... WITH THE PRINCIPLES OF COMMUNITY LIVING WHICH YOUR OWN PEOPLE FOLLOW?

A:* My people have every facility available. We have the Italian restaurant, we have the Chinese restaurant, we have the Indian restaurant. We have the continental food available. We have the American food available. All kinds of wines and champagnes, all kinds of cigars and cigarettes. Everything is available -- they have to choose and find.

Q:* THEY HAVE BASIC NORMS OF COMMUNITY LIVING WHICH THEY FOLLOW, WHICH MAY BE SELF-IMPOSED, OR STRUCTURED BY THE COMMUNE.

A:* Nobody is imposing anything... It is not even self-imposed. The very word imposed is not right.

Q:* HOW DO YOU COMBINE THIS HIGHLY INDIVIDUALISTIC PHILOSOPHY OF YOURS WITH THE GROUND RULES OF THE COMMUNE?

A:* There is no ground rules in the commune. It is a commune of individuals who are not in any way parts but members, living. And they have to live according to their own way. If they feel this is fitting to them -- good. If they feel this is not fitting to them -- good. If they feel this is not fitting to them, we have all kinds of work available.
For example, a doctor is tired with patients and hospitals and he becomes a sannyasin. We have a hospital, but he does not want to become a part of the hospital. He is fed up and finished. He wants to go farming: perfectly good, he does farming. And he enjoys it for the first time in his life. His whole life, he wanted to do farming.
There are professors....

Q:* THIS COULD BE EXTREMELY DANGEROUS IF A FARMER WANTED TO BE A DOCTOR...

A:* A farmer cannot be allowed to be a doctor. He will be sent to study medicine. Even the doctors who have come here from different countries are not allowed to practice unless they get Oregon certificate to practice. The farmer needs no certificate. It is not a qualified job. It is not something that is harmful to anybody.

Q:* BUT HE MUST KNOW THE LAND USE LAWS.

A:* That we are fighting and we are creating our own land use. And the way we have used the land, Oregonians have never used it.
For fifty years this land was just lying down barren, a desert. We have made it an oasis. They will have to change their ground rules for land use, because we are showing them how land should be used.
When I had come here there was only one house. And 126 miles of land -- just barren, dead, only few junipers. Junipers are known as camels of the trees, but they were also in a very poor, dying condition. Since we have come we have managed to make dams, we have collected rainwater enough that all the junipers have become big, thick, green.
We are making the whole city a green place, and those idiots are discussing in the courts about land use. They should come here and see how land has to be used. And they have much land in Oregon lying down like this. Otherwise, where can you find 126 square miles land so easily?
It was for sale for fifty years -- nobody purchased it. What they will do with a desert? We have changed it into a garden. Go on coming every year and you will be surprised that every year you will find expansion, more people, more trees, more birds.

There was not a single bird when we came here -- now there are peacocks, swans and -- because of the water -- deer from all other places have moved. We have thousands of deer now, and we are thinking to make a deer park especially for them. In fact, deer have never enjoyed such a luxurious life as they are enjoying here, because we have put the grass that they love most -- alfalfa. They are eating it too much that you will not find such fat deer anywhere in the world.

Q:* YOU WILL NOT FIND SUCH PROSPEROUS AND WELL-KEPT SANNYASINS ANYWHERE, FOR THAT MATTER.

A:* No, you will not. And these if you go in the night in the roads, they will be standing in the road, you will have to stop because they know my sannyasins don't harm anybody. So peacocks are there....
In my own garden there are one hundred peacocks, and they won't give me way to drive. They are standing just there in front of me....

Q:* I WAS ACTUALLY PREVENTED FROM SEEING YOUR HOUSE.

A:* You will be prevented, but not by peacocks! For that we have sannyasins.
But those peacocks or those deer, they have understood one thing: that these people are nonviolent, not any way harmful. You can be with them without any fear.

Q:* THE OREGONIANS DON'T THINK SO....

A:* Oregonians are far retarded than the deer.

Q:* THEN WHY THE SUB-MACHINE GUNS?

A:* For the Oregonians who are retarded, because they will understand only the machine guns, no other language. It is not for the deer. No bird, no animal is being killed here. In Oregon there are every year ten years* freedom from the government to kill deer. All over the state deer are killed. This is the only place we have stopped... that no deer can be killed here, and if anybody kills a deer on this land he will be in trouble.
Those guns have never been used yet, and I don't think they will be ever used. Those retarded Oregonians are so afraid, they don't come near. And we don't have long-distance guns. But if it is needed, we will have them.
We are nonviolent. We don't want to do any harm to anybody, but we are not Gandhians, that if you do harm to us, we will give you the other cheek. We are not Christians.
We respect you so much that if you hit, you will get a bigger hit. We respect your dignity, your individuality, your humanity. Christ's statement that when

somebody hits you on one cheek give him the other cheek is a humiliation of the other man. You are reducing the other man into an animal, sub-human species. You are becoming holier-than-thou.
Just by giving one cheek.... What about if he wants to hit you third time? What cheek you are going to give? We don't give another cheek -- if somebody hits on our cheek, we will hit on both of his cheeks together, simultaneously. We respect people. We respect their humanity. We don't want to prove that we are holier than you. We are just as human as you are.
The hostility in the Oregonians is perfectly good for us. One thing: they don't come here -- no disturbance. That's what I wanted, for all sides fifty miles around we are completely isolated, doing our thing without any interference, without any trouble....

Q:* WHAT IS THAT "OUR THING?"

A:* Many things.... People are meditating. In India it was a trouble. Others were getting disturbed because my meditations are one hundred twelve methods in which few methods are chaotic, dynamic, active. The people have to throw out all their screams, shout, throw out their anger, dance, jump, jog. Naturally the neighbors will be disturbed in the early morning, and every day the police were there that neighbors are complaining. So I told my people we have to find a place where no neighbors are.
One thing certain, the police is ours, so there is no problem.

Q:* THAT CAN BE VERY DANGEROUS.

A:* No. Not dangerous at all. The police belongs to the state government. They are part of the police government of the state, they have been trained by the state, but they are sannyasins and they know what you are doing -- you are not disturbing anybody. And we have such a vast land that you can go on doing in one corner and nobody will know.
We have a nature institute which allows people to live naked. They have a special lake for themselves. They can live naked, walk naked in the forest. Nobody is interfering. Even if you move naked in the streets of the city, nobody is going even to look back, what is the matter. It is your thing. That's your thing.

Q:* IT'S A SAD COMMENT IF AN ATTRACTIVE PERSON IS WALKING NAKED AND NO ONE LOOKS AROUND.

A:* Because everybody has his own freedom, even looking around is an interference. More than three seconds -- that's what psychologists have come to the conclusion -- more than three seconds if you look at a man, that is interference.

Q:* WELL, I'VE BEEN LOOKING AT YOU FOR ABOUT FIFTEEN MINUTES ALREADY.

A:* You have been doing immense interference. But, it is perfectly okay with me because you at least blink. I don't blink. You should see that. That blinking, I don't blink.... When I am talking, I forget blinking.
But everybody is free to do his thing. If somebody wants to hug somebody on the street -- in India it was a problem. Unnecessary, that somebody is hugging -- it should be nobody's business. If you don't want to see, don't see. Just turn your back and go away, or close your eyes.
Here, we are having absolute freedom. If people want to hug each other -- and it is a beautiful experience to hug each other....

Q:* BUT HERE YOU HAVE TOTAL FREEDOM TO HUG EACH OTHER, YOU ALSO GIVE TOTAL FREEDOM TO HIT EACH OTHER. AND THAT COULD BE DANGEROUS....

A:* No. When people hug each other, nobody wants to hit each other; when people are prevented from hugging, then the only way to touch the other is by hitting. There is a basic psychology involved in it. Sigmund Freud said that people have invented guns, arrows, because they were prevented to hug each other, to love each other.
Love is really a man trying to enter the woman. Now if that is prevented, the man will try to enter from a distance with a gun. That gun is phallic, according to Freud, and all other psychologists agree with him: that if you allow people total freedom of love, violence will disappear. Gandhi and people like him are responsible for violence in the world.
In Gandhi's ashram, nobody could fall in love with any woman. There was great discipline that no woman meets in secrecy with any man. His own secretary Karilal* could not follow this discipline. His own sons could not follow this discipline. The discipline is stupid.
But when you prevent people from loving, then their very energy of love becomes hate. Hate is not different from love, it is love standing on its head, doing sirshasan*.

Q:* IN OTHER WORDS, YOU BELIEVE THAT IF HITLER HAD A JEWISH GIRLFRIEND TO MAKE LOVE TO, HE WOULDN'T HAVE COMMITTED VIOLENCE ON THE JEWISH POPULATION?

A:* Certainly. Hitler was rejected from everywhere. His parents rejected him, he was never given love by his parents. He was continuously condemned. He wanted to become an architect; no school of architecture allowed him. Then

finally he became a soldier. Now there is no way to avoid the fact that the man was basically interested in art, in architecture, but being denied from everywhere, only army was the place where he was accepted.
And even from the army -- after the first world war -- he was thrown out. He was one of the most rejected persons in the world, and he took good revenge -- he did well.

Q:* WHAT DO YOU MEAN HE DID WELL? YOU WOULD SUPPORT WHAT HE DID?

A:* It means he has given you a lesson that: love people, respect people, a person should not be rejected so much that he becomes simply a maniac. That's what you made Adolf Hitler....
Adolf Hitlers will be born again and again if we cannot allow people freedom of love, warmth, dignity, respect -- just for being themselves. We respect people if somebody reaches on the Everest -- some Edmund Hillary*, then we respect him. If somebody invents something, we respect him. If somebody is a painter like Picasso, we respect him, but we don't respect people just for being themselves.
Everybody cannot be a Picasso and everybody need not go to the Everest, and it will be silly. We have to respect people as they are without any demands on them.

Q:* BUT YOU DON'T EITHER -- YOU ATTACKED MOTHER TERESA RECENTLY.

A:* I attack Mother Teresa because she is doing so much harm to humanity. These are the people -- Mother Teresa is only symbolic, I call her Mother Teresa the Terrible. These people, Teresa, or Polack the Pope, or Jesus Christ, or Mahatma Gandhi, all these people in a very subtle way.... I never suspect their intentions, their intentions may be good, but their actions are dangerous: these are the people who are keeping the world poor.
Jesus says, "Blessed are the poor." Now this is something absolutely wrong. The poor are not the blessed, they are the cursed! -- the condemned. But he consoles them by saying that you are blessed.

Q:* BUT YOU ARE SELECTIVELY USING THAT VERSE. THE FULL VERSE IS: BLESSED ARE THE POOR FOR THEY SHALL INHERIT THE EARTH. SO THOSE WHO INHERIT THE EARTH CAN NEVER BE POOR, SO HE WAS USING THE WORD POOR PURELY METAPHORICALLY.

A:* Just wait a minute.... Just wait a minute, you are quoting wrongly. I was quoting rightly: blessed are the poor for they shall inherit the kingdom of God, not earth.

Q:* THERE ARE TWO VERSIONS -- THE KING JAMES VERSION SAYS THE EARTH.

A:* There are not two versions!

Q:* THE KINGS JAMES VERSION SAYS THE EARTH.

A:* It is the kingdom of God basically in Hebrew. Kingdom of the earth is already possessed by the rich, it is already inherited. Jesus can only promise something in far away future, after death. All religions have been playing that game of promising people things beyond death. There is no evidence of anything beyond death, whether poor enter into the paradise, or rich enter -- more probability is that rich will enter.

There is no possibility for poor in paradise if there is no possibility for them here on earth! And these people... Teresa collecting orphans, what she is doing? Creating more poverty in the world. She is against abortion, she is against birth control, she is against the pill. These are sins. Naturally, if these things are there, orphans will disappear, and with orphans disappearing, who is going to give Nobel prize to Mother Teresa?

I condemned her; she wrote a letter to me. In the letter she said, that "I will pray to God to forgive you."

Now the sentence looks perfectly nice, but not to me. It is nasty. I wrote her back, that "In the first place, I don't believe in any God, so who are you to pray to a God who does not exist? At least you should have asked me.

"Secondly, who are you to pray on my behalf? I have not given the authority to you, and I have not committed any sin that God should forgive me. If He meets me, He will have to ask forgiveness from me, because what He has done to the world is enough! All these Tamerlane, Genghis Khan, Nadirshah*, Alexander the Great, Ivan the Terrible, Adolf Hitler, Mussolini, Joseph Stalin -- who is responsible for all these people? Who is responsible for Ethiopia dying? Who is responsible for half the world being poor and on the verge of death? Who is responsible for nuclear weapons?

"If God is the creator, and if He is omnipotent, omniscient, He knows everything -- past, present, future -- He knows that there will be Hiroshima and Nagasaki. And even knowing that, He creates the world? He knows that there will be a nuclear war, and people are piling up nuclear weapons. Even the day he created the world he knew that one day there will be a nuclear war, and millions of people will suffer tremendous torture and death. And this is your God," I told her. She never replied. I again wrote her, that "You reply, because otherwise I am going to sue you in the court. Who can on my behalf -- without my permission -- ask my forgiveness from God?"

These people are simply trying to increase their number. All those orphans become Catholics; all those poor people, aboriginals, become Christians. The hospital, the schools, the food -- these are all strategies. Islam had the strategy of the sword. Christians have the strategy -- because the world has changed, ways have changed -- they come with bread and butter and one hand and Bible in another. Mohammedans used to come sword in one hand and Koran sarif* in another hand.
But it is the same -- just to purchase you. They are using people's poverty to make great numbers of Christians, because number has power. It is simply politics, nothing else; there is no religion in it. Just the pope before this polack who is now the pope, was a homosexual -- well-known over the whole Italy. And he was a bishop before becoming a pope, in Milan. And the whole Milan knew because he was continuously moving with a homosexual, a young man.

Q:* BUT THAT'S PURELY A SEXUAL PREFERENCE.

A:* That's what I am saying, that it is perversion, not preference.

Q:* YOU MEAN A MAN LIKE YOU WHO BELIEVES IN FREE SEX, YOU WOULD OBJECT TO PEOPLE EXERCISING A SEXUAL PREFERENCE?

A:* No, it is not a preference. Otherwise soon you will be making love to the camera, love to the electric pole. And please, don't disturb my junipers. It is not preference, it is unnatural. It is a religious contribution to humanity, this homosexuality.
It started in the monasteries where only men were living and no woman was allowed in. It started into nunneries where only women were living and no man was allowed. Naturally, man is intelligent enough to find some way.
All the monks have been either masturbators or homosexuals, but in some way they have to do something. Their biology you cannot change by just preaching. Their bodies won't listen to your Bible.

Q:* BUT YOU WERE A CELIBATE AT TWENTY-ONE. WHY CAN'T THEY BE?

A:* I have never been a celibate.

Q:* YOUR BIBLE SAYS THAT.

A:* I have never been a celibate. If people believe, that is their foolishness. I have always loved women, and perhaps more women than anybody else. You can see my beard. It has become grey so quickly because I have lived so intensely that I have compressed in fifty years almost two hundred years.

Q:* OF SEXUALITY?

A:* Yes. But I am not a homosexual. These people have been talking of celibacy and creating sexual perversion. And the sexual perversion has led to the disease AIDS, which can kill almost two-thirds of humanity. Who will be responsible for it?

Q:* WHERE DO YOU DRAW THE LINE BETWEEN SEXUAL PERVERSION AND SEXUAL EXPERIMENTATION?

A:* There is no sexual experimentation. Sex is a purely biological thing, absolutely determined by biology. For example, in the wild no animal is homosexual, but in a zoo if only male animals are there and no female is available, they turn into homosexuals. Your world is a zoo, not a wild place.
In a wild jungle, nobody, no animal ever turns into a homosexual.

Q:* SO WOULD YOU, LIKE ROUSSEAU, TALK IN TERMS OF GOING BACK TO NATURE, TO THE WILD?

A:* No. I am not saying back to nature, I am saying forward to nature. Not back -- back is not my vocabulary -- forward to nature. There are tremendous treasures hidden in nature which these perverted people have denied humanity to enjoy. I am against these people because what they are saying and what they are doing ultimately results into something like a curse.
All the religions have been preaching celibacy. And nobody has ever bothered whether celibacy is medically possible or not. Even Mahatma Gandhi at the age of seventy was having wet dreams in his night. And you cannot find a more sincere man trying more sincerely than he tried to be a celibate. For forty years, no success. And do you know in the end he started sleeping with a naked woman? But Gandhians don't talk about it.
Gandhians even approached Mahatma Gandhi, that please don't do it. Vinoba was one of them, Kalila* was another, Maulana Azad*, Kreplani*, all asked him, "Please don't do this experimentation" -- in your language. It was not experimentation; it was forty years of failure of celibacy.
And all these popes -- just two days before, one Christian minister has been jailed for one and a half years because he was using small children. That is experimentation. In the pulpit, in the church, he is talking about celibacy and inside the church he is abusing small children.
On father filed the case. He got for one and half years jail. How many others have come, because they were afraid to say anything against the religious leader. But now when he is in jail, many other children have said that the same he has been doing with them.

But this is not about one priest I am saying. All the priests have to do it! We are forcing them to do it. We respect their celibacy, and that respect is a bribe to remain celibate. And their biology does not know about your respectability -- their biology has its own laws and it follows its own laws.
The people who have been consoling the poor are the enemies of the poor. Poverty can be destroyed immediately. All that is needed is that nations should disappear -- only then wars can disappear.
And seventy-five percent of every nation's income is going into war efforts. Even America is doing eighty percent income pouring into nuclear weapons. Now if the whole world stops this nonsense, what is the need to be poor. We have so much energy, so much money, so much scientific intelligence.
But strange, in England, in Europe, in America, too, they are destroying food and Ethiopia is dying, and soon India will be in the same position. And if you see Rajiv Gandhi, tell him that he will be responsible for India's poverty and people dying there, because he is exporting wheat OUTSIDE India and his own people are on the verge of death -- half of the country. But he wants a nuclear plant. Tell him that this is not a child's games, and you don't understand anything about humanity. You better go and become a pilot again, that is your place. You don't understand and you don't need to be a prime minister of a country which is suffering from poverty and you are looking for creating a nuclear plant. For what?
Even if India puts every penny into creating nuclear weapons, it will take three hundred years for them to be equal in power to America or the Soviet Union. And do you think for three hundred years, America and Soviet Union will be staying where they are? It is stupid -- absolutely stupid -- for a country like India to think of nuclear weapons, atomic energy.
But they go on saying to the poor -- in India, all Indian religions: Buddhism, Hinduism, Jainism, all go on saying -- "It is your past life's bad actions, that's why you are poor." That's the reason -- because of these religions -- for five thousand years at least India has never revolted, suffered all kinds of poverty, slavery, accepted it, because the religious leaders were telling them that if you reward or if you do anything against it, you will have to suffer in the future life.
Let me tell you one thing: you will be surprised.... One of the Jaina great teachers in India is Acharya Tulsi -- it is a Jaina sect, Terapanth. He is the head of that community. Their basic philosophy is that if somebody is dying of thirst and you have water, don't give it to him because he is suffering from his past life's karmas. And giving him water means interfering into the punishment. He will be punished soon again. He cannot get rid of it, and by interfering, you have committed a crime; now you will suffer also.
If somebody is drowning, you simply go on walking. Let him drown -- it is his past life's actions, and you should not interfere in any way. For example, if you pull that man out of the water and tomorrow he murders somebody, you are also responsible in that murder. You see, the logic is great. If you have not saved that

man, the murder would not have happened. So in the next life you will also suffer because you saved that man and took part into murder.
If you teach people for thousands of years that it is your bad actions in past lives which create poverty, you are stopping them from revolting, you are stopping them from doing something to change their situation. You are telling them, "Just accept the situation in which you are." And that's how the East has accepted and remained poor.
And still you want me that I should not speak against these people -- Buddha, Mahavira? I have to speak. To me these are far bigger criminals than Adolf Hitler and Benito Mussolini, because those people have done very small harm. One million Jews Adolf Hitler killed, but how many poor people Mahavira has killed? And living in poverty is far more dangerous, far more suffering than dying in a beautifully, scientifically managed gas chamber in Germany. Within a second you are smoke, holy smoke, rather than suffering for millions of years.
No, I am against all these criminals. And I mean what I say.

Q:* DO YOU THINK THAT IF THE NATIONS OF THE WORLD DID NOT INVEST SUCH A LARGE PART OF THEIR MONEY, OF THEIR GROSS NATIONAL PRODUCT IN NUCLEAR ARSENALS, THEY WOULD HAVE USED IT MORE MEANINGFULLY? THEY WOULD HAVE FOUND SOME ALTERNATIVE MEANS OF CREATING A SITUATION OF TERROR IN THE WORLD?

A:* The question is whether they invest in nuclear weapons or into something else all depends on us, not on them.

Q:* IT IS BORN OUT OF THE DESIRE TO CONQUER, TO RULE.

A:* I understand, but now it is absolutely idiotic. Up to now it was meaningful to conquer. With the nuclear weapons you cannot conquer -- nobody is going to be victorious and nobody is going to be defeated. All are going to be finished. In that way, nuclear weapons have served great cause: now war is meaningless.

Q:* M.A.D. -- MUTUALLY ASSURED DESTRUCTION.

A:* Yes. So it is meaningless. They are not going for the third world war -- they will talk about it, talk about peace. They will play the games, and they will put small nations into fights and wars so they can sell their out-of-date weapons to them. But they are not going for a big war. Pakistan and India may go into a war, Bangladesh and India may go into a war, but Russia and America are not going into war because both are perfectly aware what it means. There is no victory.
War was meaningful, you are right, because it was conquering. Now with nuclear weapons, the whole situation changes. We can put this whole energy in

conquering new planets, going to the stars. We can conquer nature which is deteriorating, and we can put the nature back into its harmoniousness as it was always. We can feed people. We can create medical food, just pills. If you cannot grow more wheat, you can just swallow a pill and that will do.
The whole world has to be made aware in what a situation we have reached: that war is absolutely meaningless. So now no more pouring your energies into more nuclear weapons.

Q:* THEN WHY ARE YOU INVESTING IN MISSILE SILOS?

A:* I am investing only in toy guns. Those toy guns are enough to keep the Oregonians afraid. They don't do any harm, but just keeping them there, they remain far away.

Q:* THE RUMOR THAT YOU ARE SHIFTING TO AUSTRALIA, ARE THEY RIGHT? DO YOU HAVE ANY SUCH PLANS WHATSOEVER?

A:* No. I will be visiting.

Q:* WHEN IS THAT?

A:* That will depend. If America wants me to go out, to Australia.... Perhaps I may stay there forever. I have a beautiful commune there, on the sea beach. I may stay there. So there is a great opportunity for America to get rid of me. But first, my green card. With green card, I am not going out of America. I am going to fight up to Supreme Court.
They have six clauses -- six types of people to apply for American green card. I have applied on five. On each I will fight separately. One file will take twenty years to be finished by the time it reaches to the Supreme Court. On five grounds again I will start on the second ground. One hundred years, they cannot do anything to me. And the sixth clause is not difficult for me -- that is marriage. I can marry as many women as they want. But they cannot throw me out of America. If they are intelligent, they should immediately issue my green card, then perhaps I may never come back. If Australia is there... and I have my communes in beautiful places. In Holland we have purchased a great ancient Christian monastery.
And it was meant for Christian monks and a school for Christian children, beautiful gardens, three hundred people's accommodation. And we are renovating it. I may stay in Holland.
I may stay in Germany. In Germany we have twelve communes of the same size.
Germany is my country. Now the color red is no more connected with communists, it is connected with me. And we have sannyasins in the Soviet Union. We have sannyasins in other communist countries. We have sannyasins

in the East Germany. They are not only there, they want to make a commune. I am stopping them because if you make a commune and you come over-ground, you will be in difficulty. You remain underground. But they are so excited they want to make a commune in East Berlin. My sannyasins in Soviet Union are more excited than anywhere else.

Q:* HOW DO YOU STAY IN TOUCH WITH THEM? OR HOW DO THEY STAY IN TOUCH WITH YOU?

A:* That I cannot say to you. But I am in touch and they are in touch, and everything is going just groovy! Anything...?

Q:* IF RUMORS ARE TO BE BELIEVED, ON THE 5TH OF SEPTEMBER, YOU ARE STARTING A NEW PROGRAM WHICH WILL POSSIBLE HAVE SOMETHING TO DO WITH AIDS?

A:* That's only a rumor.

Q:* WHY IS THIS PARTICULAR AFFLICTION SO IMPORTANT THAT YOU KEEP TALKING ABOUT IT EVERYWHERE?

A:* Because it has no medicine, no cure.

Q:* NEITHER HAS CANCER.

A:* Cancer only of one type, but there are many types of cancer which have cure. They can be operated.
And the people who have cancer are not contagious. They will not spread the cancer all over the world. AIDS is a different phenomenon -- no cure. The person is sure to die within two years. The person can contaminate not only by sexual intercourse, but by kissing. If his saliva comes in contact to you, you can get it. Kissing is going to be prohibited. In my commune I have told people that you drop kissing completely. You learn the art of Eskimos who rub noses... which is far more hygienic, and no fear of any epidemic. At the most, cold, which is not a disease. If you don't take medicine, it goes away in seven days; if you take medicine, it goes away in one week.
I am concerned about AIDS, certainly, particularly for my people. My communes are creating every prohibition, precaution. Every sannyasin is going through tests.
We have found two sannyasins. For them we have made a beautiful... the most scenic place in the commune we have given to them. And we will take care of them, and they are respectable people, they need not hide it. They are simply victims of religions.

In the outside it is totally different. If somebody is found to have AIDS he will be just treated the way lepers used to be treated in the past. He will be no more a respectable citizen. In his own eyes he will fall down. He will not be allowed into restaurants. He may not be allowed to visit. Even his own family would not like him to live in the house.
So what is happening -- which is the most dangerous thing -- that people who have AIDS are hiding it. They are bribing physicians, doctors, and hiding it. I know absolutely certainly that one of the senators has AIDS. Now he has every power to hide it, and he will be continuously spreading it.
If it can spread even by kissing or by saliva... and there are few experts who are thinking that there is a possibility that if the disease becomes of enormous proportions, which it is becoming.... But governments are hiding, state governments are hiding, because nobody wants to accept the fact that your country is full of homosexuals -- because it is a homosexual disease.

Q:* BUT IT HAS SPREAD BEYOND THE GAYS.

A:* Yes, it has gone beyond now. It is not confined to only homosexuals, but it is created in homosexuality. Then it spreads. It can go to a woman; then from women it can go to another man who has never been homosexual. And there is no way....

Q:* BUT TO STOP KISSING IS LIKE SAYING THAT YOU DON'T SHAVE BECAUSE YOU MIGHT GET A NICK IN YOUR CHEEK WITH THE BLADE WHICH MIGHT GIVE YOU TETANUS.

A:* No, it is not that way. In fact, a man shaving his beard looks like a woman -- it is ugly. As far as women are concerned, they love beards. You can ask my women here. A man without a beard and a mustache is just half man. Just think of a woman with a mustache and beard -- looking like a SARDARJI*. That's what is happening to men. A stupid idea because men biologically feels attracted to the feminine physiology -- her face. He thinks that the woman's face is beautiful because it is without beard and without mustache. He is just a fool -- he does not know simple laws of nature. To a woman a man without a beard and mustache has no appeal. And you can see that all your prophets, all your messiahs... They had beards, and beautiful beards. And they influenced tremendously. Most of it will go to the beard.
It happened when Lincoln was standing for the presidentship in America, he had no beard, no mustache. He was a thin man, tall man, and ugly. While he was campaigning one small girl told him, "Uncle, if you grow a beard and a mustache you will look far more beautiful." And the idea got into his mind and he grew his beard and mustache. Now it is very difficult whether that played some part in his winning.

I am not saying that there are not exceptions. I am simply saying that it is not like a beard that out of fear you stop shaving -- because if that becomes the situation, then ninety-nine percent people die on the bed, so don't sleep on the bed! Just sleep on the floor.

Q:* THEN HOW DO YOU STOP KISSING? THAT'S EXACTLY WHAT I'M SAYING.

A:* No. Kissing is totally a different matter, because we can find better ways.

Q:* OF FOREPLAY? HARDLY ANY.

A:* Many! Because you don't know the feminine body. It is all erotic.

Q:* I'LL ASK YOU THOSE QUESTIONS SEPARATELY, PERHAPS!

A:* You can ask separately, but for this you have to remember that the woman's whole body is erotic. You can play it from anywhere. It is a strange musical instrument. Vatsyayana knew it five thousand years before when he wrote his sutras. He suggests that lovers should press each other's earlobes and that gives great joy. That seems very hygienic. And, in fact, there are tribes... Eskimos never kiss, they rub noses....

Q:* THEY DON'T KNOW WHAT THEY ARE MISSING....

A:* No. They know, because they see the missionaries and they think that these are fools. Even Eskimos think the missionaries are fools because they are transferring diseases to each other. It is not that they are unaware of kissing, they are perfectly aware. There are aboriginals in India, in Thailand and in other parts of the world where rubbing of the nose is the common practice, kissing is not.
And when something like AIDS is standing on your door, it is a small question of being intelligent to take precautions. And at least try once, and how you feel... you may enjoy it more than kissing. At least it is more fun -- something new and novel.

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #28
Chapter title: None
14 August 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This is a typed tape transcript and has not been edited or published, as of August 1992. It is for reference use only. The interviewer's remarks have been omitted where not relevant to Osho's words]
INTERVIEW WITH KEYI TV, EUGENE OREGON, TRACY BERRY,

Q: ABOUT THESE PRESS INTERVIEWS THAT YOU'VE BEEN DOING THE PAST FEW WEEKS: JOURNALISTS HAVE LEARNED A LOT ABOUT YOU FROM THESE SESSIONS. WHAT HAVE YOU LEARNED ABOUT SOME OF THE JOURNALISTS?

A: Nothing.

Q: WHERE DO YOU GO FROM HERE? YOU'VE CALLED YOURSELF THE WORLD'S GREATEST SHOWMAN. ARE YOU PLANNING TO PERHAPS TAKE YOUR SHOW ON THE ROAD?

A: No, the roads will come to Rome. All roads will be coming to Rajneeshpuram. I'm not going on any road.

Q: DOES THIS HERALD AN EXPANSION PHASE FOR RAJNEESHEES -- YOUR GOING SO PUBLIC?

A: They are increasing, and they are expanding all over the world.

Q: SPECIFICALLY, WHAT SORT OF EFFORTS ARE GOING ON?

A: The same that is happening here is happening around the world in all of my communes. People are trying to live in a new way.
The past of humanity has failed, utterly failed. It has not been able to create a better man, a better society. Civilization has only remained a word; it has not been yet actualized.
In my commune, you can see the beginnings of a new man. The commune is not a family. It is just the opposite -- dissolution of the family. Families are small units which have kept people confined -- their love confined, their respect confined.

A commune is coming into the open, out of your small circle of hypnotic conditioning. In the commune you are not a Hindu, nor a Christian, nor a Mohammedan. In the commune you are not a communist nor a fascist. The commune does not live according to any ideology -- political, or religious, or social. Each individual lives according to his freedom, according to his responsibility, according to his meditative consciousness. And the more a person meditates, goes deeper into himself, he starts living on the outside with new values which he had never known before: love, compassion, friendliness, joy, celebration -- and for no reason at all.

People celebrate when there is some reason to celebrate. We simply celebrate, because celebration in itself is a reason. There is no need for any other reason. It is enough unto itself.

Our people are free in every possible way. So we are dropping the old patterns of jealousy, competitiveness, politics. There is no politics, there is no competitiveness, there is no jealousy. If one lover moves to another lover, there is no antagonism. It is simply understood that it is human.

Many inhuman things have been imposed on man. For example, marriage is inhuman. It is forcing two people to live together for a future about which they know nothing.

Here, this moment is enough, and if the next moment also you find yourself loving each other -- good. And if you find that it is difficult, it has become nagging, it has become poisoned -- that you are no more interested in each other -- then to go on living is ugly. It together is wasting energy, the life of two people Both can move, and both can move before things become bad, before things go sour. When they are sweet, friendly, they can move with gratefulness for all those beautiful moments that they lived together.

Q: DO YOU FEEL THAT YOU HAVE A MORAL CODE? IS THERE A WRONG? IS THERE A RIGHT?

A: No. I don't have any moral code. All moral codes are inventions of different societies in different geographies in different situations, but there is no moral code which is universal.

So I don't teach any moral code, because what is moral today may become immoral tomorrow. What is immoral today may become moral tomorrow. So I don't teach a code that fixes people with the past. I give them insight to see, to be clear, to be aware, to be conscious so that they can find what is good, what is bad in each situation without any code.

My people are not living according to any code, any doctrine, any creed. They are living according to their consciousness. And the whole effort is, how to raise your consciousness higher and higher. So to me, there is only one morality and that is being a conscious being. And then act out of it. You cannot act wrongly.

Q: THE PERCEPTION OUTSIDE OF RAJNEESHPURAM IS THAT WHAT YOU'RE TEACHING AMOUNTS TO ANARCHY -- MAYBE A PLEASANT SORT OF ANARCHY.

A: That is absolutely wrong. Anarchy is a reaction against what the governments have done to man. It is not a revolution; it is simply a reaction. And by reactions you cannot live.
For example, the founder of anarchy, Prince Kropotkin, simply wants all the governments to be dissolved immediately. That is stupid, because the man is not capable to cope -- even with all the courts, all the police, all the army and the whole hierarchy of government. Man is criminal, man is murderer, man is rapist -- so a this is stupid idea to dissolve all the governments.
My idea is not for anarchy -- that is not my goal -- but to create better individuals. Finally, perhaps one day we will have so many conscious individuals on the earth that there is no need of any government. But I am not preaching anarchy.

Q: HOW DO YOU COUNSEL YOUR FOLLOWERS TO DEAL WITH THE LAWS OF THE LAND? FOR EXAMPLE, DO YOU URGE THEM TO PERFORM CIVIL DISOBEDIENCE WHERE THEY SEE IT NECESSARY?

A: No, We fight the government, the government agencies. And we follow their rules, because we are playing their game. And we can play the game better than they are playing. And in four year's time we have proved to them that how stupid they are. Laws are made by them, rules are made by them, but we can find loopholes in their laws and loopholes in their rules. And we are going to be here, and going to fight to the ultimate end.
So we are not against their laws. But their laws are made by mediocre politicians, and we have far more intelligent people to fight. We have the biggest law firm in the whole world -- four hundred legal experts continuously getting ready for more and more fight on more and more grounds.
And your governments -- state government, the federal government -- they are all doing many things illegally, against the Constitution. It is their Constitution, it is their law, but they are doing things against it, going against it.
We will be in favor of the Constitution and we will go against them. We will be in favor of the laws and prove to them that they are acting illegally. So our way of fighting is not to disobey. Our way is to prove that we are obeying the laws and you are disobeying your laws. And laws are yours, made by you, and you have committed so many stupidities in them that we are perfectly capable to fight with you.

Q: IT MUST BE DISAPPOINTING TO YOU TO HAVE MET WITH THE LEVEL OF REJECTION AND PERSECUTION.

A: No. In fact, it was perfectly expected. Any new idea has to be ready to accept the challenge of hostility, rejection, persecution. I would have been disappointed if they had ignored me. They could not ignore me.
And strange, it is a small commune, living in a desert trying to make the desert green, an oasis, and they are terrified. These people who are living, loving, dancing, singing -- what harm are these people going to do to them?
In four years' time we have not committed a single crime. In the commune not a single rape has happened. There is no prostitute in the commune. There is no murderer in the commune. There is no thief in the commune. The police in the commune are just sitting, doing nothing, because there is nothing.
We have the city magistrate, but in the court, in four years, nobody has been brought as a criminal. Against such peaceful, loving people the whole of Oregon is afraid. They must be just retarded people.

Q: IT ALSO SOUNDS, THOUGH, LIKE YOU'RE ENJOYING SOME OF THE COMMOTION YOU'RE CAUSING AROUND THE STATE.

A: Mm? I want -- because that gives us strength. Every challenge brings us strength. And we will go on creating more and more challenges. We will not let them sleep peacefully. We sleep peacefully -- we have no trouble.

Q: HAS THE FUROR THROUGHOUT OREGON AND THE U.S. CONTRIBUTED AT ALL TO THIS CYNICISM?

A: The U.S. has nothing to give to me. In fact, in that way I am disappointed. I was thinking that America must be more intelligent than any other country, less prejudiced than any other country -- really democratic -- but being here for four years what I have found is that democracy is just in the name. Behind the democracy everything undemocratic is going on.
Our own experience is a proof of it. I have not found that America is really a country where individuals are respected, freedom of speech is respected. It is only talked about. And I don't see any sense of humor -- not at all.
They have been taking us so seriously -- and we are taking them so nonseriously; but they cannot understand. We are all the time joking, but they cannot understand simple jokes. They are having secret meetings -- the governor, the attorney general, and they did not allow -- they were discussing us and they did not allow any one of our representatives to be there. If you are discussing us -- at least it is simple courtesy that at least one person from our side should be there and you should listen to what we have to say. They did not allow... they did not allow any journalist either. The governor said, "After our secret meeting I will talk to you and inform you." And whatever he informed us about was simply lies

and nothing else because we have found the confidential file which says just the opposite.
What he had said to the people, to the journalists, to the media -- he was saying that everything is under control and we are pacifying people, there is no problem to be worried, the heat is cooling down.
And in the secret report that they prepared inside they are alerting the army to remain ready. Any moment, if they are ordered, they have to reach Rajneeshpuram in three hours.
Now, what kind of people are these? And what is the need of bringing the army here? We are not a nation, that you have to attack us? And they are lying to the media that things are getting settled and there is no problem. If there is no problem, then why is the army given the alert? And why have you given them a time, that within three hours you have to reach Rajneeshpuram?
So these people, I don't think, have any sense of humor. They are just dodos.

Q: WHO DO YOU FEEL HAS TREATED YOU FAIRLY SINCE YOU'VE COME TO THIS COUNTRY? I CAN'T BELIEVE THAT EVERYONE HERE HAS BEEN AGAINST YOU.

A: Not everyone. Most of the journalists have been very fair, very loving. And those are the only people I have come in contact with from the outside world. And they have been intelligent and they could understand what I am saying and they could understand the sense of humor.
All the journalists who have come here, except one or two, have enjoyed the place, loved the place, wanted to come again and again.

Q: DID YOU PLAN TO MAYBE GO OUT AND SPEAK TO PEOPLE?

A: No...

Q: IF YOU WENT OUT AND MET OREGON AND TALKED TO THE PEOPLE, AND THEY FOUND OUT YOU WEREN'T THIS HORRIBLE MONSTER, IN THE MIDDLE OF A BUNCH OF RED-ROBED FOLLOWERS, IT WOULD BE EASIER THAT WAY?

A: No, it would not be, because I have been for thirty years in India, moving around the country; no, it is not so. Shoes have been thrown at me; stones have been thrown at me. I am speaking and in the crowd a band is playing so nobody can hear what I am saying.
Poison has been given me twice, to kill. And the last thing before I left was an attempt on my life.

So I know... and I have had enough of it, so I want to be here; if anybody is thirsty, he can come. If he wants to think me a monster, so far so good. That will give him good nightmares.

Q: WELL, LET'S SAY, I'M THE AVERAGE PERSON IN EUGENE OR PORTLAND, I HAVEN'T SEEN ANYTHING EXCEPT WHAT'S ON THE NEWS OR IN THE PAPER, DOES THAT MEAN THAT I HAVE TO DRIVE TO RAJNEESHPURAM TO FIND OUT OR HOW WOULD I GET.

A: That's the only way. You have to come. And it is such an experiment that there is no other way, you have to come here and be here and meet people and see with your own eyes what is happening.
And it is open. It is not like Soviet Russia, that you can not enter here, that you cannot meet people, that you cannot remain for a few days as our guest. And you can move freely, nobody is preventing you. That's the only way.
And we have our communes all over the world. So if Germans wants to know about us, in Germany we have twelve communes. If Holland wants to know us, we have our communes there. On the same pattern, the same way of life, the same approach towards life, we have places in Australia, in India. We are opening in Japan, and soon we'll be all over the world. Small oases, so whoever wants to know about us has to travel and visit our communes.

Q: THE RUMORS THAT PERHAPS YOU MIGHT BE MOVING TO AUSTRALIA... AND YET, I SEE A LOT OF EXPANSION GOING ON HERE, WHAT IS THE REAL STORY?

A: I was just joking. Because Australia seems to be so much afraid of me. Only Sheela has been there, my secretary, and she has created so much turmoil there, that they are getting very much afraid that I may be coming, so I told the journalist that yes, I am coming; tell them get ready. But I am not going anywhere. I am going to be here and fight the American idiots who are destroying democracy and all human values for which America stands. It is a very strange situation. I, I am fighting for the American Constitution, American values, against the Americans. But this will expose America to the whole world. That is their fear. And I'm not going anywhere.

Q: QUESTION ON THE JOKING: YOU'VE RATTLED SO MANY PEOPLE'S CAGES BY SAYING, "OH, WELL MAYBE I'LL GO TO AUSTRALIA." OR OH, YES, I WANT TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD."

A: Yes.

Q: DO YOU AND SHEELA SIT DOWN AND SAY, "OK, LET'S FRIGHTEN AUSTRALIA THIS WEEK," OR IS IT...

A: No, it is spontaneous. There is no need. Because we are absolutely nonserious about it. In Joke, everything is allowed. There is no problem.

Q: THE CONSTITUTION OFFERS FREEDOM OF RELIGION. IT SEEMS THAT WHAT YOU ARE OFFERING IS FREEDOM FROM RELIGION.

A: Certainly

Q: SO, HOW DO YOU COUNSEL PEOPLE TO PURSUE THAT? IS FREEDOM FROM RELIGION POSSIBLE?

A: It is possible, and should be made possible, because religion has dominated people, exploited people, kept poverty in the world. Religion has committed so many crimes that it is time we should be finished with it... Jesus says, "Blessed are the poor." The same is the tone of Buddha, the same is the preaching if Mahavira.
They all are consoling the poor people that you will inherit the kingdom of God. Marx was right only on one point in his all writings: that religion has been the opium of the people. And I agree with him only on that point. It has been the opium! They have drugged people to remain poor... Even in a country like America which has all riches -- the richest country -- there are thirty million people suffering from poverty. Thirty million people are suffering from poverty, and Ronald Regan goes on piling up on nuclear weapons. And there is no point in having more nuclear weapons, because both Soviet Russia and America combined have enough nuclear weapons to destroy humanity seven hundred times. So what is the point now? Nuclear weapons have made war absolutely obsolete. It is meaningless. The whole meaning of war is to win. Now there will be no winner and nobody defeated. The whole of life will be finished. So now war is against life and in favor of death. It is not a question if American democracy or Russian communism, it is a question of whether life has to exist on the earth or not. Thirty million people in your own country are starving on the streets, and you are preparing for war. And you are already equipped too much. But the politicians are not interested; in fact they want poor people because they can always be purchased. The religious people want poor people because they can be easily converted. That is what Christianity is doing all over the world. Islam used to do it -- in one hand the sword, in the other hand the Koran. You can choose: either the Koran, or the sword will behead you. Christianity has changed its techniques. In the one hand the Bible, in the other bread and butter. A little bit nicer, but the inner game is the same.

In India, I tried to find out whether any rich person has ever been converted to Christianity: I could not find a single case. Those who are converted to Christianity are orphans, beggars, poor people, starving people. Now, naturally the catholic pope and his bishops and the whole army of their priests would like that abortion should not be legal, because if it becomes legal, Catholics will be less in number -- where are they going to find orphans. Birth control should not be allowed, it is against God; population should be allowed to grow as people become more and more poor. And that means more customers for Christianity.

Q: MANY PEOPLE BECOME RELIGIOUS BECAUSE THEY WANT TO BE TOLD WHAT TO DO WITH THEIR LIVES. THEY NEED A CHURCH TO MAKE DECISIONS FOR THEM. AND IF THAT IS TRUE, HOW COULD THESE RELIGIONS EVER BE ABOLISHED WHEN IT IS THOSE PEOPLE WHO ARE SUPPORTING THEM?

A: In fact, this is a very vicious circle. Religions teach every child as the child is born, immediately religions catch hold if it -- either Hindu or Mohammedan or Christian. And they start making him feel that he is not capable of deciding for himself, that he has to depend on those who know. That he has to listen to the parents, that he has to listen to teachers, that he has to listen to the priest. They make children slowly dependent, and those children lose their sense of strength, their being, and then naturally they want on everything to be advised and commanded, to be ordered. They can function only if they are ordered. If they are nit ordered, they are in confusion. They are always in search of a father figure. It is not strange that they call the Christian priest father: It is not strange that God is called the father. There is simple psychology behind it. They need a father figure; but I am saying it is a vicious circle. Religions create it and then they say people need guidance. Nobody needs guidance. I have people here -- five thousand people are here, one million sannyasins are around the earth -- none if them needs any guidance. None of them is dependent on anybody else. If one million people can depend on themselves and take the sole responsibility for themselves, because I am not their father -- I as not even their uncle! And I Am not their leader; because I cannot humiliate a person by forcing him to follow me. I am just a friend, not more than that. I can talk to these people. It is up to them to decide for or against. I am not asking them to believe in me. And all the religions have done that; that's why they are called faiths. I am against faith. My whole approach is unless you know it, never believe anything. And the beauty us that when you know, there is no need to believe -- you know it. Belief is always for the ignorant. Faith is always for those who are not courageous enough to enquire. I teach doubt; I teach skepticism; I teach enquiry. And a person has to remain in the state of not knowing until he comes to know. Belief covers his ignorance. You do not know about God, you do not know about what happens after death. Naturally, you start believing in somebody who pretends to know.

Neither your popes know about it; nor Jesus Christ knew about it. Even on the cross, he shouted toward the sky: "God have You forsaken me?" He was a believer -- just illiterate, uneducated. And the people who were following him were also of the same grade, third rate. Those third-rate people became apostles of Christianity -- carpenters, woodcutters, fishermen. Not a single rabbi was a follower of Jesus Christ, and the whole Judea was full of learned rabbis. What does it show? It simply show that Jesus appeal is only for the very ignorant, and those ignorant people want to cover their ignorance, they are ready to believe. You will find totally different kind of people around me. You will not find ignorant people, you will not find illiterate people; you will find people who are almost all graduates from universities, have master's degrees, have Ph. D.s, D.Litts. Most of them are highly qualified professionals: psychologists, professors, doctors. You cannot enforce these people to believe. They have come to me because everywhere they are being indoctrinated and their intelligence was in rebellion. Here they have found a place where no indoctrination is happening. I don't have any doctrine to teach; I don't have any program to give. I only deprogram people and leave them to themselves. Now find you way, be courageous and go into the unknown.

Q: HERE IN RAJNEESHPURAM THEY'VE MADE THE DESERT FLOWER. THERE ARE SOME PARALLELS WITH THE MORMONS SETTLING IN UTAH, THE JEWS IN ISRAEL; AND THE ONLY THING THAT REALLY SEPARATES ORGANIZED RELIGIONS FROM CULTS, IS JUST TIME AND MONEY AND EFFORT. DO YOU SEE SIMILARITIES BETWEEN THE RAJNEESHEES AND...?

A: No! How many Rolls Royces do the Mormons have? (Laughter) In a five thousand member community we have ninety Rolls Royces, hundreds of other cars, one hundred buses, five planes, the city centrally air-conditioned. Why these people can...?

Q: WELL, YOU HAVE ROLLS ROYCES, THEY HAD WIVES.

A: They cannot have many more wives that we can have. We can defeat anybody. And just look at my commune women. You will not find more juicy women anywhere else. They are just gorgeous!

Q: THE PRECAUTIONS THE COMMUNE HAS TAKEN AGAINST AIDS IS PROBABLY ONE OF THE FOREMOST EFFORTS WORLD-WIDE TO FIGHT THE DISEASE. HOW DID YOU FIRST BECOME AWARE OF IT AND RECOGNIZE THE SERIOUS NATURE OF THAT ILLNESS?

A: I have a medical center here. We have the best doctors possible -- from all over the world, not only from Oregon -- we have FRCS from England, and they are

continuously watching about everything, so that our commune can be protected from any kind of attack. And AIDS is going to be the most tremendous disease that man has ever seen. So it is their research on it, and if they feel there is something I should know they inform me.
And soon we are going to do something about it. We will be the first in the whole world to do something; right now what is being done is that every government is trying to suppress the information about it, because no government want the world to know how many AIDS patients they have. The Oregon government has made such a test that ninety percent of AIDS patients will pass through it. This is simply criminal, because those ninety people that you have passed and cleared will be spreading the disease; and the disease is such that even by kissing you can give it to another person. It is not necessary that you should make some sexual contact -- just by kissing. Saliva is the carrier. I have told my people to stop kissing, instead of it, rubbing your noses against each other and enjoy it. And, in fact, these are people -- Eskimos do it already. They are five thousand years backwards, but as far as AIDS is concerned, they are far more superior than us. It is not that they don't know about kissing -- they have seen missionaries kissing, and they laugh at it that what kind of dirty people are these? Because kissing is simply laughed at. They have their ways -- and man is no inventive -- they rub noses, they rub each others' ear lobes. And these are all erotic points, and the women is so erotic her whole body is erotic. There is no need to put her in danger. In India, you will be surprised to know that the ordinary posture of making love -- man on top of woman -- is known as "missionary posture," because it was the first Christian missionaries who were seen in that posture. Otherwise in India it was insulting. A woman who is softer, more fragile, and a huge animal is doing push ups on the poor woman.

Q: THERE WERE THOSE CHARGES FILED SEVERAL MONTHS AGO REGARDING YOUR CHILDREARING TACTICS HERE IN THE COMMUNE. COULD YOU JUST BRIEFLY DEAL WITH THAT ISSUE?

A: That is absolutely wrong, and the court has completely cleaned us. The charges were invalid. And now we are going to sue the woman who had put the case for child abuse. She has never been here; she know nothing about what is happening here to the children -- and she puts a case against us. And now she is defeated. This is insulting and disgusting. There is no abuse. Our children are the ones who cannot be abused. In the outside world, children can be abused, are abused. Here it is impossible because we are giving them all the information about sex -- not in a roundabout way. We are giving them actual facts -- that these are the facts of sex and these are the effects of sex, and until you are sexually mature don't get involved in any relationship which will destroy your whole life, may make you retarded, may make you perverted. And when you are of age, the medical center provides every contraceptive, pills. We don't prevent

them, but first let them be ready. If a boy is fourteen and has the energy now to make love -- he has the greatest power to make love between fourteen and twenty-one, and that is the time which is wasted in universities. After that, he is on decline. By the time he gets married after his Ph. D, he will be twenty-eight, twenty-seven; he has already declined. By thirty-five he is becoming older, he loses interest, he make love but he is a spent cartridge.

Q: I PEERED THROUGH THE WINDOW AND WATCHED AS YOUR CAR ARRIVED, AND YOU DANCED WITH YOUR SANNYASINS. WHEN YOU LOOK INTO THEIR EYES, WHAT DO YOU SEE ON THEIR FACES?

A: Just love and nothing else. Great love and great gratitude. I don't think anybody has been loved so much as I have been loved. Jesus has only twelve disciples -- I have one million; and out of one million, ninety percent are women. So it is really groovey.

Q: ARE YOU AFRAID OF DEATH?

A: Death it not the end of life, it is the culmination of life. It is one of the most beautiful experiences. If you have really loved then only will you experience the beauty of death; if you missed life itself in listening to the sermons in the churches, in reading the Bible, and all kinds of nonsense... if you have missed life itself, you will die in a coma. Before death comes you will become unconscious, so you will miss the experience of death. The people who are living consciously -- and that is my basic teaching, live consciously every moment. Even while making love, remain conscious and a witness. It is a life... long growth if becoming alert. Then you can die consciously and you can experience death as the ultimate orgasm. It is far bigger than any sexual orgasm. In fact, the difference is not only of quantity, the difference is of quality. It is immeasurable. Living moment to moment, one learns how to die. beautifully, silently, joyously. One is going on another adventure. Unknown -- I don't give them any ideas what is going to happen after death, because that is absolutely wrong, destroying. it is like if I loved a movie and I tell you the whole story of the movie, and then tell you that I have brought a ticket for you, go and see. I have destroyed it already; what is the point of seeing it? I give them the ticket, but I don't tell them what is going to happen. That they have to discover on their own. It is tremendously beautiful because I have lived before and I have died before, and I have died consciously so I know what beauty it is. It is not the end; it is always a new beginning.
In existence nothing dies -- it cannot. You cannot destroy even a small pebble. You can grind it, but it will be there. Now in powder form. You can throw the powder into the ocean. It will be there, resting somewhere in the bottom of the ocean, but now it is an accepted scientific truth that nothing can be destroyed,

you can only change its form. And if this is so about matter, what to say about consciousness? -- Which is the highest evolution on the earth. Existence cannot be so stupid, so unintelligent to destroy consciousness -- it does not destroy even stones, how it can destroy your soul? But I don't say to anybody believe in me. I say experiment; and right now you are alive, so don't bother about death. When it comes, it comes. Right now you experiment with life, and be ready: death can come any moment. And particularly in these days where politicians are preparing to destroy the whole humanity, and religions have contributed their contribution through AIDS. That will destroy if politicians cannot, then AIDS will destroy humanity. So we are really living without any tomorrow. Always man has lived without tomorrow, but never with such a crisis. And I say AIDS is a religious disease because its beginning is in homosexuality, and homosexuality was born in monasteries of religions because there they segregated men and women and they did not allow men and women to meet. No women can enter in a monastery where only men live; neither men can go into the nunnery. You are creating the situation for homosexuality. Religions have been teaching for celibacy -- which creates perversions because it is unnatural. It is just as if somebody says to you that unless you stop urinating you will not enter into the kingdom of God. That is just nonsense! But you can find a few idiots who will start making an effort, because if this is the price, they are ready to do it. But what they will do -- they will pretend, they will be hypocrites, and they will find perverted ways from the back door. You cannot go against nature: celibacy is against nature. And all the religions have been preaching celibacy. They are responsible for AIDS. So today the situation is really more dangerous than it has ever been. Tomorrow is more uncertain than it has ever been. So live today with intensity, with totality, with as much consciousness as possible. And I have here one hundred and twelve methods how to increase your consciousness. So if death comes tomorrow, there is no problem -- there will be only my people dying joyously with a smile on their face.

Q: AT YOUR NEWS CONFERENCE A COUPLE WEEKS AGO, YOU INVITED SOMEONE TO ASSASSINATE YOU. IS IT A JOKE? IS IT FEAR OF DEATH BY NATURAL CAUSES, OR IS IT JUST BECAUSE THAT WOULD BE LOGICAL WAY YOU COULD SEE THE END OF YOUR LIFE?

A: Most probably, that will be the logical end of my life. It is a serious joke. And I would prefer it that way, rather than dying on the bed. Ninety-nine percent of people do that. I don't want to belong to that crowd! I would rather like to be assassinated than to die on my bed. And to me there is no problem. I have experienced life. I have tasted all its joys. There is nothing that I have missed. If death come this moment, I will not ask even one more moment to complete my sentence. It is perfectly Okay. In existence, nothing is ever completed. Only in novels, stories begin and end. In life there is no beginning and there is no end.

Abruptly things start and abruptly things finish. There is no preface, there is no appendix, there are no footnotes, nothing. It is always in the middle that the story begins. When I used to read -- for five years I have not been reading anything -- but I loved reading so much that I have to find out ways to make the book more interesting. I would begin in the middle, then go to the end, then come to the beginning. And that was more hilarious, gave more suspense. Life is really hilarious. Just you have to know how to love it. We don't have any God, we don't have any heaven and hell. We have only this moment, so we can pour all our energies into it. And we are doing that. We are celebrating and enjoying and loving and laughing and dancing. In fact, that is what creates hostility toward me. The poor is hostile toward the rich; the sad people are hostile towards those who can laugh and love and dance. The whole world lives in such misery and suffering that they cannot tolerate me. My existence and my people's existence proves them wrong -- and I am not a person just to argue. I give existential argument: my commune is an existential argument to the whole world that you also could have loved and danced and sung and enjoyed, but you have chosen wrong paths, so you go to church, you go to the synagogue. My people don't go there. There is no need for them to anywhere. They don't pray. They are not beggars. And to whom to pray? There is nobody in the sky to pray to. My people meditate. They sit silently doing nothing, they enter into their own silence, enjoy it. The more you enjoy it the deeper and deeper you enter into it. There come a point where you are exactly at your center of being. And that's what I call enlightenment: a great explosion of luminosity, clarity. All questions disappearing, all doubts dissolved, you have found the answer. The answer is within you -- nobody can supply it. And all these prophets and messiahs have been doing just that: they are suppling you the answer. And borrowed answer is not going to help. Those borrowed answers have made the whole humanity miserable. They have taken their enquiry, they have taken everything away from the people and left them utterly poor. My people are multidimensionally rich.

Q:SO WHAT HAPPENS TO THEM? YEARS FROM NOW WHEN YOU DIE, WHAT HAPPENS TO THE RAJNEESHEES?

A: They will celebrate my death.

Q: AND THEN GO TO THE FOUR WINDS, OR STAY TOGETHER...?

A: That is for them to decide what to do. I am not to decide. Remember, that is the strategy of a politician: he want to even control people after his death. The religious leaders declare their successors, but what is the point in it? The point is dead over-ruling the living... When I am gone, I am gone. And it is a double thing to be understood: when I am gone, I am gone to you -- you are gone to me. I will be doing whatsoever I want to do; you should do whatsoever you want to

do. Nobody has to control. You cannot control me when I am dead. You cannot tell me what I should do after death. Neither will I say to anybody. I have made you love life, relish every moment. You know the secret. You will not miss me; you don't need any successor. You are my successor -- everyone individually. If you still decide to remain together -- good; if you want to go separate on your own ways, that is even better. But I am not going to dominate you, either alive or dead. To dominate anybody in any way is criminal.

Q: WHAT WILL RAJNEESHPURAM LOOK LIKE IN TEN YEARS? OR WHAT DO YOU WANT IT TO LOOK LIKE IN TEN YEARS?

A: Nothing -- I never think about the future. Future is not my concern at all. To me, time is only now, and space is only here: beyond that I have no concern. While I am here, I love my people making a desert into an oasis. When I am gone, these people will be here. These are intelligent people, they don't need any instructions. Even now I am not giving them any instructions. They can understand. They know that I love greenery, so they started planting as manu trees possible. They know I love water, so they have made dams, lakes. They love me -- from my shoes up to my hat they make everything for me. I never think about the future. That's why my life is without any tensions -- I never think about the past, so I am not burdened with the past. I never imagine about the future, so I'm not worried about the future. And today is enough unto itself. I enjoy it. When I go to bed, I thank the whole existence that it has been beautiful today, and if by chance I wake up again, we will see.

Q: YOU MADE THE COMMENT THAT THERE CAN NEVER BE PEACE BETWEEN OREGONIANS AND RAJNEESHEES. WHY IS THAT? DO YOU NOT WANT PEACE?

A: I always love peace, but what I had said actually has been misunderstood and it was bound to be because the question was asked, it was not about peace, it was about coexistence. And I said: "Never." Because coexistence is an ugly word, political; it means you are you are an enemy, I am hostile, I am an enemy, but what to do -- we have to live. I am here, you are here, and we have to live somehow, so some compromise is needed. That is coexistence. I don't believe in coexistence. Either I will turn Oregon red, or they are free to turn us into Oregonians. That is peace, not coexistence: One existence. Till that happens, the fight will continue.

Q: WHAT IF OREGONIANS DECIDED JUST TO LEAVE RAJNEESHEES ALONE?

A: I don't think everybody can leave Rajneeshees to live alone we won't allow that!

Q: THE MOST OPEN WOUND IN THE STATE WAS WHEN THE RAJNEESHEES WON THE ELECTION IN WHAT WAS THEN ANTELOPE. ALTHOUGH IT WAS LEGAL, PEOPLE FELT IT WAS A TAKE-OVER. IS THERE ANY CHANCE THE RAJNEESHEES WOULD EVER PULL OUT OF THE CITY OF RAJNEESH?

A: There is no way, because they are absolutely wrong and we cannot compromise with anything wrong. It is simple democratic process that sannyasins are the majority, and whoever is the majority will rule. If they want to rule, they should create a majority and they can have the rule. There is not problem in it. And one should not be so ugly in behaviour that you don't want to be ruled by the majority, and the minority wants to rule the majority. It is not a take-over. Otherwise, Ronald Reagan has taken over America. If majority supports, then that's a democratic process. And it is not a small majority. There are not more than one dozen people in the dead Antelope, and there are hundreds of sannyasins there. They can bring more people if they want; otherwise, we are going to bring more people.

Q: WILL YOU AND RAJNEESHEES GET INVOLVED IN THE OREGON POLITICAL SYSTEM YOU SO DESPISE, RUN FOR OFFICE?

A: No. There is no political problem for us, and we are not involved in any way with the politics. The sannyasins who are living in Antelope, they were being tortured by the minority. For small legal things that they wanted, they were not allowed. The minority should have thought about it -- it was such a simple thing -- that they were denying the majority things which they legally asked. They are not asking any illegal thing. If they want to make a house, permit will not be given; if they want to purchase a land, permit will not be given. On what grounds? Their children will not be admitted in the school. On what ground? A minority torturing a majority -- that is democracy? And since we have come there, nobody can complain that we have harassed any Oregonian? We invited them they gave taken their children out of school. And still you think that there should be some peace! And many of them have already left; and the others who are still hanging are hanging because there is nobody else except us to purchase their properties, so they can leave. If they cannot be with us, there is no reason for them to be there; but we are going to be there.

Q: CAN WE EXPECT PEOPLE IN RAJNEESHPURAM TO BE RUNNING FOR THE STATE HOUSE OR THE STATE SENATE IN THE NEXT FEW YEARS?

A: No. We are not interested in politics. Our interests are our own comforts -- our houses, our lands -- we wanted more lands, we wanted more houses. Our interest was not politics at all; nobody is running for Assembly... You have many idiots to do that in the State, you need not...

Q: YOU'VE RECEIVED SO MUCH OPPOSITION FROM THE POLITICAL ARENA THAT YOU'VE MENTIONED THAT YOU'VE BEATEN THEN AT THEIR OWN GAME BEFORE.

A: No. But if sometimes the need arises, we will do everything to beat them on their own grounds. But we are a small minority, and the majority of millions of people in Oregon is threatened by us -- this is something ridiculous. We should be threatened by them, we are not; they are threatened by us which is simply absurd. That's why I say I have known people from all the countries of the world, but Oregon seems to be special. It seems all the idiots of the world go on being born in Oregon. Strange! For example, they are unnecessarily harassing us. That's what they did in Antelope. If they had not harassed our people, we were not interested in making a mayor or a council. Why we should bother about all that? We are not interested in power or prestige. In fact, it was so difficult for our people to persuade somebody to be mayor, to persuade somebody to be the councillor -- nobody wants. Who wants to get that sort of job? There are so many groovy things going around, and the poor mayor is sitting in the town hall having a meeting about unnecessary things... We are not interested, but if they harass us too much, we can do anything. We will fight in every possible way. We do not want to harass anybody and we do not want to be harassed by anybody. We are harmless people, we will not do any harm to anybody; but if somebody does harm to us, then we are not Christians -- we are not going to follow Jesus Christ that when somebody hits on you cheek, give him the other cheek. To me that is insulting the other person who as hit you. It is making him subhuman. You are becoming holier than thou. No. We are just human being and we respect you. If you hit me on one cheek, I will hit you your both cheeks immediately. I just respect you as a human being. You needed it, you deserved it, you earned it. There is a story in Buddha's life. He said in one sermon that you should forgive a person seven times. One of his disciples stood up and asked, what about the eighth time?
Reasonable question. Buddha was at a loss for a moment. He had never expected that somebody would ask about the eighth time, so he said, OK, Make it seventy-seven. But the man stood up again and he said it makes no difference. What about the seventy-eighth time? I have heard one story of a Christian saint who was hit on one of his cheeks. Obviously, being a follower of Jesus, he gave his other cheek, but the man was also some man of guts -- he hit on the other cheek even more forcibly. And at that moment the saint jumped on the man, clutched his neck and told that now I am going to kill you. But the man said wait, you a

saint and your master has said that give the other cheek. He said: OK, I followed the master, I gave you the other cheek, but now I have no other cheek. Now I am free. And I will teach you a lesson. If they go on harassing us, we enjoy it, so there is nothing serious in it; but we will harass them in our own way.

Q: BUT YOU'RE NOT PLANNING TO RUN FOR GOVERNOR?

A: No we don't need. We don't need; it is far better to harass the governor than to put our governor and then that governor is being harassed by Oregonians. No. We will do this way; Let the governor be theirs, we will harass him. And we are enjoying the whole game. If they can understand a little sense of humor, all the clouds can disappear within a second. From our side there is no problem at all. Ok? Good

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #29
Chapter title: None
15 August 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This is a typed tape transcript and has not been edited or published, as of August 1992. It is for reference use only. The interviewer's remarks have been omitted where not relevant to Osho's words]
INTERVIEW WITH BHASKAR, CORREO BRASILIENSE, BRASILIA, BRAZIL

QUESTION:* BHAGWAN, I'M SO GRATEFUL FOR THIS MOMENT. BRAZIL'S A VERY POOR COUNTRY. SEVENTY PERCENT OF THE PEOPLE ARE LIVING MISERY. THERE IS NO FOOD, NO HOUSING, NO EDUCATION. BUT THEY HAVE THREE HOPES: TO WIN AT THE LOTTERY, TO BE SAVED BY GOD, OR TO MAKE A POLITICAL REVOLUTION.
THERE IS A VERY POPULAR EXPRESSION IN BRAZIL WHICH SAYS, "GOD IS BRAZILIAN." DO YOU THINK SO?

ANSWER:* God must be Brazilian, but it is very unfortunate, because only poor people, suffering people need a God.
God is just opium. You can take the opium and forget your suffering your misery, your poverty. So, the more a country is poor, more it sill be addicted with God. It is the same proportion always. So the more a country is poor, the more it will be addicted to God. It is the same proportion always. More the country is happy, contented, comfortable, who bothers about God? For what?
Even in the ordinary life of a man, one remembers God only when he is in misery, suffering, trouble, sick, bankrupt. When everything is going great, nobody remembers God; there is no need. God is the need of the suffering, downtrodden.
So perhaps, if you say seventy percent of Brazilians are without food, without houses, then God must be a Brazilian.
God is the property of the poor, the hope of those who are living a hopeless life. And they will continue to live in poverty until they get rid of this God. So tell the Brazilians he is a Brazilian, so it is our duty to finish him.
Once God is finished from the world, man need not suffer, for the simple reason, then we start functioning intelligently.
There is no need for poverty, there is no need for misery, there is no need for so much sickness. There is no need for man only to live seventy years. These are just because we have not tried intelligence in living. Wherever we have tried it, we have reached heights of immense dimensions.
Only as far as man is concerned, we are dependent on God.

It is only three hundred years since science came into being. It revolted against the world and all kinds of superstitions. And within three hundred years science has given man so much that in thirty thousand years, religions have not been able to provide. And this too, against the priests, against the politicians, science has contributed. If politicians and priests are not there, man can take a quantum leap.

There is no barrier between man and paradise. But the priest wants people to be poor, because only the poor need him. It is a simple business ideology. The politician wants people poor, because only the poor can be conditioned. They are illiterate, uneducated, and they are so much in suffering that any hope and they are ready to buy it. It may be God, it may be communism, it may be revolution -- something in the future, faraway. The poor are ready to buy it.

The politicians have been selling hope for thousands of years. The priests have been selling hope, and it is really strange that after such a long time they are still doing good business. And man seems to be fast asleep, without looking at the whole strategy.

The priests and the politicians have to disappear from the earth. Only then the new man -- rich, comfortable, skillful, creative -- can come into being.

So it is Brazilians' duty to kill God. He must be there.

It is the duty of the poor people of the world to kill God. The rich people would like him to survive. For the rich people God is a beautiful investment, because God creates a buffer between the rich and the poor. And because of that buffer the rich are protected. Remove the buffer and the rich and all their exploitation will be exposed. And then no priest can go on befooling the poor in the name of God, in the name of fate, in the name of the law of action, past lives. All kinds of things have been invented just to keep the poor poor, ready to be sucked by all kinds of parasites.

And the poor man has lived in poverty for so long that he has become accustomed to it. He accepts it as his life. He does not know what life is, so he cannot think that he is missing something. To miss something, first you have to have it.

And that's the function of my communes. In every country I want my communes to live as richly, abundantly, contented, joyously, without God, without heaven, without hell, without politicians, with out priests, and prove to the world that people can live without all this nonsense! And they are living far more beautifully than anybody else.

Nobody on the earth is singing a song of joy.

Nobody on the earth is in a state to dance.

We have to create these oases in the whole desert of the earth, so people at least can see the possibility. They can also be part of this ecstasy, this pilgrimage.

First, they will be hostile, because it hurts the ego to see that others have attained, and you have failed. So the first reaction is that the others are pretending. Their laughter is just a makeup. Their joy, their dance is just show-business.

But how long can you befool yourself by finding such explanations?
People cannot go on working for twelve hours, fourteen hours a day, and still be able to laugh, enjoy, dance, love. Sooner or later the outside people are bound to be attracted to our communes.
Our communes have to become finally, a kind of university where we teach -- not three r's, but three l's: love, life, laughter.
And there is no other hope for the poor. Revolution has failed.
In Russia, the politicians were giving them the hope that after the revolution everything will be paradise. Sixty years have passed, there is no sign of any paradise. Of course, one thing has happened: they have distributed poverty equally. And they don't allow Russian people to come in contact with the rich countries, for the simple fear that if they can see how richly, intensely and totally people are living, then this communism has failed. It could not make them rich, it has only made them all poor -- equally poor.
So equality has been achieved. The classes have not disappeared. Their names have changed. It was the bourgeois class and the proletariat -- the poor and the rich. Now it is the ordinary citizen and the member of the communist party.
The member of the communist party has more power than any rich man ever had, is using all luxuries for himself that any rich man ever had, is living comfortably with all technological devices at his hand. And it is only in Russia, that to become a member of the communist party is the most difficult. In any other country, you can just become the member if you want -- any moment. No qualifications, no conditions have to be fulfilled.
But in Russia, to become a member of the communist party is a long process, a long discipline -- far longer than a poor man has to travel to become rich. The distance between the hierarchy that is in power and the people is bigger in Russia than anywhere else, for the simple reason, that the middle class has completely disappeared and it has left a big gap.
In other societies, the society is divided, not only in two classes -- about that Marx is absolutely wrong. Society is divided into many steps. Those two may be the extreme steps -- the poorest and the richest, but there are in between both, many classes. So there is a link.
And the middle class is the biggest class, because on one hand it joins the poor, on the other hand it joins the superrich.
In Russia the middle class has disappeared, because the rich are no more there. So the rich and the middle class both have been reduced to the proletariat. Poverty is so equal that you don't feel hurt, you don't feel jealous. There is nothing to feel jealous of, everybody is just like you.
God has failed. Marx has failed. And I don't give any hope. Naturally I cannot fail. They were all giving hope, they could not fulfill the hopes. I am not giving you any hope. On the contrary, I am taking away all your hopes, all your future, so that you can live in this moment. Even if you have not much to live, still one can make this moment a paradise by small things.

And if the whole humanity is convinced that this is the only moment to live, the misers will disappear on their own accord -- because they are not living, they are accumulating for the future. The monks and the nuns will disappear, because they are not living in the moment; they are living for some heaven, some paradise somewhere.

So the basic thing today is, that God -- which is another name of hope, revolution -- which is a materialistic name for God... But they function exactly the same. Their function is to keep people intoxicated.

My work is to wake people and stop taking all these opiums.

If people are just a little bit awakened, we can disperse all nations, all nuclear weapons, all atomic plants -- which are simply wasting energy. And the same energy can become creative and make people as rich as no Alexander the Great was ever rich.

The clothes that I am wearing, no emperor in the past could have used them. And I am a poor man! It was simply impossible, because the technology was not there.

We can make the whole earth full of emperors living better than Ashoka, Akbara, Alexander, Napoleon -- in every possible way.

I don't see any problem, except the mind of the poor itself -- which is so conditioned that it still goes on believing in God, who has never answered any prayer, who goes on believing in paradise. If God was so compassionate, he would have given you paradise here. Why after death? Why not before death?

And the poor people have to see the fact that all the revolutions have failed. The French Revolution failed, the Russian Revolution failed, the Chinese Revolution failed. They were bound to fail, because the revolutionaries who were going to take over the power will become the power elite, and the society will be still divided.

And these power elites will be more dangerous than the rich people of the old. For the simple reason, in countries like Russia and China, you cannot create another revolution, because the revolutionaries who have taken over the power know how it has been taken over, so they have prevented all possibilities. Even to talk about revolution is enough to be persecuted, killed, or exiled into Siberia.

Even if Karl Marx, Friedrich Engels, or Lenin himself, were to be born into Russia, there is no possibility that their books would be published. Only government has the publication department. Anything that is published is published by the government, approved by the communist party.

And Marx would not have been allowed to sit in the British Museum the whole day doing nothing but reading and taking notes. His whole life he never did anything, except reading and writing. His writings are voluminous. But in Russia that is not possible. He will not be counted as a proletariat.

One of my friends was visiting Russia -- he is a Buddhist bhikku, a follower of Buddha, a monk.

He told me, "The first thing that was shocking to the Russians were my hands."

I said, "Your hands?"
He said, "Yes. Whenever I shook hands with them, they immediately shrank back. And they said, `You must be a bourgeois. Your hands don't show that you have ever worked."'
I told the Buddhist monk, "You touch my hand. Then you will know that you are a proletariat and I am a bourgeois! That will give you great consolation."
Marx would not have been possible. No revolution in Russia is possible.
Everything has failed that man has done up to now, for the simple reason that man does not change his conditioning and goes on doing things with the same conditioned mind.
All that is needed is a simple deprogramming. Your mind should be cleaned from being a Brazilian, from being an American, from being an Indian, from being a communist, from being a socialist, from being a Christian, Jew, Hindu -- whatever the name of your limitations. All those limitations should be dropped, so you can become an unlimited being.
That is freedom, and that is true revolution, and it is an individual affair.
So take my message to Brazil, "please stop hoping, and start living! Out of your living there is hope. Out of your hoping there is only death and nothing else."

Q: BHAGWAN, TODAY, BRAZIL HAS THE SECOND HIGHEST RATE OF AIDS IN THE WORLD. DO YOU THINK IT IS POSSIBLE TO FIND A MEDICINE AGAINST AIDS? AND WHY ARE THE GAYS MORE SENSITIVE TO AIDS?

A:* First, the homosexuals have created the disease AIDS. It is a homosexual contribution to humanity. Then it can spread to heterosexuals, but the source of the disease is homosexuality.
Few things will have to be understood. One, homosexuality is not the way of nature, not the way of existence.
Existence always wants the opposite polarities to meet. Then only you can create a better generation. Homosexuality is uncreative, and homosexuality is between two men, two women. There is no polarity, there is no tension, no challenge.
First, people started becoming homosexuals in monasteries, soldier camps, school hostels, university hostels -- wherever man was separated from women. It was going to happen.
Biology knows nothing about your moralities. By the time a boy is fourteen, he is capable of giving birth to a child. The same is true about the girl. But in all the societies, this is the time when their sex is repressed, and this is also the time when their sex energy is at its climax -- between fourteen and twenty-one. Nearabout eighteen you have your peak sexual energy, which you will never have again.
It seems all societies have conspired that man should not know the blissfulness of orgasmic experience. This was a beautiful way to divert: that he has to be

educated first, he has to go to the university. And by the time he is back from the university -- he may be twenty-six, twenty-seven, twenty-eight -- he is already on the decline. He has lost the time when he could have attained orgasmic experience. Now he can only experience ejaculation.

That proves to the religious people that it is sheer wastage of energy, you don't get anything. And after making love, a man feels frustrated, nothing comes out of it. He has lost the right timing. The society has diverted him.

If we want a more joyous world, the best thing will be that between fourteen and twenty-one, all girls and all boys are given birth control methods and total freedom to mix with many boys, with many girls, because you will never have this energy again. It is lost, then it is lost forever. Then you will have to wait for next life. That is why everybody is waiting for the next life, because they have missed something very essential in this life. They may not be aware of it. Perhaps they are not aware, but there is a wound inside. Something that could have blossomed in them has not blossomed. That's why there is so much despair.

And then all the religions are teaching celibacy. First, they prevent the best time to know the secrets and mysteries of sex, and then they impose the idea of celibacy, that it is very spiritual. It is simply against nature, against your biology.

The monks in the monasteries of all the religions, have been the first to find homosexuality. And the disease is basically homosexual, because nature never forgives. You have to follow the law.

If you put your hand into the fire, you are going to be burned.

Nature simply goes on its way. There is no question that you are a saint, so you will not be burned, you are a celibate so you will not be burned, only the sinners will be burned -- that is stupidity. Everybody is going to be burned who puts his hand into the fire.

The law of nature is impartial, accepts no exception. And anybody who goes against nature, sooner or later will have to suffer for it.

Homosexuality was the greatest crime against nature.

Few things to be understood before you can understand why AIDS evolved out of it.

In ancient China, it was a common practice if an emperor was getting old and his people did not want him to die, the method that was used to prolong his life was not a medicine. It was two beautiful young girls who will be lying on both of his sides in the night. And strange as it may seem, it has worked for thousands of years in China. Finding himself between two beautiful girls, he again becomes psychologically young. A great lust for life arises in him. He would like to be young again. Playing with those girls, there are moments when he forgets that he is old. And the life of emperors in China has been the longest of any emperor in the whole world. This was the medicine. @B003

I mention it so that I can explain what is happening to the homosexuals. Because they are both men, their energies don't have any tension, their energies don't

have any challenge, their energies by and by start losing the will to live. For what? There is no challenge. They start losing the desire to live.
They may not be conscious of it. Just as the Chinese emperors started feeling a tremendous desire to live more, perhaps forever-life is so beautiful it is not worth losing great lust arises in them. That lust gives you energy. That lust provokes all your stagnant forces into functioning.
You can see it happen to a man who suddenly falls in love with a woman and you meet him on the road. You met him yesterday, too, but you can see the difference. The man is looking radiant. His walk has a dance in it. He is whistling. And this man used to walk the street as if he were dragging himself against his will because he has to reach his home. But today he is not walking, but running. because he has to reach the home -- the woman will be waiting there.
Something that was dormant in him has become dynamic. The homosexuals slowly, slowly go on losing their desire to live. and that is the basic cause of the disease called AIDS.
It is not a disease. If it was a disease, there would be a possibility of finding medicine for it. This is the most strange thing about it -- it is not a disease. Otherwise, it may take some time, but we will be able to find some medicine for it. But it is simply loss of the will to live. Now, what medicine can bring the will back?
The man really wants deep down to die. He has dropped all hopes to reach the bank. He is ready to be drowned any moment. He has given himself a life sentence. He has crucified himself.
Jesus only said everybody has to carry his cross on his own shoulders -- I wonder why he forgot that everybody has to crucify himself also. But people are doing that: carrying their cross on their shoulders, and then finally putting themselves on the cross.
Homosexuality has to disappear if we want AIDS to be prevented. All homosexuals have to be taught again that the woman is something significant to their life. Her warmth is something significant to keep them alive.
Now it is a well-established psychological fact that if a child is given every nourishment except the warmth of the body, blankets are given -- he is not kept in cold, he is warm; every food that is needed for his growth is given -- but there is no human touch anywhere. There is nobody to hug him, to hold him close to her chest, to her breasts where he can feel warmth, love.
They have tried with one child keeping scientifically perfectly healthy checking that nothing is going wrong, and another child is kept with the mother -- no check, nobody is bothered whether anything is going wrong or not. But the first child dies within three months. And this experiment has been first done on animals many times, and the same is the result: without the mother's warmth, the feminine warmth, the child perhaps never gets the will to live.

That is my explanation for the phenomenon. He never gets, in the very beginning, a desire to live. This is one side of the case which is now well established. Homosexuals cannot give to each other the warmth that they need. They need a feminine warmth.
Two women cannot give to each other the same quality of energy and love that a man can give to them. But it has to be understood that AIDS is not created by lesbians.
That too is very strange. Homosexuals have created AIDS, not lesbians. The reason is clear: a woman is always a receiving center, and man is always an assertive energy. Two women can live together without disturbing each other's life for the simple reason that they are not assertive agents. They are completely closed and alone . They can be together, but they will not affect each other.
Two men are both assertive. So when homosexuals are making love, they not are giving energy to each other which is not needed at all -- they both need feminine energy, feminine warmth.
So lesbians have no part in contributing Aids. I am sorry to say that on that point they have not proved equal to men.
Homosexuality has to disappear from the world, and we can make it disappear, at least in our communes. It is just a question of understanding. And, because it is artificial, superficial, it can be easily removed.
And precautions should be taken against AIDS because it is already rampant. This is not the beginning -- we are almost in the middle of it. The ind is not far away. It spreads like wildfire. And now they have come to find that even kissing can give it to you.
Looks as though medical people will not be able to find any medicine for it. We have to find a way, and we can find a way. My own understanding is that in our communes slowly, slowly homosexuality should disappear. About lesbians we can take care later on -- it may not be giving AIDS, but it is ugly, unnatural. Perhaps someday it may bring something better than AIDS, nobody knows, because nobody knew about AIDS before and homosexuality has been in existence since religions have been in existence.
It took thousands of years to create the situation in which AIDS can happen. But to me it is not a disease -- it has nothing to do with medicine. Medicine and medical care can keep it from spreading, can keep the man who already has it, alive to the maximum -- that is two years... if he is completely isolated where no infection is possible.
That gives the clue to me: the AIDS patient loses all resistance power. His life energy has shrunk withinwards. The petals of his life energy are no more open -- they are closed, they are getting ready for the night. Hence, any infection can enter into his body.
Because his own will to live is not there, his body will not create the antibodies to prevent AIDS. In my communes I will suggest: First, try to help homosexuals turn into heterosexuals. Everybody in the commune should go to every possible

test, because we love each other so much that we would not like one of us to become the cause of the death of so many people. No sannyasin would like it.
And we are not going to condemn, because he is simply a victim -- victim of Jesus Christ, victim of Mahavira, victim of Buddha, and those big criminals are no more there. Otherwise, they should be shot immediately. Fortunately, they are dead.
So help them -- these are victims of thousands of years of homosexuality. Respect them. Be loving to them and compassionate. And then each commune has to create a corner for them where they can live. And my idea is that a male AIDS patient should live with a female AIDS patient.
Perhaps that may be the only medicine possible. I say perhaps because it has not been tried, and I am not a man of medicine. I am just crazy, and crazy ideas come to me. But when nothing is working, why not try a crazy man's idea?
All the sane people are saying there is nothing that can be done, so you are not going to lose anything except a madman's idea. My idea is that a woman and man -- both having AIDS so there is no question of giving AIDS to each other, or as much they can give, that is up to them, there is nothing more to it -- have come to the very end of the journey.
But my feeling is that the female energy and male energy meeting again may provoke the will to live. The warmth of a woman, the love of the man may postpone the date of their death.
And this can be done only in my commune with my people, because they all understand each other. They would like to help each other. Here we are going to start... soon. And perhaps that may prove the only cure. If it is out of homosexuality that the disease is born, then something out of heterosexuality will be the medicine.
This is my simple logic.

Q: BHAGWAN, YOUR SANNYASINS IN BRAZIL ARE TRYING AGAIN AND AGAIN TO MAKE SOME BEAUTIFUL SPACE WHERE EVERYBODY COULD LIVE TOGETHER, AND IT'S ALWAYS DIFFICULT. WHAT WOULD YOU LIKE TO SAY TO THEM?

A: It is difficult?

Q:YES. MY FEELING IS BECAUSE OF THE ECONOMIC SITUATION OF THE COUNTRY. IT IS DIFFICULT TO MAKE BUSINESS, TO MAKE A COMMUNE.

A: You talk with Sheela and Savita about that. Some way can be found, and a commune can be created. Start on a small scale and slowly it can grow. And few businesses you can do very easily. And we can send you sannyasins from outside, all around the world to help you. For example, you can start publications. In Brazil, many of my books are published, but they are published

by publishers. Somebody else is taking the profit out of them -- our sannyasins should publish them themselves. Just that will bring you good money.
There is no need to create huge palaces. Just workable houses, simple. For example, in India where poor people are in millions, in a village a beautiful hut can be made almost for nothing. This has been a tradition in Indian villages that whenever somebody is making a house, the whole village will help. And the houses are made with bamboos -- the bamboo functions as the wall -- cow dung mixed with mud is put on both sides of the bamboos, whitewashed it looks so clean, so beautiful. And just bamboos on the roof with mud tiles. For two hundred rupees, you can make a beautiful house. Two hundred rupees means, today, five dollars, or at the most ten dollars.
Between five to ten dollars, you can make a house. So when the situation is bad, then think of your local products-whether bamboo is available, other kinds of wood are available cheap -- and use that material. There is no need for marbles, and there is no need.... Yes, one day when you have money then have marble palaces, but meanwhile, till the palaces come, you need a certain kind of shelter that can be made very easily.
Not difficult -- you can create a commune of five hundred people with small cottages. And you can start businesses. For example, publication you can start with your own press, your own editors, your own designers. And you can make it an art -- hand binding, hand stitching.
And in fact you can sell in the market for a better price than book printed mass scale in a factory, because that will not have that beauty. And about other things you talk to Sheela and Savita. There is no problem which cannot be solved.
But Brazil needs a commune.

Q: I WOULD LIKE TO ASK SOMETHING ABOUT THE THIRD WORLD WAR. WE FEEL EACH DAY THE WAR COMING CLOSER AND CLOSER. IS THERE SOME POSSIBLE WAY TO PREVENT THE WAR?

A: The truth is that the nuclear war is never going to happen. Even when I say it is coming closer and closer, the reason to say it is not that the war is coming closer and closer, the reason is to awaken you somehow that the war is coming so close now there is no time to waste -- get up as quickly as possible before the war finishes you.
But the third world war is impossible for the simple reason that both the nations America and the Soviet Union are equally balanced with nuclear weapons. And if a war starts, the whole point of a war is to win, but in a nuclear war nobody wins. So war has lost its basic foundation. Why should you fight when both are going to be finished in it?
The possibility of one becoming victorious and the other being defeated is no more there. So I say with nuclear war, war has reached to such totality that it has committed suicide. Now war is not possible -- I mean nuclear war is not possible.

Just the other day I saw a petition of American scientists who had made the first nuclear war plant in America -- the pioneers of nuclear weapons. Fifty scientists have signed the petition to the president and to the Supreme Court that we are trembling with fear -- what we have done. And we have already so much nuclear weapons on both sides that they are enough to destroy all life from earth within ten minutes.

Those fifty scientists who have been making nuclear war possible have visualized the situation that is happening. The same is happening in Russia -- the scientists are becoming aware that what they are creating is a mass scale world-wide suicide.

It is so absurd and meaningless. Those fifty scientists have mentioned one thing which I have been telling again and again: that up to now all our efforts to find some antidote for the nuclear weapon has failed. And we don't think that we will be able to find something that destroys the power of nuclear weapons -- no counter energy is available.

It is because of this fact they have put the petition because now it is simply destruction -- there is no way of protecting anybody. I am tremendously happy that nuclear weapons have come to a point where fighting becomes useless, war becomes utterly stupid. And even if seeing this stupidity the politicians decide to go for a nuclear war, then I think this earth deserves it.

If its leaders are ready to destroy it, then perhaps it is good we finished. The universe will go on -- it has been going on before this earth was born, it will go on with the same beauty and with the same splendor. It doesn't matter that the earth is gone. There are 50,000 planets exactly like this earth in the universe where life exists.

So if the situation for life to exist on this earth disappears, the bodies will be dead here and your souls will be transplanted into other planets. They don't need missiles, they don't need rockets, they can simply jump a quantum leap from this planet.

But as far as I am concerned, I am totally convinced that war is impossible for the simple reason that that's why they have been postponing it. And they will go on postponing it -- they want to find something, either party -- whoever finds it first will immediately go for nuclear war because he can protect his country and you cannot protect your country. Then war again gains meaning -- somebody will be victorious and somebody will be defeated.

But I don't see there is any way to find an antidote. For the simple reason that 300 years of continuous creation of war mechanisms, destructive weapons, has led to the nuclear weapon. You have never worked for life, you have never thought about how to create more beautiful life-healthier, intelligent, lengthier. If side by side you were working for these 300 years, putting your whole energy as you have been putting into war, perhaps you may be able to find an antidote -- but there is not time enough.

If all the scientists of the world together start working now, perhaps in one hundred years they may be able to find a clue which nullifies all nuclear weapons. That seems to be impossible.
So to me the third world war is over. We have passed it -- now think about the fourth. And prepare for the fourth. Third is not possible.
And I am not a pacifist, and I don't want my sannyasins to be pacifists. A pacifist is against war; so much so that if he had nuclear weapons he will fight with nuclear weapons against war. A pacifist is not a peaceful man.
Our sannyasins are not pacifists, but peace loving, silence loving, trying to find their inner serenity. If we can create around the world millions of people who are centered in their meditation, who know who they are, who know the tremendous bliss that comes when you enter into your innermost core, that will create a energy blanket around the earth. That is the only possibility to prevent.
So directly I am not concerned with war. My concern is how to create more peaceful people, more loving people, more meditative people. Because if the balance for peace-loving people is more in the world, then any war can be prevented.
If there are millions of meditators in the world, nobody can force them to go war, to go destroy innocent people. In fact, these people who have attained some light within themselves will become a tremendous barrier -- not only against nuclear war -- but against any kind of war.
I am aware that nuclear war is impossible, and it is possible that the Soviet Union and America will come to a conclusion to drown all their nuclear weapons into the Pacific -- I don't know who gave it the name Pacific. Perhaps for this purpose -- and stop all traffic in the Pacific. Although it is five miles deep, there is always danger anything can trigger, and then it can become a chain explosion.
So for at least a decade, no traffic in the Pacific. Drown all the weapons there.
And my feeling is, soon Russia and America will come to that conclusion. But that does not mean war will not happen. Then old type of war -- first world war, second world war -- those type of wars will continue. Thinking of the third world war, they look like children's play. But they were immensely horrible.
So as far as I am concerned, third world war is out of the question. But still other wars will be there.
If we want to prevent all kinds of war in the world, then we have to spread the red people to the farthest corner everywhere, so that we have a commune of millions of young people who declare that they are the owners of the earth, and they refuse any kind of passport, any visa.
Movement is our birthright, and the whole earth is ours. If we have millions of people to destroy the boundaries of nations, the boundaries of religions, then there is nothing to fight for. Fight with whom?
So my direct effort is not to prevent war or to be a pacifist and print pamphlets against war and protest and put posters on the walls and scream and shout. All that nonsense is not going to prevent. They were doing the same thing before the

first world war. They were doing the same thing before the second world war. They are doing the same thing before the third world war. They are just useless people. Good intentioned, but unintelligent.
My effort is to create a vast atmosphere of peace around the earth and that will be enough. War will become impossible.
In every country we will have thousands of sannyasins who will prevent that country itself, because they will say, "First kill us and then you can kill the neighboring country." They will be sitting on the boundary line meditating, "Kill us first." On both the sides. On the other sides also. Back to back.
And I don't think any politician has the courage to kill millions of his own people, because then the whole country will destroy the government and the politicians and everything. Because these children are not doing anything wrong, and they belong to the whole country.
So create peaceful people, and if time arrives, we will risk all our peace-loving people. And I don't think that any country can go to war.
It has never happened that the people of the same country are opposing its own government, that "War is not going to be our game anymore." And it is happening in both the countries. The enemy camp -- young people are ready there too: "Kill us first and then you can do whatsoever you want."
There are a thousand-and-one possibilities to change this world. But the basic need is to spread more and more sannyasins all over the world.
Already the red color is no more associated with communists. We have taken its possession already, copyright is ours now.
Even in Russia we have a beautiful group of sannyasins. Just the other day there was an article against me in a Russian magazine. They have been persecuting sannyasins. They have been taking their books away. The sannyasins have done nothing wrong -- no illegal thing, no crime -- so they cannot do anything to them.
In the article they have published the main prominent sannyasins' names, so that they can be recognized by the people anywhere, because they don't wear red clothes, they don't wear a mala. They are my underground sannyasins. They meet also in the basements of houses, so that they can meditate and nobody hears. They can listen to the tape, they can read a book.
And they are more excited than anywhere else, because for sixty years Russian youth has been missing something which is the very flavor of youth, something revolutionary, something rebellious. For sixty years, Soviet youth is the poorest youth in the world.
From their childhood they simply become adult. The youth -- that season -- never comes. Those days of dreaming of changing the whole world, of changing man, of creating a new humanity -- if they are not there, youth loses all its glamour, its splendor.
So they are immensely excited. And I know that communist countries will soon be having thousands of sannyasins -- without any question.

And nobody else can provide communist countries anything that I am offering to them.
They have been taught there is no God. I say, "Perfectly good, there is no God."
They have been told there is no hell, no heaven. Perfectly true.
They have been told not to believe -- that's my whole teaching.
Only on one point... I am giving them something new -- that is meditation. And Marx or Lenin or Stalin, nobody has said that meditation is against communism.
Just sitting silently, doing nothing... How can it be against communism? Or against anybody?
So my sannyasins need not be afraid in communist countries either, because my teaching agrees with Marx on every point, except meditation. But that is the whole secret: that meditation will destroy all those communist ideas, those Marxian concepts. And about meditation, there is not a single word against it in the whole communist literature, because they have never even heard about it. Marx knew nothing about it.
So try to spread meditation far and wide, and find out whatever is possible in your situation. The country is poor, then manage something. But communes have to exist. And once a commune is there, soon you will be able to produce many things, create many things.
And the commune is not going to remain poor long. And it will become a prototype for other people, "If we can create and we can live comfortably and we are not starving, and we are rejoicing, why can't you just do the same as we are doing."
Okay.

The Last Testament, Vol 1
Chapter #30
Chapter title: None
20 August 1985 pm in Jesus Grove

[NOTE: This is a typed tape transcript and has not been edited or published, as of August 1992. It is for reference use only. The interviewer's remarks have been omitted where not relevant to Osho's words]
INTERVIEW WITH FRED BRUNING OF NEWSDAY, LONG ISLAND, NEW YORK

Q: BHAGWAN, HOW DO YOU STAY WARM IN SUCH A COLD ROOM?

A: is not cold.

Q: TO ME IT IS VERY COLD.

A: To me it is only cool.

Q: HAVE YOU ALWAYS FELT BETTER IN COLD SURROUNDINGS, EVEN AS A CHILD?

A: Always

Q: I WOULD LIKE TO ASK A QUESTION THAT IS ASKED IN MEDITATION: WHO ARE YOU?

A: It is a little bit complicated. It is not an ordinary question. When you ask "Who am I?" you are not waiting for an answer. There is nobody to answer you. But by constantly inquiring "Who am I?" slowly, slowly other thoughts start disappearing. You become more and more attuned with only one thing -- this quest: "Who am I?" When all thoughts have disappeared and only the sound "Who am I?" remains, that is the miracle moment. That sound also disappears. First it kills all your thoughts, and finally it commits suicide -- not that you get an answer, but the question disappears. And that is the moment of ultimate bliss.

Q: HOW OULD YOU DESCRIBE YOURSELF?

A: Impossible.
This question is possible [to ask] only of an object. And I am not an object; I am subjectivity. I can describe the table, I can describe the grapes, I can describe the

whole world -- except me. Description is applicable only to objects. I am always the witness. If I describe myself -- in the very nature of things -- that description becomes false, because I am again witnessing it. I am always the witness, which cannot be reduced to an object.

Q: IS IT POSSIBLE FOR YOU TO DESCRIBE OTHERS, OTHER INDIVIDUALS?

A: No. As objects of course, but not as a subjectivity. I can describe the color of your hair, I can describe the clothes you are wearing, but I cannot describe you, the being that you are -- that remains indescribable. And that's the whole mystery of existence: that at the ultimate core, at the very center, is something that you can experience, but you cannot explain.

Q: DO YOU EVER HAVE DOUBTS ABOUT YOUR WORK, ABOUT YOUR ROLE?

A: There is no question. For thirty-two years I have not encountered any doubt in me, any question in me. Yes, before I became enlightened I had millions of questions, millions of doubts. The moment I came to know myself, that dark night was over. Now there is no question of doubt, no question of repenting, no question of planning for the future. Just this moment is enough -- I am totally contented with it as it is.

Q: THINGS COULDN'T BE BETTER?

A: No, not for me. For you, yes.

Q: I DON'T UNDERSTAND EXACTLY WHAT YOU ARE SAYING.

A: That's why I am saying it. You are not sure; I am sure.

Q: MAYBE YOU CAN HELP ME UNDERSTAND?

A: I can -- that's my whole business.

Q: AND YOU ARE GOOD AT IT?

A: I am just perfect -- not good.

Q: YOU HAVE TO KNOW HOW THINGS ARE FOR ME BEFORE YOU CAN DETERMINE WHETHER THINGS COULD BE BETTER OR WORSE.

A: No need for me [to know]. All sleeping people are sleeping people. It does not matter to me whether this man has a Ph.D. degree and asleep, this man is a doctor and he is asleep; that man is an engineer and he is asleep -- that does not matter to me. My problem is simple: they are all asleep and they will be better off if they are awakened.

Q: I AM ASLEEP AS WELL.

A: You are asleep as well.
People [have been] doing everything in sleep for millions of years.

Q: IS EVERYONE IN THE ROOM ALSEEP, AS FAR AS YOU ARE CONCERNED?

A: As far as I am concerned, yes.

Q: IS SHEELA ASLEEP?

A: Yes -- sound asleep.

Q: HOW WILL YOU AWAKEN HER?

A: I am trying...

Q: DO YOU EVER GET TIRED OF THE SOUND OF YOUR OWN VOICE? DO YOU EVER FEEL 'ENOUGH'?

A: I have never read any of my books.... I have never heard any of my tapes. I don't even bother what I said yesterday. And if you ask me tomorrow about this meeting, I will not be consistent with it at all. Because I don't carry comparison, memory; I simply go on existing moment to moment. You get bored because you compare: the same wife every night, the same kiss, the same geography... It is strange, unless you are asleep, to remain with one woman for thirty or forty years -- it is just a miracle!

Q: THAT IS JUST WHAT MY WIFE KEEPS SAYING!

A: That's good. Somehow help her to come here... All wives who run come here finally. Because you can run from one husband to another husband, but finally you have to run from husbands to my place.... Here there is no husband and no wife.

Q: IS MARITAL FIDELITY WORTH ANYTHING?

A: Nothing -- just nothing.

Q: YOU DON'T THINK IT MIGHT BE GOOD FOR SOME, NOT GOOD FOR OTHERS?

A: No. The very word `fidelity' is ugly, dirty.... If I love you, I love you. If I don't love you, I don't love you. I am a simple, sincere, straightforward man.
What do you mean by fidelity? Fidelity means: when you don't love, even then remain faithful. Anything that goes against love is ugly. What is the need of fidelity? If I love you, is that not enough? You need some fidelity too? That means there is a doubt in your mind -- you are afraid: today love is there; tomorrow it may not be. So something legal, religious -- the church, the court, and some condition of fidelity -- so when love goes away and the spring is over, you can cling to these props: fidelity, court, law religion, church. Love needs nothing.

Q: HAVE YOU EVER CONSIDERED MARRIAGE?

A: Never considered marriage.

Q: DO YOU HAVE CHILDREN?

A: No. How can I have children? Not even my sannyasins have children.

Q: WHY DO YOU SAY: "HOW COULD I HAVE CHILDREN?" OF COURSE YOU COULD HAVE CHILDREN.

A: I don't want my child to be in this world with Ronald Reagan, Soviet Union, Ethiopia, India. In this starving world, where people are piling up nuclear weapon to destroy the whole planet... I would not like my child in this world -- no!

Q: WHO DO YOU CONSIDER HISTORY'S MOST ADMIRABLE FIGURES AND MOST DESPICABLE?

A: Your whole history is bunk.... I mean the whole human history is bunk, because it is written by people who were victorious; it is all false. For example, in India, Britain ruled for three hundred years and they were the writers of history. And whatsoever they wrote was wrong. They were not writing about the reality, the fact. To them the Indian revolution was only a mutiny; it was not revolution. Revolution has respectability about it; mutiny is something ugly to be crushed.

The moment India became independent, they rewrote the history -- they changed those three hundred years. Now, who is right?
When Stalin came into power in Russia, he changed the whole history of the revolution -- he even changed pictures. Trotsky was the second figure to Lenin, so in every picture he was sitting next to Lenin. Stalin was nobody. He changed the pictures: Trotsky was removed; Stain's picture was put instead. And all the old books were destroyed. Trotsky himself had escaped and he was in Mexico, writing history. He was on the last page, when one of the murderers from Stalin hit him on the head with a hammer.
Looking at Trotsky's history -- and he was one of the chief characters in the history... Lenin was not a very impressive person; he had no charisma. He was a great organizer...
Trotsky had charisma, and he had influence over the masses. Both together were immensely helpful and complementary to each other.

Q: YOU HAVE READ WIDELY?

A: I have read immensely.

Q: DESPITE THE FLAWS IN HISTORY, WHO DO YOU CONSIDER TO BE ADMIRABLE INDIVIDUALS?

A: You will not even have heard those names that I consider admirable. For example, I consider admirable a poet in Japan, Basho, who has written a few small haikus -- three-line poetries. But each haiku is a tremendous experience of meditation. No poet in the whole world has been able to put so much in those few words. But only a meditator can understand it.

Q: YOU HAVE EXPRESSED YOURSELF IN THE PAST ON CERTAIN INDIVIDUALS, THOUGH?

A: I have spoken on many individuals.

Q: JESUS FOR INSTANCE?

A: Yes, I have spoken on Jesus, Moses, Mohammed. I have spoken on hundreds of people... There are three hundred fifty books that I have spoken; I have never written anything -- those are all spoken words.
I have admired one Chinese: Chuang Tzu. He is the most absurd character in the whole history of man; that is why I admire him.

Q: WHY DO YOU ADMIRE ABSURDITY?

A: Because life is absurd. To search for meaning in it is going to be frustrating. That's why western philosophy has come to a certain philosophy of existentialism, which talks only of meaninglessness.
Chuan Tzu says that there is no need to search for meaning. If you search for meaning, then you will end up in meaninglessness, and that will be frustrating. Life is an absurdity -- it is a mystery. You need not search for meaning, you have just to live it, enjoy it. And I agree with him.

Q: YOU SEEM TO DELIGHT IN CONTRADICTIONS. I THINK THAT IS PART OF WHAT YOU ARE SAYING?

A: Yes, that's what I am saying; I am always contradicting myself knowingly, so that nobody can make a consistent philosophy out of me.

Q: BUT IN THE END, WHAT WILL BE LEFT BUT A SERIES OF CONTRADICTIONS?

A: Those contradictions, if you pass through all of them, first will create confusion in you; second, will create a tremendous silence in you. If you persist, if you don't escape from the confusion, they will create a silence in you -- and that silence will be a revelation. So I am not giving a philosophy to people; I am giving a device for them to discover the ultimate silence of existence -- which is meaningless, as meaningless as a roseflower is.

Q: HOW DO YOU WANT TO BE REMEMBERED?

A: I don't want to be remembered.

Q: BUT YOU WILL BE!

A: That is other people's problem.

Q: WHAT DO YOU WANT SET ON YOUR TOMBSTONE?

A: No. Nothing. Once I am gone, I am gone. Then whatsoever my people want to do, they can do.

Q: CAN YOU TELL ME A LITTLE BIT ABOUT YOUR DAY TO DAY LIFE; WHAT DO YOU DO?

A: First thing to understand about is that whatever I am doing, I am not a doer -- I am always a witness. Taking a bath in my bathroom, there are two persons: one is taking a bath, another is watching. And the watcher is me. The one who is

taking a bath soon will be in a grave. So as far as my inner being is concerned, it is just the same, twenty-four hours. Sleeping, I am watching; talking to you, I am watching; sitting silently in my room for hours, I am watching. So as far as my essential being is concerned, I am only a witness. But the doer is there -- I have to get up in the morning. But I never get up on my own -- I am a lazy person.

Q: WHO WAKES YOU?

A: Somebody takes care of me... she is here: Vivek. She wakes me up at six o'clock in the morning. And then one and a half hours I enjoy my bathroom.

Q: ONE AND A HALF HOURS?

A: One and a half hours -- that is minimum.

Q: WHAT GOES ON?

Great things...

Q: I SAW THE INTERVIEW ABOUT THE VERY ELEGANT BATHROOM AND YOUR INVITATION.

A: Yes, I have not only one bathroom -- I have two, because if something goes wrong with one bathroom, the other is all ready, emergency ready. I cannot miss anything.

Q: WHAT KIND OF EMERGENCY?

A: Just some plumbing problem arising...
Because I cannot miss anything -- I want to take as much out of each moment as it is possible. I love taking a bath(tub), playing with soap bubbles. Albert Einstein discovered everything about the universe, playing with soap bubbles. My one and a half hours is nothing -- he was sometimes six hours in his bathtub.

Q: MAYBE HE HAD TROUBLE GETTING OUT.

A: His wife had trouble getting him out. But because I won't have any wife, there is no trouble.

Q: SO YOU ARE READY FOR THE DAY AFTER?

A: Yes. One and a half hours taking my bath, I am taking my shower. And I have all the best hypo-allergenic soaps, shampoos, conditioners -- I enjoy them immensely.

Q: AND THEN AFTER... DO YOU DO ANY ROBUST WORK, ANY KIND OF EXERCISES?

A: Just a little exercise in my bathroom.

Q: ALSO IN THE BATHROOM...

A: My bathroom is big enough.

Q: AND THEN IS THERE A PERIOD OF STUDY?

A: No. For five years I have stopped studying anything; not even a newspaper -- nothing.

Q: DO YOU HAVE ANY INTEREST IN THE OUTSIDE WORLD?

A: No.

Q: IF I ASKED YOU WHAT WAS HAPPENING IN NICARAGUA OR EL SALVADOR, WOULD YOU KNOW?

A: No -- unless Sheela informs me; that is her duty. She is my secretary; if she feels that something is happening which needs to be informed, then she brings it to me.

Q: IS THERE ANYTHING IN CURRENT HISTORY?

A: Yes, right now she is bringing every information about AIDS, which is significant.

Q: IT IS MY UNDERSTANDING THAT IN SEPTEMBER YOU WILL INVITE SOME VICTIMS OF AIDS TO THE COMMUNE FOR CARE. IS THAT TRUE?

A: Perhaps, perhaps. Spread the gossip.

Q: HOW DO YOU THINK THE SANNYASINS WOULD RESPOND?

A: Just the way they are responding -- they will laugh.... They will laugh, because my sannyasins don't consider death a calamity; it is a celebration, a new beginning.

Q: DO YOU THINK AIDS REPRESENTS SOME COSMIC PUNISHMENT FOR WHAT'S GONE WRONG SOMEHOW?

A: No. There is no punishment in existence and no reward -- each action has its consequence. It depends on you, what you want to call it.

Q: SO AIDS HAS NO SIGNIFICANCE BEYOND ITSELF? IT EXISTS, IT KILLS AND IT MEANS NOTHING MORE THAN THAT?

A: That's all -- nothing more than that; nothing more in it. Religions bring the idea of punishment and reward, and through that they bring heaven and hell and the whole theology: that you are a sinner, that you are a saint. To me, there are only people -- neither sinners nor saints. And everybody has to do what he wants to do. If a person ends up with AIDS it is totally his responsibility; he was doing things which have brought him to a certain end. And he should be perfectly happy with it -- nobody has forced him.

Q: WHAT DO YOU THINK ABOUT THOSE THINGS: HOMOSEXUALITY AND DRUG ABUSE?

A: I don't. Each individual's thinking... as far as I am concerned, anything that is unnatural, anything that is not part of the program or your biology, physiology, is going to lead you into trouble. But you may like the trouble -- you may love the challenge.
I am against homosexuality, lesbianism and all kinds of perversions. But that is my personal opinion. If any individual chooses to be homosexual, there is no condemnation in me for the person. I am not going to throw him into hell; I am not going to judge him. That is his [way]. I have told my opinion; [if] still he feels that homosexuality is the only thing that is appealing to him, then he has every right to be a homosexual.

Q: BUT YOU SEE THAT AS AN UNNATURAL ACT?

A: Not only see -- I say also say that it is an unnatural act. But you are free to do something unnatural.

Q: WHAT FOR YOU IS SEXUAL PERVERSION?

A: It is a religious disease, sexual perversion.... It is a religious disease. All the religions of the world are responsible for it because first they started forcing celibacy on people, which is unnatural. Unless you are impotent, you cannot be celibate. And the strangest thing is: not a single impotent person has become enlightened in the whole history of man.
That means that all these people -- Gautam Buddha, Jesus Christ, Krishna -- all these people were more sexual than ordinary people. It is their oversexual energy that does not feel contented with women and children and the ordinary, mundane world. After all this experience they are still too full of energy and they want to go on some higher quest. All these people are oversexual.
No impotent person has contributed anything to the world, because he cannot be creative. His basic creative energy, sex energy, is missing. Telling people to be celibate and then putting monks in one place, in one monastery and putting nuns into another place, and not allowing men and women to meet, you are creating the situation for homosexuality. So Catholics are responsible, Hindus are responsible, Buddhists are responsible -- they are creating the situation.

Q: I DON'T THINK CATHOLICS OR BUDDHISTS OR HINDUS ARE ANY MORE LIKELY TO BE HOMOSEXUALS THAN ANYONE ELSE.

A: They have to be. Particularly their monks -- what will they do?

Q: BUT THAT DOESN'T EFFECT NECESSARILY THE MASSES OF PEOPLE.

A: That reflects, because those... for example, in India there are five million Hindu monks. Now these five million Hindu monks are staying in Hindu families, are coming in contact with Hindu children, women -- all kinds of people. And they are bound to spread their perversion in every possible way. They will be abusing children for their sexuality.
They have been caught: just now, three or four days before, one Christian priest has been imprisoned for one and a half years because he was abusing small children.

Q: BUT THESE SEEM ISOLATED INCIDENTS...

A: They are not isolated. They don't come to your notice -- that is one thing... because the church wants to repress them, the society wants to repress them, the government wants to repress them. How many homosexual senators do you have?

Q: GOT ME...

A: No information about your senators.

Q: YOU SUSPECT THAT THEY ARE ALL...

A: I know.

Q: HOW DO YOU KNOW?

A: One personally I know.

Q: YOU PERSONALLY KNOW A HOMOSEXUAL UNITED STATES SENATOR?

A: Yes, yes. Yes.... Not only homosexual, perhaps he may have AIDS.

Q: WHO IS THE PERSON?

A: Name I cannot tell you -- that's your work to find out.

Q: HOW DID YOU COME UPON THIS INFORMATION?

A: I will not tell you anything, but one thing I can tell you: that every vested interest is trying in every way to repress such information. For example, the pope before this pope was a homosexual -- everyone in Italy knew. He was a bishop in Milan, and he was always hanging around with a homosexual, and everyone knew. Then he became the pope and that homosexual man who was hanging around him became his secretary, came to Vatican.

Q: WHEN YOU SAY EVERYBODY KNOW, WHO IS EVERYBODY?

A: Because you could have asked in Milan to anybody. These are things which people know, but which will not come to be given as evidence in the court. These are not easily provable things.

Q: BUT PEOPLE SAY THINGS ABOUT YOU THAT MAY NOT BE TRUE.

A: There is no problem. No, no -- you can ask me. I am not a pope and I am not a president and I don't care a bit about any respectability -- you can ask me. And I can put their information. correct. They may not be well informed. I can inform them about myself perfectly well.

Q: THERE MAY BE SOMETHING THAT YOU ARE UNABLE TO SPEAK OF.

A: No -- not a single thing.

Q: PEOPLE ON THE OUTSIDE...

A: Whatever they say, you just tell me.

Q: THEY SAY THAT YOU HAVE DEVELOPED THIS ORGANIZATION FOR YOUR OWN BENEFIT, THAT YOU ARE A LLIAR, THAT YOU ARE A CHEAT, THAT YOU TREAT PEOPLE UNFAIRLY, THAT YOU HAVE BEEN COARSE AND UNKIND IN YOUR DEALINGS WITH OREGON AND OF ANTELOPE FOR VERY PARTICULAR SELFISH REASONS.

A: So start with one, so I can answer you.... For example, I have not been coarse and unfair to Oregonians; I have been very lenient and very liberal. I should not have been so liberal. And from now onwards I will be coarse and I will show them what roughness means.

Q: HOW HAVE YOU BEEN TOO LIBERAL, TOO LENIENT?

A: We have just been factual -- calling a spade a spade. But now I am going to call a spade a fucking spade -- you can go and tell those Oregonians.

Q: I THINK PEOPLE FEEL THAT YOU HAVE BEEN DOING THAT FOR SOME TIME.

A: No, I have not been doing anything. Go point by point, so I can put you right.

Q: THE POINT WAS THAT THINGS CAN BE SAID ABOUT PUBLIC PEOPLE WITHOUT THERE BEING ANY TRUTH TO WHAT IS BEING SAID.

A: No. But you don't come across a man like me in your public people -- you can ask me and I can answer you directly. For example, you cannot ask your public people; they depend on you, their respectability depends on you. If a senator says he is a homosexual, perhaps next election he is gone. But as far as I am concerned, I am not dependent on anybody in the whole world -- not even your God. So I can simply be true. Only I can be true -- anybody who is dependent cannot be true.

Q: I MIGHT ASK YOU HOW MUCH MONEY YOU HAVE IN THE BANK, AND YOU MAY TELL ME THAT YOU HAVE NOTHING IN THE BANK. I CAN'T TELL WHETHER THAT IS TRUE OR NOT.

A: Just listen to me: you can inquire. Has anybody ever seen me with a single dollar? I don't even have pockets. I don't have even a diary to keep my accounts.

I don't have any connection with any bank in the whole world. You can put your F.B.I. or C.B.I. or whatsoever nonsense you have in America -- if they can find a single bank account of mine, I am ready to be shot. They should inquire. And I am ready -- if they can find a single paise in my name anywhere...

Q: YOUR BEING WILLING TO ANSWER QUESTIONS DOESN'T SETTLE THE ARGUMENT.

A: Nothing settles the argument. Has any argument ever been settled? Is it settled that Jesus was the son of a virgin girl? For two thousand years theologians have been arguing, and he was simply a bastard.

Q: YOUR BANK ACCOUNT IS MORE EASILY DEALT WITH THOUGH...

A: No, this is a simpler case to decide, because a virgin woman giving birth is a simple matter to decide. My case of bank account will take a long investigation.

Q: BUT IT COULD BE DETERMINED.

A: Yes, it can be determined.

Q: THE OTHER CANNOT.

A: The other can also be determined -- I determine it. And no medical person can refuse me.

Q: THAT HAS TO DO WITH MATTERS OF FAITH. WHAT IS YOUR NOTION OF FAITH?

A: Faith is simply for the ignorant and the idiots; faith is not for intelligent people. Intelligent people try to know things. Either they know, or they don't know. If they don't know, they simply accept that they don't know.

Q: BUT PEOPLE SAY THEY HAVE FAITH IN YOU.

A: Nobody can say that.

Q: I TALKED TO MANY PEOPLE HERE WHO SAY...

A: Then they are wrong...

Q: ... WHO SAY THEY TRUST YOU.

A: ... because I am continuously saying to them that nobody should have belief in me, nobody should have faith in me. What more can I do?

Q: IT SEEMS TO ME, THAT MAKES YOU MORE APPEALING TO PEOPEL.

A: So what do you say: Should I start saying to everybody they should believe in me, everybody should have faith in me? -- will that convince you?

Q: I THINK THAT PEOPLE ARE DRAWN TO YOU FOR THIS VERY KIND OF CONVERSATION.

A: That is people's business, but as far as I am concerned, I can only do two things: either I can say, "Have faith in me" or I can say "Don't have faith in me,"or I can remain silent. But in all the cases I am guilty. Just look at the situation: if I am silent, you can say I am silent and that is misleading If I say "Don't have faith in me" you say, "They have faith in You because they love Your idea of not having faith in You."

Q: EXACTLY RIGHT, YES. YOU ENCOURAGE QUESTIONING, BUT IS THERE ANY FORMAT SET UP FOR YOU TO BE QUESTIONED BY THE PEOPLE?

A: No format is settled. They have to ask their questions. And there is no need for any format, for the simple reason that I don't come to you or to my people with any answers ready -- your question creates the response in me. So if I know, I will tell you. If I don't know, I will tell you I don't know anything about it.

Q: A SANNYASIN MY FEEL THAT PERHAPS THE MONEY SHOULD BE USED DIFFERENTLY. HOW WOULD THAT PERSON MAKE IT KNOWN TO YOU THAT HE HAS RESERVATIONS ABOUT THE WAY MONEY IS SPENT?

A: I have nothing to do with money, and I have nothing to do with how it is spent.

Q: HAVE YOU NO INFLUENCE IN THE WAY MONEY IS SPENT?

A: No, I have no influence, no information -- that is different corporations, different corporation heads; they have to settle their own things.

Q: I THINK WHEN YOU SAY THAT, PEOPLE ON THE OUTSIDE SIMPLY DON'T BELIEVE IT.

A: That is their business.... By not believing it, it does not mean that they are right. There is half of the world not believing in God. All the communists around

the world don't believe in God. All the Buddhists in the world don't believe in God. All followers of Jainism don't believe in God. But even that does not prove that God is not. -- neither it proves [does it prove] that God is, because half of the world has faith in God. It simply proves that God is just a bogus word. You can go on arguing about it for millenia and you will not come to any conclusion, because in the first place there was nothing to conclude about.

Q: WOULD YOU DESCRIBE YOURSELF AS A CAPITALIST?

A: I am a super-capitalist -- without a single cent.

Q: YOU ARE IN A VERY FORTUNATE POSITION.

A: That's why I am known as the Blessed One. I don't have to bother about any taxation. I don't have to bother about any bank account. I don't have to bother to earn, and [know] how to spend -- and still everything is available to me.

Q: HAVE YOU EVER WONDERED WHY YOU HAVE COME INTO SUCH GOOD LUCK?

A: No -- I have simply accepted everything that has come (on) my way. Good or bad, I have accepted it.

Q: DID YOU FORESEE ANYTHING LIKE THIS YEARS AGO?

A: No.

Q: WHAT WERE YOUR HOPES THEN?

A: I am a without-hope person.

Q: NEVER HAD HOPES FOR YOURSELF? NEVER DREAMS AS A YOUNG MAN?

A: No. Just before twenty-one, I had.

Q: WHAT WERE YOUR DREAMS THEN?

A: They were dreams about becoming enlightened, and they were fulfilled. They were dreams about knowing myself, and they were fulfilled. And after that,now I have nothing to dream.

Q: YOUR DREAMS DID NOT HAVE ANY KIND OF MATERIAL ELEMENT IN THEM?

A: No. From the very childhood I was not interested in anything else than myself.

Q: THAT'S UNUSUAL.

A: It is. It is, in such an insane world, to be so sane is...

Q: HOW DO YOU ACCOUNT FOR THAT? IS IT YOUR UPBRINGING, YOUR PARENTS?

A: Very difficult to account for it, because my parents were just ordinary people, as everybody's parents are. They tried their best to bring me to their religion. But I was rebellious -- I made it clear to them that `please leave me alone; let me search for myself'.

Q: WHEN DID YOU BEGIN SAYING THINGS LIKE THAT TO YOUR PARENTS AND WHAT DID THEY SAY TO YOU IN RETURN?

A: Almost when I was four -- I started small. About small things -- it is not only about big spiritual things -- about small things. For example, if my father would say, "You just get out of the room -- don't disturb me." Then there was no way. I would simply refuse and say, "You can go out if you are disturbed. I am not going out of the room alive."

Q: WHAT HAPPENED WHEN YOU DISOBEYED; WERE YOU PUNISHED?

A: I was punished.

Q: HOW?

A: In every possible way corporal punishment was used. I was punished but I was never angry and I had no complaint. I said...

Q: YOU WERE HIT? YOU WOULD BE HIT BY YOUR FATHER?

A: Yes. My father hit me, and he...

Q: WITH HIS HAND?

A: With his hand. And his whole life he repented for that one hit. Only once... because I had long hairs when I was a small child; I had very long hairs. And my father was in continuous trouble because he was a small shop- keeper, and I was continuously passing through the shop; the house was behind the shop. And everybody will ask, "Whose daughter is this?" That was very much hurting him -- that he has to tell everybody that `he is my boy, not my daughter'. And one day he became very angry and he said, "This is an unnecessary irritation... and the whole day you are coming in and out. Either you start going through the back door or you cut your hairs." And he hit me.

I simply went to a barber shop just in front of my house. And I told him, "Shave my hairs completely." He was an old opium addict -- otherwise nobody would have cut my hairs completely. So he was in his mood -- he simply shaved my whole head. In India you shave your head completely only when your father dies; otherwise nobody will shave your hairs.

I came back, and before I came back home, others had already reached there, thinking that my father is dead. My father was sitting there, and they said, "What is the matter? I saw your son shaved -- and you are alive!"

Then I reached there and he said, "What have you done?" I said, "This is the answer to your hit. If you are against long hairs, you will be half against small hairs" I said, "Let's satisfy you one hundred percent. So I have shaved them completely. And in the future, remember: if you want to hit me, I will not complain about it, but I will respond in my own way."

Q: SHOULD CHILDREN DEFY THEIR PARENTS?

A: Certainly. If Adam and Eve had not disobeyed God there would have been nothing in the world.

Q: WHEN SHOULD CHILDREN OBEY THEIR PARENTS?

A: Nobody should obey anybody unless your intelligence says it is right. But that is you obeying your intelligence -- not your father, not your mother.

Q: BUT IS A CHILD PREPARED TO DO THAT?

A: Yes, certainly.

Q: SO IF A CHILD CHOOSES TO WALK INTO WHAT AN ADULT...

A: Perfectly good. Rather than creating this stupid and mediocre world, it is far better that few thousand children every year jump into the ocean and die -- but leave the world with intelligent, rebellious, vibrant people.

Q: BUT THAT WOULD TERRIFY PARENTS.

A: Let them be terrified! I have terrified my parents -- why should I bother about other parents?

Q: BUT YOU'VE NOT BEEN A PARENT. ISN'T THAT TOO EASY FOR YOU TO SAY?

A: No, because I know my parents and it was not easy for them. In fact I had not been a parent because of them, because they wanted me to be married. I said, "Then there is no way. If you keep quiet, some day perhaps I may get married. But if you continue in some way persuading me, then there is no way."

Q: IF YOU SAW A CHILD PUTTING HIMSELF OR HERSELF IN DANGER, YOU WOULD NOT REACH OUT TO THAT CHILD?

A: I will tell the child that "there is danger, and you are going into danger; you can die. I can make help available to you if you want, but if you have decided to go into it, then go -- with all my blessings."

Q: YOU WOULD NOT PHYSICALLY RESTRAIN A CHILD WHO INSISTED ON WALKING ON THE RAILROAD TRACKS?

A: No, I will not. I will not interfere in anybody's freedom, whatsoever the freedom is for.

Q: BUT THAT'S ONLY THE FREEDOM TO DESTROY YOURSELF.

A: No.

Q: IN THE CASE OF THE CHILD.

A: This is only one case. The question is: out of a hundred cases there may be one case where your example may be applicable In about ninety-nine cases there is no death involved. Just for one percent I am not going to destroy the freedom of ninety-nine percent of the people.

Q: BUT IS THAT ANY MEANINGFUL LIMIT ON A CHILD'S FREEDOM -- TO PROTECT THE CHILD FROM DANGER?

A: I will tell everything to him, and if he allows me I will help him physically to get out. But if he says that he wants to go into it, that he understands what I am saying, then with all my good wishes he can go.

Q: AND IF PEOPLE SAY THAT YOU ARE TOO DETACHED FROM THE WORLD, YOU ARE MAKING NO SENSE EXCEPT YOURSELF; WHAT YOU SAY REALLY DOESN'T APPLY TO THE BROAD POPULATION?

A: I don't care -- why should it apply? Everybody has intelligence, everybody has to decide for himself. This whole idea that you should interfere in other people's life is being brought by the political leaders, by the religious leaders. They have conditioned the whole humanity that you have to serve others, you have to sacrifice yourself, that you have not to be selfish. My whole approach is that you have to be selfish, and only if you enjoy serving somebody -- serve -- because there is no other reward.

Q: YOUR STATEMENTS ABOUT SERVICE TO THE POOR: YOU'VE SAID A FEW THINGS THAT ARE NOT NECESSARILY CONSISTENT?

A: I am not a consistent man -- you should remember that.

Q: SHOULD YOU BE HELPING THE POOR? ARE WE NOT OBLIGED AS HUMAN BEINGS TO HELP THOSE IN LESSER SITUAITONS?

A: No. All these are just nonsense words: `human beings' -- where are human beings? Just in theory... Monkeys never became man -- perhaps human monkeys may have become -- but I cannot say Ronald Reagan is a man; a chimpanzee perhaps.
Human beings would not have been in such a stupid state in the first place. Why is there so much poverty? -- those poor people are responsible for it.

Q: THE POOR PEOPLE ARE RESPONSIBLE FOR THEIR OWN DILEMMA?

A: Certainly, yes.

Q: WOULD YOU SAY THAT TO SOMEONE WHO LIVED IN THE GHETTOS OF NEW YORK OR CHICAGO?

A: I have lived in India which is far worse.

Q: AND WERE YOU SAYING THOSE KINDS OF THINGS?

A: Yes. I have been saying there and they were trying to kill me. They are responsible because they have accepted religious ideas which make them poor. They have accepted a certain ideology that your poverty is your past life's

punishment: in your past life you have committed bad actions -- that's why you're poor.

Q: I DON'T THINK THAT IS WHAT THE POOR OF THE UNITED STATES BELIEVE, BHAGWAN.

A: No, I don't know about... This they cannot believe, but they also believe that you are born is sin; you are born because Adam and Eve disobeyed God. And the whole humanity has to suffer for it until you repent, until you become Christians, until you become a follower of Jesus, who will persuade God -- because he is the only begotten son of God -- to save you. So the question has been removed from its real context: that there is exploitation. The rich are rich because they know how to exploit. The poor are poor because they are not intelligent enough and not allowed to be intelligent enough so that they are not exploited -- one thing. Second -- the poor go on increasing the population of their own; the rich people don't increase their population.

Q: SO SHOULD THE POOR BE PUNISHED FOR THAT?

A: They are already punished. Who is saying that they should be punished?

Q: WHEN YOU SPEAK THIS WAY YOU SOUND SO UNSYMPATHETIC.

A: I am, I am.

Q: YOU ARE UNSYMPATHETIC TO THE POOR?

A: I am, because those poor are a great calamity on the earth, and they go on producing because they don't have any other entertainment than sex. And they are not ready to listen to me. They are ready to listen to the pope, who goes on saying that birth control is against God, that the pill is the worst thing that has happened to humanity, that abortion is anti-life. They listen to these people, and these people are making them more and more poor.

Q: COULD THE POOR SAVE THEMSELVES BY LISTENING TO YOU?

A: Certainly -- immediately.

Q: HOW WOULD THAT WORK, THOUGH?

A: It would work immediately. For example, in India I had been telling people for thirty years to use birth control methods, to use the pill, to use abortion --

whatsoever prevents population growth. But it goes against their religious ideas, it goes against their tradition.

Q: BUT EVEN IF THEY WERE TO BEGIN PRACTICING BIRTH CONTROL, THAT WOULD NOT PAY THEIR FOOD BILL FOR THE NEXT MONTH. HOW CAN THEY SAVE THEMSELVES NOW BY LISTENING TO YOU?

A: The government was providing for free every birth control method. And in thirty years they have doubled the population. When I started speaking to them they were one four hundred million Indians; now there are eight hundred million Indians.

Q: BUT WHAT ABOUT THE POOR TONIGHT; THE PERSON WHO IS HUNGRY TONIGHT, THE PERSON WHO HAS NO MONEY TO PAY HIS ELECTRIC BILL TONIGHT; WHAT CAN HE DO?

A: He should go to the church and first ask the priest there to give him food. Ask your god, ask your savior -- he has been saying that he is coming back. Two thousand years have passed and and he has not come back yet, so `you give us'. And your savior was turning stones into bread, walking on water, raising the dead. So why can't the pope do the same? He's his representative, an infallible representative -- he should do all these things. If he cannot, then burn the whole Vatican.

Q: YOU SPEAK WITH SO MUCH DISDAIN FOR JESUS, ALTHOUGH WE ARE IN PART OF THE COMMUNE CALLED JESUS GROVE, AND IN THE PAST YOU HAVE SPOKEN RATHER FONDLY, IT SEEMS TO ME, OF JESUS AS A... FIGURE. HAVE YOU CHANGED YOUR MIND?

A: No. I have spoken about only half of Jesus before; now the remaining half. Before, I spoke abut the day; now I am speaking about the night -- twenty-four hours I have to finish.

Q: PEOPLE SAY YOU ARE THE GURU OF THE RICH, THE YUPPIES' GURU?

A: People don't say -- I say.... This is actually the fact. That's why I say I am not like other public figures. Nobody -- Jesus or Mohammed or Buddha -- had the guts to say that they are the rich man's guru, and they all were. Buddha had all of the kings of India come to his feet, offer him thousands of acres of land and gardens. He was the rich man's guru but he had not the guts to say it. I have the guts to simply say what is the fact: I am the rich man's guru, because only a rich man can be religious -- a poor man cannot be.

For example, if you ask Albert Einstein, "Can you teach a poor man higher mathematics, physics?" he will say, "How can I? First he has to go through the complete courses of the university and at least have a master's degree in physics. Then, perhaps I may be able to start from scratch."
Religion up to now has never asked for any qualifications from anybody. And religion is the highest experience in life. This is a strange situation: Only a rich man -- who has lived with all luxuries, all comforts, who has attained to his ambitions and is now feeling that nothing satisfies, that nothing brings the delight he was hoping for -- is ready to go into the direction of religion. A poor man asks for food, a poor man asks for medicine; he does not ask for meditation.

Q: HE HAS MORE IMMEDIATE NEEDS THOUGH, BHAGWAN.

A: And I don't have food to offer him.

Q: BUT IS IT A WORTHY WAY TO SPEND A LIFETIME, MINISTERING TO THE RICH?

A: Only one man in the whole world ministering to the rich, and the religions -- three hundred religions are there -- and all their priests and all their public servants are serving the poor. And just look: one man is looking after the whole rich world so well, and everything is going perfectly well. And all those idiots -- three hundred religions -- and millions of monks and nuns, and what are they doing?

Q: WELL, YOUR JOB IS EASIER THOUGH, ISN'T IT?

A: So I am ready to change. If they have guts, I am ready to change -- I can become the pope, pope can come here.

Q: WHAT WOULD BE THE FIRST THING YOU WOULD DO IF YOU WERE THE POPE?

A: First I will destroy Catholicism completely.... Because if six hundred million people are deleted from the world, we have solved a great problem for poverty.

Q: DO YOU HAVE ANY USE FOR PROSTESTANTISM?

A: I will take them when their number comes. First: Catholics... because Protestantism is nothing much -- it is below my dignity even to condemn them.

Q: YOU DON'T THINK OF MARTIN LUTHER AS A SUBSTANTIAL INDIVIDUAL?

A: Martin Luther was simply a politician, and wanted to be a pope himself. Because he could not be a pope -- so the protest, and the Protestantism. And that is just a German mind and nothing else. And you cannot think...

Q: WHAT IS YOUR IDEA OF A GERMAN MIND?

A: Just zero! Mind and German...? German and mind are contradictory terms.

Q: WHAT KIND OF MIND SCORES HIGHER?

A: Polacks! They are the highest. So just see a single man taking care of the whole world's rich people, without moving out of his place, and all these people are taking care of the poor... And just compare the work of one man against three hundred religions and their millions of servants, and you can see.
In my commune, not a single baby has been born in four years, and I have not told anybody that you have not to give birth. Simply stating that the world is too much populated... you should think -- you are intelligent.

Q: THERE SHOULD BE NO MORE CHILDREN?

A: For twenty to thirty years there should be no children.... Only then can we cut the population to one-fourth of what it is now. And once one-fourth of the population is there, then every couple can be allowed to have two children.

Q: HOW COULD THAT EVER WORK?

A: If it is not going to work, then AIDS will work, then third world war will work.

Q: DO YOU HAVE A VISION OF THE FUTURE THAT INCLUDES A THIRD WORLD WAR?

A: If I am not the alternative, then there is no world.

Q: YOU OR WORLD WAR III?

A: It is me or the whole world. Really, things have come to such a point: either they have to listen me or go to hell.
Whomsoever they have listened to up to now have led them wrong. The politicians have created the nations, the wars, and now the ultimate war -- the third world war -- they are preparing for every day, piling up more and more nuclear weapons. They already have more than are need -- seven hundred times

more. They can destroy the whole earth seven hundred times -- still they are piling up. I don't know what kind of arithmetic these people have learned.

Q: WHAT'S YOUR ADVICE TO RONALD REAGAN IN REGARD TO NUCLEAR WEAPONS?

A: Just drop all those nuclear weapons in the Pacific Ocean -- that is the meaning of the name `Pacific Ocean'. Drop all nuclear weapons. Be first and declare that "we are not for war, whatsoever the consequence."

Q: DO YOU FEAR THE SOVIET UNION?

A: There is no problem, nothing to be worried [about]. If the whole world drops war, what can Soviet Union do? Let them conquer the whole world -- what is wrong? Rather than getting destroyed completely, it is perfectly good to have a Soviet government all over the world. What is wrong in it?

Q: IN THIS COUNTRY THERE IS A TERM PEOPLE DESPISE: 'BETTER DEAD THAN RED'

A: So then, be dead; but we have decided to be red. We are not deciding for being dead. So our slogan is: Better to be red than dead.
It is only a question... Just think: if I say [this] to Soviet leaders, they will ask the same question that `American is going to run over us'. If I say to Americans, they think `the Soviet Union is going to run over us'. So nobody is willing to do it first, but somebody has to do it first. And America, being a far more intelligent, far younger nation, far more democratic, far more intelligent -- I would like to appeal to America first: that you be the pioneer.

Q: YOU'VE SAID SOME HARSH THINGS RECENTLY ABOUT AMERICA. YOU SAID THAT VIOLENCE IS THE RELIGION OF AMERICA...

A: I say all kinds of things in different contexts.

Q: YOU'VE SAID THAT "I BELIEVE THAT VIOLENCE IS THE RELIGION OF AMERICA, THAT AMERICA HAS MISTREATED MANY GROUPS: RED INDIANS, BLACK PEOPLE..."

A: That's true.

Q: WHY, THEN, DO YOU REMAIN HERE IF YOU FIND SO MUCH EVIL IN THE UNITED STATES?

A: I will fight it.

Q: WHAT ARE YOU DOING ABOUT, SAY, RACIAL DISCRIMINATION?

A: We are creating the commune of joyous, happy, silent, dancing, singing, loving people. And this commune is going to create a sabotage your whole American Society. If just a small atom can explode and destroy Hiroshima and Nagasaki, then don't think a small commune cannot sabotage the whole American continent.

Q: HOW WILL THAT WORK?

A: You will know only when it has worked. Had you any idea how atom bomb would worked before it worked? Even those who made it had no idea how it would work. Einstein suffered his whole life after Hiroshima and Nagasaki, repenting that,in the first place, he wrote a letter to President Roosevelt that atom bombs can be made. He was not aware that so much is possible through a single explosion. And now we have seven hundred times more power to destroy.
This small commune is a life-energy phenomenon. If dead matter can explode... This type of experiment has never been done; what we are doing here is totally new -- we are creating a certain kind of energy field.

Q: THIS IS WHAT THE EVANGELICALS SAY. REALISTICALLY, DO YOU THINK THAT WILL HAPPEN?

A: Those people have no idea what is going on here. Don't compare with all those retarded people.

Q: LIKE BILLY GRAHAM, FOR INSTANCE?

A: Yes. Billy Graham is the final word as far as retarded people are concerned. You can even just look at his face, and this is a face of a chimpanzee, not of a man. Well shaved.... Dressed in American way, but he is a chimpanzee. Just undress him and you will find...

Q: WHICH IDEAS OF HIS DO YOU FIND MOST OFFENSIVE?

A: Everything, because I find Jesus a crackpot -- so what about these people. I don't criticize Billy Graham or that kind of people. I think of Jesus as a crackpot, and these are...

Q: WHAT DO YOU THINK OF REVEREND MOON?

A: He should be sentenced for his whole life, not for one and a half years... and with him, all the other bishops and priests who have signed a petition for him, that he should be released and should not be punished.

Q: ARE YOU DISTRESSED THAT SOMETIMES PEOPLE PUT YOU AND REVEREND MOON IN THE SAME CATEGORY?

A: They can put wherever -- everybody is free to do that. In fact, Moon's and my name mean exactly the same thing: the moon.

Q: WHAT'S THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE TWO OF YOU?

A: Absolute difference -- there is nothing similar. I don't have any god, I don't have any paradise, I don't have a savior, I don't have a gospel, I don't have a holy book, I don't teach a certain theology, doctrine, creed, discipline. On the contrary: I teach individuality, freedom, doubt, skepticism, agnosticism: these words are anathema to those people like Reverend Moon.

Q: AND YET, IN YOUR COMMUNITY THERE IS A SENSE OF ORDER AND AUTHORITY HERE.

A: There is a sense of order, and that sense or order is coming out of the intelligent people living here. Nobody is ordering.

Q: BUT THOSE PEOPLE SAY THEY DRAW THEIR ENERGY FROM YOU.

A: They can say whatsoever they want to say -- what do I have to do with that? Nobody is ordering, nobody is trying to enforce a certain system of them. I am simply explaining my experience, my attitude, my approach to life, and leaving it to them. If they want to live, they are free; if they don't want to live, they are free. If they want to be here, good; if they want to go away, that is even better.

Q: I SPOKE TO A YOUNG WOMAN TODAY WHO ONCE SAID THAT, WHILE SHE THOUGHT THERE WAS NOT CHANCE THAT YOU WOULD EVER DO THIS, THAT IF YOU DID AS JIM JONES DID, SUGGEST A MASS SUICIDE, THAT SHE WOULD HOPE THAT SHE WOULD DO THAT. WHEN YOU HEAR THAT, WHAT DO YOU FEEL? WHAT DO YOU THINK?

A: Certainly, that woman is telling her heart. She is not telling anything about me -- she is telling about herself. And as far as she is concerned, you have to ask her. That is her love for me, but I have not asked anybody to die for me -- I have asked people to live for me.

This is the only place on the earth where Jonestown cannot happen, because I am in total love with life -- with everything that life is. There is no denial, no renunciation of anything. And I would like my people to live as long as possible. But if somebody feels that way, that is his freedom. What can I do, I...

Q: WOULD YOU CONSIDER THAT A FANATICAL KIND OF RESPONSE?

A: No, not at all. Not at all.

Q: WHY NOT?

A: It is simply her love.

Q: ISN'T THAT A DANGEROUS KIND OF LOVE?

A: Love is always dangerous. So people who are not capable of living dangerously are not capable of loving, either.

Q: WHEN YOU HEARD ABOUT THE JONESTOWN INCIDENT, WHAT DID YOU THINK?

A: I thought this is where Jesus had led people.... This was Jesus's doing. If I get him, I am going to slap him on both his cheeks together, so he cannot give me another cheek....
Because that's the whole conclusion, logical conclusion, of Jesus. Jesus was telling to his people that he is going to his Father's house to prepare a place for them, and then he will come and take them. Now two thousand years have passed; he did not come back.
Now it is simply logical that Jim Jones thinks, "Why bother first going, preparing?" -- it is better to take the whole lot with you. I think this seems to be more logical and mathematical, and if Jesus had done that, that would have been better -- there would have been no Christianity. That would have been a great blessing in the world: if he had taken those twelve fools that he used to call apostles, humanity would have been saved from so much misery and suffering.

Q: YOUR FOLLOWERS HAVE BEEN CALLED FOOLS AS WELL.

A: They are!

Q: DO YOU TELL THEM THAT?

A: Yes. They are here -- I tell them.

Q: THEY JUST DON'T LISTEN THOUGH?

A: They do not. They know me -- they don't care what I say.

Q: YOU ONCE LIVED A VERY SIMPLE KIND OF LIFE; NOW YOU LIVE A VERY OPULENT KIND OF LIFE. WHAT HAPPENED?

A: I am just a contradictory man. One day I can again live a simple life; there is no problem in it. But whatsoever I do, I do it totally.

Q: IS THERE A POSSIBILITY THAT ONE DAY YOU WILL GIVE ALL THIS UP?

A: Every possibility -- any moment, because in the first place, nothing belongs to me, so I have not to give up anything. This watch is given to me for your interview. In my room, I am not... even wearing a watch. The car comes to me when they have to take me here. Nothing belongs to me. Everything belongs to the commune or to the Trust. So in the first place, I am still a poor man -- pretending to be a rich man.

Q: IF YOU GAVE ALL THIS UP, WHAT WOULD YOU DO?

A: I will just go to sleep.

Q: PERMANENTLY, OR FOR THE EVENING?

A: Permanently.

Q: WHAT SHOULD HAPPEN TO ALL THIS AFTER YOU ARE DEAD?

A: I don't care, because nobody bothers. When I was not here, I was not concerned abut the world; neither the world was concerned about me. When I am not here, you think only one thing: that I am dead. You forget the other part: that you are dead for me, too. The connection is finished: The world is no more there for me, just as I am no more there for you. I become absent to you; you become absent to me.

Q: DO YOU BELIEVE IN REINCARNATION?

A: I know; I don't believe. I don't believe in anything.... I know my own past lives. That's why I know there is reincarnation.

Q: WHAT WERE YOUR PAST LIVES?

A: Now, that will be a belief for you, only fiction. And a man who can write three hundred fifty books can write three hundred fifty fictions, also. So that is not much use...

Q: BUT HOW MANY LIVES HAVE YOU HAD IN THE PAST?

A: As many as you want. One thing I can say: I can lead you to the point from where you can look at your past lives -- at least one life -- and that will be proof enough of reincarnation. Telling my stories will not be of any use.

Q: COULD YOU GIVE ME SOME EXAMPLE OF HOW IT HAPPENED IN THE PAST?

A: No. I never give anything which can become a belief in any way.

Q: WHAT ABOUT FUNERAL PREPARATIONS? HAVE YOU MADE SOME ARRANGEMENTS?

A: No.

Q: WOULD YOU WANT TO BE CREMATED IN THE NEW CREMATORIUM?

A: That my people will think of. Who bothers? -- I am gone. People are so much worried about controlling, things, even after their death. When I am not there, this body is just matter. So whatsoever they want to do... if they want to throw it into the river, most probably that will be the right thing.

Q: DO YOU THINK YOU WILL BE IN OREGON FOR THE REST OF YOUR LIFE?

A: I don't know. If I get the green card, I may go out. If I don't get the green card, I am going to be here.

Q: YOU'VE GOT THE PEOPLE IN AUSTRALIA WORRIED NOW, I UNDERSTAND?

A: In the whole world I have my communes, but everywhere I will have the same problem, so first I will have to settle here. If the green card is settled here, then I will go to Australia to fight again -- whatever card they have.

Q: THE LAST THING, BHAGWAN: DO YOU HAVE A MESSAGE FOR THE PEOPLE OF AMERICA?

A: I certainly have a message. Because America is not an old country like India, which has existed for thousands of years and has a burden of a long past, prejudice, conditioning. America is just a child compared to a country like India or China -- three hundred years mean nothing.
America has a very superficial layer of conditioning. If it can drop that conditioning -- being Christian, being Jew, being American -- America can become the first country of the world opening the doors for a new humanity. It is a risk thing, dangerous, but only America is young enough to take the risk.
Drop all religions, drop the boundaries of the country, throw away all nuclear weapons, declare to the whole world that "we are no more for war -- if anybody wants to invade us, we will welcome them."

Q: IF YOU WERE AN AMERICAN CITIZEN AND YOU CHOSE TO VOTE; WOULD YOU BE A REPUBLICAN OR A DEMOCRAT?

A: I will be simply what I am. I cannot conceive myself in any other role....
They both are the same type of people -- this is just a political conspiracy. It depends on a certain psychology of people, and democracy is using it.
People's memory is very short -- three years. So four years, five years, one party rules, and naturally it cannot fulfill all the promises that it has given to the people. It starts falling in people's eyes, and for five years the other party has been giving promises that "we will do what they have not done." So after five years, the other party comes on top, and this game goes on playing. Those two parties are conspirators, shareholders in the same company. It is a rotation of a wheel.
I don't see any difference in their ideology; I don't see any difference in their principles; I don't see any difference in their faces -- they are all the same people, playing a game. It is a football: one time on this side and one team on that side. It doesn't make any difference to me.
I am against parties. I want democracy to be partyless. Unless it is partyless, it cannot be democracy -- it is only temporary dictatorship. Four years, five years or whatsoever time in different countries... You give to a party four years' dictatorship: it is temporary dictatorship; it is not democracy.
Democracy will be possible only when there are no political parties and each individual decides on his own. Nobody is going to campaign, nobody is going to convince him. He is not a party member; he has not to follow a party line -- he has to decide himself.

Q: RONALD REAGAN THINKS HE PRESIDES OVER A DEMOCRACY. IS HE INCORRECT?

A: Absolutely incorrect. He does not preside over Rajneeshpuram.

Q: IS HE A DELUDED MAN?

A: He is... senile.

Q: HE'S TOO OLD TO BE PRESIDENT?

A: He really should go back to cowboy work, cowboy films, to Hollywood -- don't waste the time of the world unnecessarily. Even as a cowboy actor, he was a third class actor.

Q: YOU LIKE MOVIES, ISN'T THAT RIGHT?

A: Once in a while, if my people suggest them to me.... Perhaps one or two which I liked. One was "The Brothers Karamazov." That is Dostoevsky's novel that I have always loved, and I consider it more valuable than the holy bible. Another was "Anna Karenina" by Leo Tolstoy. That is a masterpiece of genius. So once in a while, if somebody sees something beautiful that they would like my time to be wasted on, they bring it.

Q: I READ SOMEWHERE THAT YOU LIKED "PATTON" AND "THE TEN COMMANDMENTS."

A: "Ten Commandments" I liked, as a film!

Q: YOU DIDN'T LIKE THE BOOK!

A: No. `Commandment' -- the very word -- is not for me.

Q: DO YOU SPEND MUCH TIME LOOKING AT VIDEOS?

A: No.

Q: AND YOU'RE NOT READING ANYTHING ANY MORE?

A: No, for five years I have not read anything, but before five years I have read as much as people will read in five lives.

Q: THANK YOU.